

## Forbidden Love (The Ultimate Sacrifice)

### Chapter 1

'Sometimes the person you'd take a bullet for is behind the trigger.'

A thousand years ago (1,000) at the Gate of Darkness:

"You betrayed me Tharollin, how could you do that to me?" Avonmora, the queen of mermaids, asked in a teary voice at the man she had once referred to as her lover. She was just in time from stopping him open the Gate of Darkness.

"For powers my love, to open the Gate of Darkness I have to sleep with you and collect your blood, which you gave me the two willingly." Tharollin, the demon king answered her with a smirk.

"I thought you were the one, the god's made you my soulmate Tharollin, you are my soulmate and whatever I did for you was out of love. I gave you myself and my blood thinking you want to use my blood and heal the wounds you had last when you fought with Roen, but I was wrong, you only collected it to use it and open the Gates of Darkness."

"You've forgotten something sweetheart, I am a demon, in fact the king of demons, we don't have feelings. Opening the Gate of Darkness will make me the strongest of them all and I shall rule over the supernaturals." Tharollin said. "And even if I want to have a lover, it wouldn't be a fish girl, now if you excuse me I have a gate to open."

"I was warned to stay away from you, but did I listen? No. Tharollin, you still have a chance to change, do not open the Gate of Darkness, please I beg you." Avonmora pleaded, hoping to god's that they change his heart.

Tharollin laughed at her foolishness. "You're a big fool Avonmora, you were blinded by love that is why you couldn't see my main motive."

%%%%

Flashback:

Tharollin, a very handsome and tempting demon king, lost his rights as king when he went for war against King Roen and the rest supernaturals except the mermaids, they were healers. King Roen who has the backing of the god's, was the one who had defeated him and they killed all his demon warriors and imprison the ones alive.

He ran away from the battlefield with serious injuries. He ran into Avonmora who was heading towards the battlefield with some of her healers.

Seeing him for the first time, was like seeing the sun. Her crystal necklace shone a little bit and she knew the man bleeding profusely was her soulmate. Avonmora quickly ordered the rest to go without her as she teleport Tharollin to her cave to treat him.

Their love story began.....

“Did you know what you ask for Avonmora?” King Roen asked the beautiful mermaid standing before him.

“Yes, I know what I am asking Roen. Help me and plead with the rest of the Kings and Queens that they shouldn't harm Tharollin, you know they listen to you.”

“This is difficult and you know it. Helping the evil king of demons who went rebellious against all Supernaturals, is different, saying we should give him a second chance is another thing.”

“He is my soulmate Roen, you know what that means. Please stand with me, he has changed. We should give him a second chance.” Avonmora pleaded.

“I am only supporting you because of what we had in the past, do not come back to me when he betrays you. I won't listen then.”

“Thank you so much Roen, he won't betray me.” Avonmora said with happiness.

“I will set a meeting with the rest of the Kings and Queens soon, bring him with you when you are coming to the meeting Avonmora.”

---

The Meeting:

“This is outrageous! How can we trust a demon who want to rule over the supernaturals.” Queen of the fairies, Flora, spat out with venom as she stared at Tharollin with disdain.

“He isn't the same person you once knew, please he's Changed and I can swear on my life. He is my soulmate, my better half. Queen Flora, you got married to the king of globins didn't you even when we kicked against it. My fellow Kings and Queens, I am also a queen and I know how you want our people to feel safe, but believe me, Tharollin isn't evil.” Avonmora said.

“Roen what is your intake in this?” King Davea, asked the Wolf King. A Davea is a creature of shadow, a special type of demon, which is periodically used by others demons, similarly to hellhounds.

The room where the meeting was held became quite as they all want to hear Roen's opinion.

"Let's give him a second chance as she had said." King Roen told them finally.

"Are you supporting her because she was once your fuck mate?" Darin, the King of Vampires asked as he started picking invisible dirt from his nails.

The growl that came out from Roen shook the whole room they were in. Standing up to his feet in anger.

"I dare you to repeat what you said AGAIN." Roen pronounced each word with a growl as he stares hatefully at the Vampire King.

"But I was saying the truth." Darin said with a smile.

"That's enough from the both of you, we have heard from Avonmora, and since the Wolf King had given out his consent, so we shall. Tharollin has been forgiven, but Avonmora take note, if he tries to bring harm to any of the kingdoms, you know the consequences, don't you?" The Queen of Witches, Lillian, said.

"Yes I know the consequences, thank you all." Avonmora said with a smile.

End of flashback.

"You played me all along, but I won't let you open the Gate of Darkness."

"Too late for that my love, you came too late, I have already done the sacrifices, mixing the blood of a powerful mermaid and my blood together, and you are just a mermaid without any fighting skills, should I remind you that as a demon your powers doesn't affect me. So very soon, all Supernaturals will be mine to rule. Join me Avonmora, let's rule all of them together."

"Over my dead body will I do that."

"Your choice, my gain, goodbye Avonmora." Tharollin said, turning his back to her and going towards the Gate of Darkness.

"You will die in there, do not open the Gate Tharollin, please. the evil behind that gate will affect everyone, for the sake of our child I am carrying, please don't open that gate."

That stopped Tharollin who then turn to face Avonmora with the coldest look she had ever seen. "Using those lines doesn't work for me, a demon king like myself can't have children." With that he walked over to where the Gate of Darkness was, stood in front of it and utter the words that had been Forbidden.

The Gate of Darkness, was said to be the inhabit of Lucifer, an evil being who was killed and his bones were locked up by the god's, whoever that opens the gate of Darkness and possesses the bones of Lucifer shall have the powers of the once powerful being.

Lucifer bones weren't the only ones in it.

Tharollin smiled as he finished casting out the spell.

The Gate of Darkness began to open slowly. Inside the Gate were pure darkness.

“Do not move any further Tharollin!” King Darin shouted at demon who stopped once he heard his voice.

Tharollin turn and saw all the Kings and Queens of the supernaturals before him.

“You alerted them Avonmora.” Tharollin said without any surprise as the gate behind him continue opening, just one step and he is inside the Gate.

“I have too, I am sorry.” Avonmora replied.

“Well, great Kings and Queens, I don't have much time to discuss with you all, but I will get to see you all in the next 1,000 years to come. Be sure you are still alive when I return, for I shall have my revenge on all of you standing before me.”

“That is if you enter the gate.” Roen said but it was already too late.

“Too late, you all are always late. I shall return with my armies to defeat you all and rule over every supernatural.” Tharollin said as he finally moved back, one of his feet entering the gate. “Goodbye to see you all in 1,000 years later.” with that saying, his second feet enter the gate. As soon as his two feet was inside the gate, a dark hole opened beneath his feet and he fell down. The dark hole closes.

Lillian used her magic to prevent the gate from opening further.

—

Meeting Room:

“This is all your fault!” Queen Flora shouted. “Now the Gate of Darkness is opened, it won't take much time before it starts to turn everyone into evil.”

“I am sorry, I didn't know he would do something like that.” Avonmora said softly.

Darin wanted to say something hurtful towards Avonmora when a bright light shone before them before it vanish.

A beautiful lady stood where the bright light was, all dressed in white as the Kings and Queens all stood up and bowed to her and sat down again. Her eyeballs were white and her forehead bore a circle.

“The priestess is always there whenever we need her.” King Davea said with a smile.

“I did not bring good news, the gods are angry. The Gate of Darkness is opened and it will cause a great war if it is not closed in time.” The priestess said.

“What then should we do?” Lillian asked.

“The only way to close the gate of Darkness is to sacrifice the one who had caused it.”

All eyes turned to look at Avonmora, some with hate, others in pity.

“Then Avonmora shall be sacrificed to avoid whatever evil that want to befall on us.” King Darin said.

“Not only her, you know what it took the god's to lock down the Gate of Darkness after they defeat Lucifer. Her people, every single mermaid and merman, shall be sacrificed to close down the Gate in two days time.” The priestess said and vanished.

“You all heard her, in two days time, Avonmora and her people shall be killed.” Queen Flora said with a smile.

“But killing them all, won't that be the end of mermaids?” Roen asked.

“The god's have spoken Roen, and there is no going back.” Darin said and stood up to meet Avonmora. “Enjoy your last days with your people.” He left the meeting room.

Soon everyone began to leave the room except Roen and Lillian.

Standing up to his feet. “I warned you, but I can understand since he was your soulmate. But this time around, I can't help you, the god's are now involved.” with a sad smile, Roen left the meeting room leaving Lillian alone with her

“Lillian, I am pregnant with the demon child, what should I do?”

“Shhhh, the walls have ears, teleport us now to my Chambers.”

Avonmora nodded her head and teleport them to Lillian lairs. Casting a magic spell around the wall to prevent anyone from eavesdropping on their conversation.

“Repeat what you just told me a few minutes ago?”

“I am pregnant for Tharollin, I told him but he thought I was joking, help me, I don't want my child to die with me. Please my sister, save my child.”

\*\*\*

Two Days Later:

All the supernaturals gathered to witness the execution of the mermaids race in front of the Gate of Darkness.

The priestess stood before the Gate as she gesture with her head to the Vampire warriors to begin. They started killing the mermaids.

Soon all mermaids and merman lay dead remaining Avonmora.

The priestess walk over to meet her. “Your punishment will be so different, the god's want your soul, but your body shall be placed at the front Gate of Darkness to warn anyone who has your fish brain.” She told Avonmora and touched the mermaid forehead.

Her soul in a smoky form began to come out from her mouth, the priestess brought out a diamond stone and her soul went into it.

Avonmora body slumped as her eyes were wide open, her lifeless eyes, looking straight to Lillian. It was as if it was reminding her of her promise she made to her two days ago.

The priestess smiled and levitate Avonmora body and made it stand at the Gate. Avonmora body immediately turned into ice.

The priestess said some words and the gate started closing. It stopped before it will shut finally.

“What happened? The Gate isn't shut completely.” Flora said.

The priestess who was equally surprised closes her eyes briefly and opened it. “There is still one more mermaid missing.”

“Impossible, all the mermaids clan has been killed, so which one are you talking about?” Darin asked.

“A mermaid yet to be born. Her blood shall be used in shutting down the Gate of Darkness completely.”

“How is that possible?” Roen demanded.

“I don't know, but it wasn't reveal to me, I shall consult the god's and get back to you all.” The priestess reply and vanished before anyone question her further.

\*\*\*

Lillian entered her Chambers and made sure she locked the door, saying a spell, a door appeared and she entered it.

The door opened to another hidden room, at the middle of the room was a ball, which looks more like nylon floating with a very tiny fetus in it.

She had promised Avonmora she would take care of her child.

“Promise me Lillian nothing will happen to my child, you're a very strong witch, I know you can do something to prevent my child from dying with me.”

“I will help you because you once helped me before.”

“Thank you, but you must promise me Lillian not to tell her who her parents were, I have a strong feeling that it's a girl. If it is a girl, please do name her Rae, because she is my Rae of light, but if it is a boy, you name him. And one more thing, please hide her powers, especially if she carries the demon blood”

“Of course Avonmora. Come one, we don't have much time.” Lillian said and say a spell. The same door appeared and they entered inside.

Lillian smile as she went over to where the ball was floating.

Since the child has a demon blood in him or her, it will take almost 1,000 years before the ball burst.

\*\*\*

The priestess appeared on top of the mountain where she lived.

She didn't see that coming, killing off the mermaids and using their blood at the gate was for a purpose. She couldn't tell the people that the yet to be born mermaid she saw will be born in a thousand years to come, but who will give birth to the mermaid?





## Chapter 2

'There is a stubbornness about me that never can bear to be frightened at the will of others. My courage always rises at every attempt to intimidate me.'

She sat down at the mountain top and started meditating searching every nook and cranny of each supernatural's kingdom but to no avail.

The priestess was livid as she tried to see if something was hidden away from her, but no matter how hard she tried, nothing showed up.

She stood up as a door opened right there in front of her, mid air.

Entering it, it closes behind her. She found herself in a room, a big bowl of red water appeared in front of her, as she started to make some incantations. "Water, water, show me what is being hidden, who is the last mermaid that is yet to be born? Show me her face or mother?"

The red water started swirling around the bowl, and a mouth was seen opening. She peep inside the opened mouth only to see darkness. The mouth vanished and the water became still.

"Something doesn't feel right." The priestess said staring at the still red water.

"I know that Tamara." A deep male baritone voice said behind her.

The priestess now known as Tamara, wasn't frightened when she heard the male voice.

"You shouldn't be here, I am taking care of everything." Tamara said and turned to face him.

Standing before her was a man made of water.

"Just because I gave you enough powers to become the priestess of all Supernaturals doesn't mean you should talk to me in such manner." The water man said.

"I am sorry my Lord, forgive my manners. I just thought you should be resting as you had drained all the blood of the mermaids clan. I wasn't expecting you." Tamara said as she lowered her head.

"I already did that but I am still thirsty for that last blood. Our plan worked out from the beginning. I made Avonmora soulmate to the demon king, Tharollin. She had thought that the gods had blessed her with Tharollin, but she didn't know the truth. I have Tharollin where I want him, for I will need a strong body for me to occupy when it's time." The man in a water form said and laughed out. "And again, I shall need Roen's blood to complete the ritual, he is the strongest Wolf."

"Why his blood?" Tamara asked not getting it.

"I mean, someone that will come out from his loins, set him up with a maiden that he will impregnate. And once it's time I shall have that child." He said as he already mapped out his plans.

If only he knew the child will be a Tribrid supernatural, he wouldn't have suggested the plan.

"Of course my Lord. But what should I tell the Kings and Queens when they asked what the gods has said. We still haven't found out where the last mermaid is."

"I will tell you what to do, for now, your focus should be on finding out where the mermaid will be born so that you can bring her to me. I on the other hand, shall keep on blinding the god's. And once Tharollin gets my bones from the Gate of Darkness, I shall reveal myself to them."

Tamara nodded her head as she handed the diamond stone which held the soul of Avonmora to the water man who vanished immediately.

\*\*\*

The Meeting Room:

"Queen Lillian, since we haven't heard a word from our priestess since yesterday after the slaughter of the Mermaid Clan, what are we going to do since the gate is still open?" Queen Flora asked as she fling one of her fingers upwards and a rose flower appeared in it, which she started playing with.

"I can't really answer you Queen Flora until the priestess comes." Lillian answer with a smile.

Before anyone will speak, Tamara appeared before them. She didn't come alone, she came with a beautiful lady who looks a little bit like her.

Standing up to their feet, they greeted the priestess and sat down.

"Without wasting much time, the god's has not yet revealed who will give birth to the last evil mermaid that will close the gate of Darkness. But, they have given us a solution." Tamara said with a smile.

"What solution priestess?" King Davea asked.

Tamara turned and pointed at the lady standing beside her. "She is the Solution."

"She is beautiful." King Darin complement as he stared lustfully at the lady. "Did you bring this damsel for me?" He added.

"Not for you Darin, the gods want Roen to marry Rosa, who is my cousin. The child you both shall bear will be the one to know where the last mermaid is and sacrifice her to the gods. She is the ultimate sacrifice, only when the mermaid is sacrifice, can the gate close forever."

King Roen, a very handsome werewolf, was surprised when he heard the news. He raised up his head to refuse the offer when the words frozen mid way. Standing before him was a very beautiful maiden, his soulmate, he has imprinted on her.

When a shape-shifter, a Wolf, imprints on a specific girl or woman, he becomes unconditionally bound to her for the rest of his life. When it happens, the experience is described as being gravitationally pulled toward that person while a glowing heat fills him, and everyone and everything else in his life becomes secondary, and only the imprintee is left to matter, leaving the shape-shifter with a deep need to do anything to please and protect his soulmate. It's not like love at first sight, really. It's more like... gravity moves... suddenly. It's not the earth holding you here anymore, she does... You become whatever she needs you to be, whether that's a protector, or a lover, or a friend.

He had hoped his imprint would be Avonmora, but the gods couldn't grant him his heart desires, and now, she is dead.

King Roen stood up to his feet quickly and went over to meet Rosa, he hugged her smiling. "I have found my imprint at last, she is my soulmate!" He shouted to their hearings.

The rest of the Kings and Queens all helped a smile except Darin who was sulking. The Wolf King has finally found his soulmate after three thousand years of searching.

"Congrats." Filled the room.

"But how did you know your cousin would be his soulmate?" Lillian demanded suspiciously.

"That's because the gods revealed that my cousin should be brought here for King Roen to see. And thanks be to the gods for their knowledge." Tamara said. "The gods also demanded that Wolf King be made as the King of all Supernaturals, since his lovely wife to be will give birth to the one who will save us all. A school shall be built where all the children from each clan, will be attending." With that she disappeared leaving her cousin behind.

Lillian felt something was amiss but let it slide. Tamara didn't made mention of how to prevent the blackness from the gate from spreading out, anyway, that's the work of a witch.

\*\*\*

1,000 years later:

"I am sorry Queen Lillian, but I cannot take back your grandchild, she will be transferred." The proprietor of the witch school told the queen sitting in her office.

"Ash, just give her a second chance she will change, I promise." Queen Lillian pleaded on behalf of Rae.

Rae who looked less concerned about the discussion they were having right in front of her, was blowing whistle as she placed her legs on top of the proprietor table.

Ash was already used to Rae's behavior.

"Even though you rule us, with all due respect my queen, I still maintain my stand. Rae beat up her seniors badly, they are still in the hospital recovering, she is so stubborn and do whatever pleases her, she is getting out of our control. So I have no other choice my queen. I am transferring her to the supernaturals school and that's final." Ash said and brought out a letter. "This is a recommendation letter that you will give to the Principal of the supernatural. It talks about the behavior of Rae so that he can warn his students to stay away from her."

"I will talk to her, but try and reconsider your decision." Lillian said

"I, in fact all the teachers, have had enough of her, there is nothing I can do."

"Grandma, can you excuse us for a minute, I want to speak to Mrs Ash alone, please." Rae said as she stopped her whistle.

Getting up to her feet, "I will be outside, do not do something stupid." With that Lillian left the office.

"What is it Rae? If you want to beg me to allow you back into this school, am afraid my answer is still No."

"I am not begging you Mrs proprietor. The letter in your hand, change it and write how wonderful and helpful I am to your school."

"You don't tell a five hundred years old teacher what to do."

"You seem to have forgotten who you are talking to, I am Rae, wherever I go I causes trouble. And also I know what side of the bed you sleep at night, don't allow me to visit you tonight. Change that recommendation letter at once."

## Chapter 3

'Being stubborn can be a good thing. Being stubborn can be a bad thing. It just depends on how you use it. I'm a very stubborn person, but not so stubborn that I can't learn new things and meet new people, but I have a one-track mind.'

♥♥♥STARTING A NEW SCHOOL♥♥♥

"You can't tell me what to do Rae, I am the proprietor of this witch school and you are my ex student." Mrs Ash told Rae. "Now take this letter and leave my office right this minute."

"Oh I see. This is very interesting." Rae said and then proceeded in placing her hand under her chin stroking her invisible long beard she doesn't have. "That reminds me, Your only daughter normally goes to the witch library every evening, by 6pm on the dot. She doesn't miss a single day. She sits at the last row of the library chair which faces a window. Is not that I am a stalker or something like that, please do not get that idea, but she normally follows the shortcut you secretly have behind your house. And today, I guess she told you ready that she will be coming late, she and her friend, Amila, has a project at hand. If you don't want to see your only daughter half to death, change that recommendation letter right now."

"I will report you to the Witches authority if you dare lay your filthy hands on my daughter." Mrs Ash said in anger to Rae who looked less concerned about her outburst.

"Go ahead Mrs Ash, report me and let us see between you and I who they will believe. Even till down, they didn't believe I beat up those students and rather accused you and the students for framing me. Once I cry, a stone hearted person will melt and believe me, so it's your choice madam."

Mrs Ash quickly opened her drawer and brought out a new piece of paper and started writing how wonderful Rae has been in her school:

Principle Jake, this is to inform you that your new transferred student, Rae Fey, is our best student so far in the witch school. Her brilliant brain doesn't have to be caged in this witch school, so that is why I am transferring her to you. She is of her best behavior and a down to earth girl, who help a lot.

I can assure you Jake, you will enjoy her stay in your school.

With lots of love ♥

Ash.

Mrs Ash signed under it and gave the letter to Rae who read it with a satisfied nod, she gave it back to Ash who then put the letter in another envelope and gave it back to Rae.

Collecting it with a smile. "I never knew you love me so much Mrs Ash."

"Who will love someone like you, with your character, no one will ever settle down with you or think about loving you in the future. I only did that because of my daughter." Mrs Ash said as Rae laughed out. "Your brilliant brain is so full of evil, if only your character is nice, it would have suit that brain of yours, but no, the god's made you brilliant and gave you a nasty character."

"It is called wisdom Mrs Ash." Rae said and also take the other recommendations letter and smiled sweetly. "If I later get to know you sent a letter apart from this one with me to Mr Jake, your daughter is a goner. Have a bountiful day, Mrs Ash." With that, Rae left her office.

She met Lillian who was waiting for her, she was concerned about what Rae might be doing to Ash. When the two minutes Rae had told her had elapsed, she wanted to go in, but stopped when she couldn't hear any shouts of help from Ash, so she concluded everything was going fine. If it was before, Ash would have screamed for help.

"Is everything okay?" Lillian asked as soon as she saw Rae emerging out from the office.

"Yes granny, everything went normal." Rae answered and gave her the recommendation letter Mrs Ash has re-written. "Here is the recommendation letter, she asked me to give you."

"Aww, that's so sweet of her." Lillian said as she collect the letter from her. "Come on, let's go home." She added and made a portal open, she waited first for Rae to enter before she did. The portal closes behind her.

\*\*\*

Two Days Later:

Lillian who just came back from the witches meeting met Rae in her room, dancing. Rae was more of a tomboy than an actual girl. Her appearance appeared boyish.

Seen her jumping up and down on her bed without a care, brought back old memories which had long been buried.

Thanks to the 'Invisible Spell of Hidden' she had placed in her body that hides her true identity. She looks more like Avonmora when she was born, and carries her father Gene, she just hoped and prayed to the gods that Rae shouldn't encounter the priestess, if not, her true identity will be revealed. She also made a bracelet for her to wear always, the bracelet made her perform magic, which made everyone truly believed Rae was her granddaughter.

Her pregnant daughter and husband, who was a hellhound, were attacked by some sea monsters on their way to pay her a surprise visit, her time for birth was drawing near. Before

Lillian could come to their rescue, her daughter, husband and unborn child were dead. Magic could not revive the dead. It was at that time, the ball which held Rae also burst open.

She made everyone believe Rae's was her late daughter child, which she saved before her death.

Lillian cleared her throat which drew Rae's attention to her. She jumped off the bed and landed near her.

"How did the meeting go? Did someone talk to you any how?" Rae's asked immediately.

"Nothing happened, I have submitted the recommendation letter to Jake, and you're to resume the new week coming by." Lillian reply her.

"To tell you the truth granny, I'm no longer sure whether to go or not, I will be the new transferred girl." Rae said with a sigh.

"Come on. You're just afraid. That's normal. After all, it's a new school and I know how you must feel." Lillian said trying to assure her granddaughter. "You'll never find out if you love the school or not if you don't try first." Lillian said slowly as she brought Rae's closer to her and hug. "The idea is to experience something first, and decide if it makes sense later. If you found out you don't love the school, tell me and I will see what I can do about it."

"Yeah," Rae said returning her hug and staring thoughtfully at the ceiling. "I guess you're right."

"So I have got everything that you would need for your new school." Lillian said as she cupped Rae's face tenderly with her hands. "This is a new school, there will be others Supernatural people going to that school. You will see fairies, hellhounds, vampires, wolves, etc, stay away from them and mingle with your fellow witches, and most importantly, stay away from a Wolf called Jaso- are you even listening?" Lillian asked as Rae began humming a tune.

"Yes granny, I know what you want to say already." Rae said as she kissed the side cheek of Lillian. "You don't have to worry about me granny. I am not looking for any ones trouble."

"I hope so."

\*\*\*

On The Mountain Top:

Tamara, entered her cave and proceeded to where her magic books are kept, she barely made it inside when she stopped in her tracks. Standing in front of her was the man in water form. She bow before him.

"Enough of your bowing Tamara, it's been a thousand years when the search for the last mermaid begun, and still yet you have not come across her or the one who gave birth to her."

"My Lord, it is not as simple as you think, I don't know where to find her, but I can assure you, that I am going to find the last mermaid before this year runs by." Tamara assured.

"That was what you have been saying each year. Tharollin has almost gotten to where my bones is being kept, so I need to drink the last mermaid blood before Tharollin reaches the bones."

"I will try harder my Lord, I just know this year won't pass without me finding where the last mermaid is."

"Better, for I am losing my patience with you."

\*\*\*

School Day:

The day for Rae to start her new school has arrived. She quickly took her bath and made her food appeared before her from the kitchen and ate it fast.

Putting on her favorite black leather trousers with a white vase. Talking her black jacket and wear it, putting on her matching black boots. She came out of her room and went to meet Lillian.

"I am ready granny." She announced as she saw Lillian in her study table.

"Don't cause any trouble Rae, today is your first day in school, first impression matters a lot." Lillian told her and make a portal opened.

"Of course granny, have faith in your granddaughter." Rae said as Lillian kissed her forehead tenderly.

Lillian shrugged her shoulders. "I am just telling you. Now go, I want you to be among the early birds."

Rae smiled and entered the portal.

"I will be checking on you from time to time. Don't forget to alert me when school has closed." Lillian said before the portal closes.

The portal opened at the front of the Supernatural school gate and closes once she stepped out. She saw others witches doing the same.



First impression matters.

Removing her jacket she wore, she flip it over to her left shoulder and screamed out loud. "I AM STARTING A NEW SCHOOL!"

## Chapter 4

'I'm unpredictable, I never know where I'm going until I get there, I'm so random, I'm always growing, learning, changing, I'm never the same person twice. But one thing you can be sure of about me; is I will always do exactly what I want to do. I'm not stubborn. My way is just better.'

♥♥♥♥ MEETING JORKALLUN ♥♥♥♥

Her suddenly screams draw the attention of all the students outside the gate to her. The students around her started whispering amongst themselves. Rae felt satisfied.

Feeling like a princess now that everyone's attention has been drawn to her, ignoring the whispering going on around her, she kept her head high and entered the school compound as if she owns it.

The school was large with various separate buildings in it.

She scanned the environment and noticed some few students were looking at her and others were ignoring her. Raising her Jacket upwards and rolling it round her head, she screamed out loud once again. "Hello People, I said I am new here!"

She smirked when she finally got all their attention.

"We don't make such noise here, didn't your parents or guardian told you that?" A male voice said behind her back and made to grab her on her shoulder.

The unexpected happened.

Before his hand would made contact with Rae's shoulder, without turning, she held his hand and twisted it and with inhuman strength she doesn't even know she has, she flipped the man to her front, who landed on the floor in a heavy thud.

Still twisting the full grown man hand hard, no matter how hard the man tried to remove his twisted hand from the iron fist hand of the girl, he couldn't, the sound of a bone dislocated was heard. "I don't like people touching me unless I permit them too." Rae said her voice coming out in double.

By now, they have attracted the whole students and teachers attention to them, some teachers who tried to separate them, couldn't when Rae made eye contact with them. The sudden fear that shook those teachers coming made them rushed back and someone, a female witch, quickly teleport to tell Principle Jack what happened.

He soon came out and was shocked by what he saw, the vice principal of the Supernaturals was pinned to the ground by a student. He saw how his vice principal was trying to get away from the girl who held him but to no avail. He was helpless against the girl.

"What is going on?" Jack asked as he advanced towards them. He nearly halted in his footsteps when Rae turned to stare at him coldly, nearly, but he is the principal of the school and a werewolf to top it all. "I asked a question, what is going on!?" He asked again when he was standing in front of Rae.

"If you don't mind your business, you will soon join him." Rae answered twisting the man on the ground hand the more.

"Did you know who you are talking to?" Jack asked folding his arms behind him, her character reminds him of two people. But her eyes when she had looked at him earlier on, reminded him of someone he knew from the past, someone who he couldn't remember.

"And who the hell are you!?" Rae shouted ignoring the loud gasped coming out from the students and teachers round them when she asked that question. By their shocked look display on their faces, they know who the man asking her stupid question is, does she care? Hell no.

"I am Jack, the principal of the Supernaturals." Jack introduced himself "And you are?"

It was as if the words he said was magic to the girl in front of him, because she quickly leave the man she had pinned down, stood up and smiled at him.

"I am Rae." She answered.

"Rae what?" Jack asked to be sure it was not the student he was expecting. He silently prayed to the gods that this shouldn't be his new transferred student. But it seems the gods were against him when he heard the next words omitting out from her mouth.

"Rae Fey, the one who was supposed to start this school today." Rae replied smiling widely.

Meanwhile, the man she had thrown to the ground, stood up, cleaning up the dirt from his clothes as he stares at the girl who just disgraced him in front of the whole school, holding his twisted hand and trying not to show his pains.

"If she is the new transferred student we are expecting, then we don't need her, the two we have is enough for us, we don't need a third one." The man grunted out.

"She's Lillian granddaughter Rick, we can't chase her out when her previous school gave her such a good recommendation." Jack said shaking his Sandy brown hair head. He faces Rae, "Apologize to Rick," he added.

"Why will I? He touched my shoulder, so I am not apologizing." Rae responded boldly.

"He is the vice principal of this school Rae, so yes, it is necessary for you to respect him and this should be the last time it repeat itself."

"Fine, sorry, jackass." Rae said rolling her eyes at them.

"Rick I don't know why they love picking on you, she is just like them, at least she apologized unlike those two." Jack said almost smiling. "Go and see the school nurse to set your bones, everyone should go back to what he or she is doing!" Jack shouted the last part to the students, who went back to what they were doing, he faces Rae. "And you young lady, you're coming with me."

Without waiting for a reply, Jack left going back to his office.

Rae snorted at Rick and quickly hurry up to meet Jack.

Entering his office, she sat down and place her legs on his table.

Jack stared at her in surprise, the girl has some guts. "Let's start with the school rules, first remove your legs from my table."

"Why Mr Jack? I love keeping it like this, got a problem with that?" Rae asked with a raised eyebrows at Jack.

"You sounded just like them, but anyways, Mrs Ash didn't mention that you are a fighter, she only made mention of how good you have been to her school."

"Yeah, that's me, full of surprises."

"Okay." Jack said and clapped his hands once, a female teacher who's a witch, appeared right next to Jack.

"What can I do for you Jack?" The witch asked.

"Please give Rae a copy of the school rules."

The witch nodded her head and whisper some words silently, a large scroll appeared right in front of Rae and landed on her lap. "That's your own copy of the school rules, go through it and abide by it." The witch said to Rae who took it and opened the scroll. The witch disappeared.

A frown appeared on Rae's face when she opened the scroll and roll down towards the principal door. "Are you kidding me, this is so fucking long and has plenty rules." Rae said with wide eyes as she stared at the scroll in her hands.

"Yes, there are 1,000, rules in it that you must go through it and obey every single one of them, every student in this Supernaturals school has a copy of that in your hand."

Rae didn't say anything, she quickly use a spell to refold the scroll back. "Is there anything else you want to bored me with?"

Jack smiled at her. "This is not your former school where only witches and wizards attend, we have all kinds of Supernaturals in this school." He added still smiling.

"Anything else I need to know?" Rae asked less concerned.

"Just keep out of trouble." Jack said and stood up. "Wait a minute, I will be back." He told her and left his office, he soon returned with a girl of Rae's height. She was beautiful, her hair was dark brown and her eyes were deep brown in color. She looked like the shy type.

"Who is this?" Rae asked as she saw the girl with Jack who was trying not to stare at her.

"She will be the one taking you to all your class until you are familiar with them." Jack replied.

"Did I asked you that I need a babysitter oh high and mighty principal?"

Smiling. "Yes, since today is your first day in this school, I don't want you to get lost so yes, Sarah will show you to all your classes and luckily for you, you are all in her class. Class will soon start, hop out of my office right now."

Rae didn't say anything, she got up and went out of the office with Sarah following behind. She stopped and turned to face the silent girl following her. "I thought you were the one to show me my class and not me showing you?"

"Sorry."

"Now lead the way."

As she followed Sarah, she noticed how the students kept staring at her as if she has two heads. Stopping in front of a student. "Why are you staring at me, is there something on my face you wanna tell me?" Rae asked the boy she caught staring at her.

"N--n..no, sorry." the guy stutter at his response.

"Good." Rae said and continue with Sarah.

"So Sarah, what kind of Supernatural creature are you?" Rae decided to ask the quiet girl.

"Umm..am a Centaur." Sarah answered.

A Centaur is a creature which is half-woman and half-horse.

"Wow, a Centaur?" Rae asked, Sarah nodded her head.

"Yes." Stopping in front of a class, which was noisy. "This is our first class, history."

"Okay Sarah."

They both entered the class together and the noise stopped once they saw who stepped in with Sarah.

The news of how she nearly beat up Rick, has gone round the school.

Ignoring them all, she quietly made her way to the back of the class which surprisedly seem empty. Surprising because all of them avoid the back sits.

Seating in one of the empty chairs and making herself at home, she waited for the stupid history teacher to make his or her appearance. Placing her hands at the back of her head, she closes her eyes and start singing an old witch song her grandmother had once taught her.

The class suddenly got quite once again.

Rae heard someone coming towards her but she did as if she didn't hear it and continue humming her song.

"What are you doing here? Can't you see that I am the only one who sits in the back row?" A male voice demanded.

Opening her eyes to see who is it, she saw a very handsome guy whose nose kept flaring out in a funny way in anger as he stares at her. Is that red?

"And who are you?" Rae asked the handsome guy.

"I am Jorkallun and you are sitting in my territory. I will advise you to find another row and occupy." Jorkallun said with anger laced in each word.

"Last I remember, you don't own the school so you have no right in telling me where I should sit pretty boy." Rae said. She suddenly find it strange that everywhere became quite, the once noisy huge school all went silent as if waiting for something to happen.

"You!" Jorkallun snarled furiously. In perfect counterpoint to his anger, his already brilliant red hair went from hot to flaming - literally.



## Chapter 5

'People think I am strong. I am not strong. There is a difference between a strong person and a stubborn person who just won't put her sword down. I am the latter. Again and again and again... pick the sword up, pick the sword up, pick the sword up. I'm hard-headed not hard-hearted. I may be stubborn, sassy and rude at times, but I have a big heart and care about others more than I should.'

♥♥♥♥A NEW FOUND FRIEND AND MEETING THE AMAZON'S♥♥♥♥

"Wow, your hair's on fire pretty boy, do you want to use the fire to cook?" Rae said not bothered by the angry look she was getting from Jorkallun. His red hair ignited fire the more.

His expression reminded Rae of an angry, dangerous wild animal about to maul someone, probably not her. A sane person would have fled by now from the glare she was receiving, but she isn't a sane person.

"Get up from that row and go and find somewhere else to occupy, do not force me student." Jorkallun said his mouth not moving a bit. His red eyes began to slowly show little flame.

"May be you haven't heard what I did to that stupid Rick few minutes ago because you are not the only one with anger issue, besides, this is not only the sit in the back row, there are two more empty chairs beside me so I don't know what your problem is. I am staying in this sit and there is nothing you can do pretty boy." Rae said with a huff in the air.

Jorkallun sudden anger melted away when he heard what Rae said, his hair that was on fire quickly dissolve. "So you were the new student who twisted that idiot Rick hand?" Jorkallun was in school when the incident took place, he felt less concerned then and walked pass the duo.

"Yup, that's me, he should be lucky I did not break all his bones." Rae said proudly. "I don't like that vice whoever."

"You should have tore off his whole arm, Well, you can have that sit all to yourself, any enemy of Rick is my friend, so let's start all over again. I am Jorkallun." The handsome red haired guy said stretching out his right hand towards her.

Rae stood up and shook his hand. "I am Rae pretty boy, the new transferred student." Ray introduced herself to him.

"First of all, don't call me 'pretty boy'. I just told you my name." Jorkallun said and detach his hand from Rae's, he went to sit in one of the empty sits beside Rae in the back row.

Those who were expecting a fight were disappointed, but they were surprised when they saw Jorkallun and Rae shaking hands. Jorkallun had never shook hands with anybody in the school



and seeing this was a surprise, no one has ever mentioned his full name without getting a fetal injuries. Mr Jack will have to write it in their School Book of Achievement.

Jorkallun who has sat down glanced up and noticed the quietness of the school, especially how his classmates kept looking at him and girl beside him. He doesn't like being stared at and he had made that point clear enough for everyone.

Rae saw the stares they were given at them and turn to look at Jorkallun, she saw anger in his face and she knew he was going to explode soon.

Right as he opened his mouth, Rae touches his shoulder briefly stopping him. "Don't worry Jorkallun, I got this."

Jorkallun looked confused and curiously, what was she going to do?

She turns facing everyone in the class, her face changes to anger just like Jorkallun, before shouting at the top of her lungs.

"WHAT ARE YOU FUCKING BADSTARDS LOOKING AT? YOU BETTER TURN YOUR FUCKING HEADS BEFORE I USE MY FIRE MAGIC ON ALL YOUR STUPID BRAINS!"

Everyone froze in shock at what Rae had said, their classmates jaw hit the floor.

Jorkallun who was the first person to recover from his shock, smirked at them.

"DIDN'T YOU HEAR WHAT SHE SAID!" He yells at them causing them all to snap out of their shocked state and getting back to what they were doing.

The quiet school became noisy once again.

Satisfied with the result, Jorkallun placed his head on his desk, ignoring Rae and everyone completely.

Two minutes later their history teacher, Serena Birdrock, a fairy, flew into the class. Her fairy wings were pink in color and her hair matches with her wings.

"Good morning students." Serena Birdrock said greeting her students.

"Good morning ma." They all responded except Jorkallun who still kept his head on the desk.

"Before we proceed, we have a newly transferred student in our midst." Serena Birdrock announced with a smile before focusing on Rae. "Rae will you please introduce yourself to your classmates."

It was because of the please Serena added that prompted Rae to stand up from her seat.

"I am Rae Fey, and I don't look for trouble." Rae said sweetly.

"Okay, that was the most nicest introduction I have ever heard Rae." Serena told Rae. A magic book and magic pen appeared in front of all the students. "Today, we are going to talk about the history of Witches. Witches are people who used their magic spells and called upon spirits for help or to bring about change. Though there are two types of witches, we have the black witches, they use their magic for evil and the white witches, they use their magic for good. There are many types of witches, but the main two are the white witches and the black witches. And all the witches we have in our world are white witch." Serena explained with a smile to her students.

1 hour later.

"That will be all for today's class, but you are going to tell me the name of the first witch Queen we have tomorrow, by tomorrow, am sure you must have done your research and come up with an answer. Have a wonderful day." With that Serena left the class.

As soon as Serena left the class, everyone started preparing themselves to go to their next class.

Jorkallun stood up from his seat, everybody came to a halt as Jorkallun stood up, they all waited until he left the class before they started leaving with their friends.

Sarah quickly went to meet Rae and without a word Rae followed her.

Sarah took Rae to all her classes until it was time for their lunch.

They entered the school cafeteria and saw it full with students eating all types of food. Sarah took Rae to her table. Rae kept looking around to see if she could see the red-haired boy, but she couldn't.

"This is where I normally sit whenever I want to eat." Sarah said and claps her hands, a plate appeared in front of her with a little bag beside it. She opened the little bag and sprinkled the sawdust from the little bag on the empty plate. A full size fried chicken appeared on the empty plate. "Are you not hungry?" Sarah asked as she started eating her chicken.

"I am not hungry yet, but have been wanting to ask, who is Jorkallun and why do they fear him?"

Sarah almost choked herself to death when Rae asked her, steadying her breath. "Jorkallun is a..." She draws closer to Rae as if she wanted to tell her a huge secret. "... Dragon."

Rae eyes widened in disbelief. "A Dragon? I thought dragons don't usually come out from their lair talkless about one going to school."

"You could say Jorkallun is different. His father is the King of Dragons and still yet, he is so stubborn. Everyone feared him except for one."

"Because he is a Dragon, no wonder Miss Serena didn't bother to wake him up during her class."

"I just told you he is a dragon but apart from Miss Serena being afraid of Jorkallun, dragons are knowledgeable, they are wise creatures and are very old. He knows all the answers to all questions. My guess is that he loves coming to school because he likes it when we tremble at his presence." Sarah explained. "He wasn't like this you know, he was this sweet charming and handsome looking guy every girl dream to have, but all that changed one day when he fought with his best friend, rumor said they fought because of a girl. We don't really know what had happened but we saw Jorkallun becoming like this, the girls still admired him but in a distant, he doesn't allow anyone comes close to him except you Rae."

Rae wanted to reply but stopped the words from coming out when she noticed four beautiful girls heading towards an empty table with four chairs.

The cafeteria went silent as the four girls entered and started walking over to their table. No one dares sit on it.

Rae couldn't deny the fact that the four girls were extremely beautiful. They all carried themselves high. The most beautiful of them all was the tallest girl in the midst.

Her sun blond hair was long passing her waist. Her eyes were like the sun, her smile was like the morning sun. And she was proud, you would know when you see her.

"Who are they?" Rae found herself whispering to Sarah.

"Oh, they are the Amazon's warriors. The one who thinks like she owns the world is betrothed to the Wolf King Son, Jason." Sarah answered whispering back.

"Jason? Who is Jason?" Rae asked.

"Oh, you haven't met that spoilt brat yet, Jason is the only son of the Wolf King Reon, the King who rules all Supernaturals. Did you know Jason and Jorkallun were best of friends once until they fought and went their separate ways. One day, we hope to see both of them as friends." Sarah said going back to her food. "That girl who thinks she owns the world, is the reason why Jason and Jorkallun separated."

## Chapter 6

'Stubborn people get themselves in a lot of trouble, but they also get things done. I'm very determined and stubborn. There's a desire in me that makes me want to do more and more, and to do it right. Each one of us has a fire in our hearts for something. It's our goal in life to find it and to keep it lit.'

♥♥♥♥ THE AMAZON'S WARRIORS ♥♥♥♥

Rae eyes widened up a bit when she heard that. "You mean to say, Jorkallun fought with his best friend for that girl over there?" Rae whispered asked as her eyes were steady feast on the four girls chatting and laughing away, especially the beautiful one who was the cause of Jorkallun and Jason fight.

"Yes, but like I said, it was a rumor which we don't know if its true or not." Sarah said lowly. "But since you have become friends with Jorkallun, maybe you can get him to talk to you." Sarah suggested.

"Maybe I can, I will try my luck." Rae said "So how do your foods works?"

"You picture what you want to eat in your head and then clap, whatever you picture will appear." Sarah explained.

Rae smiled to her and did exactly what she saw her do earlier on.

The empty plate in front of her was filled with meats. "Wow, I LOVE THIS SCHOOL!" Rae exclaimed with loud excitement as she saw her plate filled with what she had picture in her mind.

"Shhhh, keep your voice down." Sarah caution her.

"Why should I keep my voice down?"

"The Amazon's Warriors doesn't like noise if they are here, so please lower your voice down."

"Oh, I see." Rae said and stood up to her feet. "I said I LOVE THIS SCHOOL!" She shouted loudly this time and sat down on her chair, looking at Sarah who was suddenly afraid. "Let me see what they got."

The cafeteria became quite immediately.

"What have you done, Lolly and her friends are the best Amazon's Warriors and she is their leader, you are asking for a lot of beating."

"As if---" she was cut short when one of the four girls walk up to their table.

"You are being called to our table by the queen." The girl said with confidence.

"Well as you can see, I am eating, tell your queen to come here herself or better still get me there herself."

The loud gasped coming out from the cafeteria was filled with shocked, even the girl that was sent to bring Rae was shocked.

"Do you know who we are? Who you just insulted?"

Rae glance at the table where Lolly and the remaining two girls were and shrugged her shoulders. "I see three students trying to eat and a stupid fool standing in front of me. In case you have forgotten, I have my own rights." As Rae spoke, she saw at the side of her eyes, the three girls making their way over to her angrily, Lolly seemed to be the angriest of them all.

"Oh, more crowds, in the end you came to meet me.." Rae said with a smile as they surrounded her table.

"Stand her up and beat her." Lolly commanded.

"If I were you, I wouldn't dream of it."

"You are lucky we didn't come with our swords." The girl that was sent to her table first, said.

"You can't beat me even with your weapons."

"You think you can take us on?" One of them asked in anger.

She smiled lazily, stretching back and relaxing. "I know I can."

That did it, for they laughed. "Try us then."

Rae stood up, made a show of stretching, and replied mystically. "Looks can be deceiving, my dear." She smiled innocently, "Who's first then?"

The three girls with Lolly attacked at once, but they didn't stand a chance at all, Rae kicked the three of them at the same time, very fast. They all flew and landed on their backs with a crack of bones.

Lolly saw red and rushed to her, her pride wounded as the crowds surrounding them started whispering Rae's name.

"Lesson one: Never take your attention off your opponent." Rae emphasised this point strongly. Lolly swung a punch aimed for Rae's jaw. She ducked under the blow and danced around behind her. "Lesson two: Don't hesitate. Every second you wait is a second more for your opponent to react faster than you."

Lolly swung at Rae again, more seriously this time. Rae saw the muscles in her right shoulder tense and prepare itself to put force behind her hit and ready her body for the jar it would give her. Rae leaned back, laying below the ground, at the last second and grabbed her forearm.

"Lesson three: Watch your opponent's body language to anticipate their next move." She gave the beautiful girl a quick grin and twisted her wrist inwards, immobilising her arm. In a flash Rae turned around and used her efforts to escape to flip her over her shoulder. Lolly landed in a stunned heap on her back at Rae's feet.

Every student in the Cafeteria mouth were opened wide.

"Lesson four: Even strengths can be used against people. Use their momentum to gain the upper hand. It's not about being the strongest; it's about being the smartest. Sarah, I hope you're listening."

Sarah nodded her head still surprised by what she was seen, did Rae beat up the three best Amazon's Warriors and their queen?

Seeing that none of them was getting up any moment, she sat down to continue her meal. She happened to glance up to see Jorkallun smiling at her from the cafeteria door, before it vanished to be replaced with a deep scowl.

\*\*\*

Going home, every student were staring at her until she touches her bracelet and a portal opened almost immediately, it was her way of telling Lillian she has closed from school.

"How was your day dear?" Lillian asked immediately she saw her granddaughter stepping out from the portal.

"It was good, I really love that school, I can't wait to go back tomorrow granny."

"I am glad you liked it, hope you didn't fight or caused any trouble?"

"Not at all granny, I was silent as a graveyard throughout today."

Lillian smiled and nodded her head. "Okay, go and shower, your food will be ready."

\*\*\*

Lillian was coming out of the witches library when she met Jack about to enter. Jack smiled immediately when he saw Lillian. They greeted themselves.

"What are you doing here?" Lillian was the first to ask the werewolf principle, she was surprised to see him at the witches library.

"I came to see a very good friend of mine who invited me over to see her here." Jack explained his reason why he was there.

"Okay, so how was my granddaughter today in school? I hope she didn't cause any problem in her first day?" Lillian asked with a smile on her face.

"Well your granddaughter is something else, she created a scene with Rick and nearly beat up my vice principal." Jack said and saw the surprised look on Lillian face. "Judging from that look of yours, I guess she didn't tell you that."

Lillian nodded her head. "Yes, she told me that she loves the school and didn't cause any trouble."

Jack laughed out, "She did a lot today Mrs Lillian. She beat up the Amazon's Warriors today, all of them, not one was spared, Lolly included."

Lillian eyes were like socket right now as she listened to the shocking Revelations that Jack told her.

"She didn't tell me any of these, I am very surprised hearing this from you."

"I think Rae is a special kid." Jack said all of a sudden.

"How do you mean?" Lillian asked fearfully.

"I mean, look at the way she beat up the four best Amazon's Warriors in a twinkle of an eye and became friends with Jorkallun, all in one day." Jack pointed out. "And not to mention of how she flipped Rick form behind her, a thousand years old wolf, it is as if she has a kind of secret powers she is hiding. Because I know witches aren't that strong when it comes to a fight, but Rae is an exceptional." Jack finishes with a smile on his handsome face.

"Yes, she is exceptional, you know Rae was trained, due to the sudden death of her parents, I had her trained secretly. I am so sorry for what she did today." Lillian lied with ease.

"It's okay Lillian, I am just glad that she made the school more lively than before."

"Thank you Mr Jack for your understanding, sorry to ask, did you say she was friends with Jorkallun? The Jorkallun that we all know?"

"Yeah, she did. Sarah the girl I assigned her with told me everything. Rae being friends with the Dragon, came as a huge blow to us, I never thought to see Jorkallun having a new friend."

"Thank you Jack once again, let me start going." Lillian said as she made a portal to open right there in front of them.

"See you some other time Lillian." Jack said and Waited until Lillian had entered the portal, which closes, before he went inside the library.

\*\*\*

The portal opened and Lillian stepped inside her house. She quickly teleport herself into Rae's room, and saw Rae sleeping.

"Don't pretend to sleep Rae when you're not, I know all your tricks." Lillian said. "Seriously we need to talk."

Rae opened her eyes and smile to her grandmother. "Hey granny, what did I do this time?"

"Stop pretending like you don't know why I am, when I asked you how your day was, you replied to me fine. You never told me you had a fight with Rick, or the Amazon's Warriors. Haven't I warned you never to fight." Lillian said in an almost teary voice, she was worried sick that one of these days, Rae is going to expose the truth. Tongues will start wagging soon, Rae was a witch and witches don't go about looking for trouble and beating up people.

"Oh, I didn't do anything wrong, they told me to come and meet the queen because of the noise I made, I refused and they attacked me, so I had to do something that minute, I am sorry if that hurt you, I promise not to fight again." Rae said sincerely, she hates to see her grandmother cry. "I will stay out of trouble from now onwards."

"Promise me that?" Lillian said in fake tears, it was the only way for her to have Rae agree to keep her promise without failing it.

"Promise granny, now please go, I need my beauty sleep."

"Okay, sleep all you want. I love you." Lillian said and kissed Rae's forehead before she left.

Rae sigh out in bliss as she remembered the brief smile she saw on Jorkallun face today when she beat up the four best Amazon's Warriors, she felt proud when she saw him. She wants to see Jorkallun smile again.....for her. She made a vow within herself to make Jorkallun smile.





## Chapter 7

'People are guests in our story, the same way we are guests in theirs. But we all meet each other for a reason because every person is a personal lesson waiting to be told. Life is a journey we will meet a lot of temporary people,  
But we will meet a person who will be with us till the end of the journey,  
Even they enter our journey in between yet they will be sharing the ups and downs in our journey.'

♥♥♥♥ MEETING JASON ♥♥♥♥

King Roen Palace:

King Roen and the fairy Queen, Flora, were seen coming out of the Palace throne room. He was escorting the queen out, who came to discuss some important issues surrounding her kingdom. Her fairy maids and guards were behind them.

They stopped walking once they were outside the palace compound. It was here queen Flora will have to depart.

"Thanks for your suggestions King Roen, I will apply them wisely." Queen Flora said in gratitude.

"The pleasure is mine Flora, I love helping my fellow Kings and Queens as much as I can." Roen responded with a smile on his face. "Send my regards to your husband."

Nodding her head, Queen Flora made as if she wants to fly but stopped in her tracks and turned once again to face the handsome Werewolf General King.

"That reminds, have you not heard the news going round this afternoon?" Queen Flora asked.

"What news Flora?" King Roen asked confusedly.

"Oh, you haven't heard then. I was told that Lolly and her friends were beaten up by a newly transferred girl in school today." Queen Flora finally revealed, she wasn't only here to discuss her Kingdom issue.

"Which of the Lolly are you referring too?"

"Lolly, Jason bride to be. She was disgraced by that new girl. I find it hard to believe that Lolly being one the best Amazon's Warriors, and their queen was beaten up by a single girl, the four of them, including Lolly." Queen Flora said to Roen.

"Impossible, how can Lolly, the future queen of the Supernaturals, let herself to be disgraced, if she knew she couldn't beat up the said girl, why then engage her to a fight?" King Roen asked angrily.

"I wondered too, the news of how Lolly was beaten is everywhere, am even surprised you didn't know of it." Queen Flora said and shrugged her shoulders.

"Who can that girl be? Do you know her name, or what kind of Supernatural she is?" King Roen demanded.

"My sources told me that she was a transfer student from the witches school." One would have realized by now that she didn't come only to the Palace for her kingdom issue, but to gossip as well.

"Thank you for your message, I will see what I can do about it." King Roen said.

"Of course my King." Queen Flora said and bowed before him. "I shall take my leave now." With that she flew out, with her maids and guards behind her.

Roen quickly went back into the palace and approached his son chambers. He knocked twice before entering the room, closing the door behind him.

"Yes father, what is it?" A male voice asked followed with a deep growl.

Today was the ending of the Full Moon, Jason always hate it when the Full Moon arises. He was the only werewolf in the entire Kingdom who will stay in his werewolf form whenever the full moon approaches, the rest changes into their different wolves and changes back to their human form, but him stays a werewolf throughout the week of the full moon. Tonight marks the end of the full moon, by tomorrow, he will be a whole human again.

The air brushed through its short fur, as condensation escaped its cringed snout. Saliva coated its tongue as it brushed against sharp, ivory canines; the occasional drop hitting the floor. Its ears were pulled forward and its lips tucked up. Two white paws stood firm to the floor, the beast lowered it's head while its ember eyes watched every motion his father made.

As much as Jason abhorred the self he became every full moon he could never bring himself to hate his wolf.

King Roen, smiled at the large Wolf in his presence, he felt smaller when the Wolf towered over him. He was very proud that this towering Wolf was his son.

"Lolly was beaten up by a new girl in school today." King Roen said going straight to the point.

"What? Who in the supernaturals doesn't know Lolly is my bride to be?" The Wolf asked out in anger. Even in his werewolf form, he could still talk.

"I guess this new girl doesn't know who Lolly is to you."

"But isn't she the leader of the Amazon's Warriors, why will she allowed a new girl to disgrace her publicly?"

"I thought so too my son, that's what you're going to find out tomorrow when you resume school since tonight ends the full moon. Find out who the girl that beat up Lolly is, I need to know who her parents are." Roen said. "And one more thing, do not use force on her."

Jason wasn't even listening.

\*\*\*\*

Early the next morning, Rae woke up before Lillian. She quickly took her bath of hot water and got dressed. She warmed up the leftover food from yesterday and quickly ate her fill. She wants to be among the early birds in school.

She was still eaten when Lillian walked down the stairs, her face that was filled in worries slowly show a sign of relief. Greeting her grandmother.

"I went to check in your room and I couldn't find you, I thought maybe you have been kidnapped." Lillian said as she walked over to where Rae was and kissed her forehead in a motherly way before sitting beside her waiting for her reply.

"Sorry granny, you have been the one waking me up, so I decided to wake up very early and go to school today."

Lillian folded up her arms and stare disbelief at Rae, "Is that it or there is something else you are not telling me?"

"Grandma, I am not hiding anything from you, I really want to go to school early today, that's all." Rae said, how can she tell her grandmother her reason for going that early was to see a particular pretty boy.

"Are sure Rae because from now henceforth, I won't be waking you up for school."

"What if tomorrow morning I get tired and can't wake up early, won't you wake me up grandma?"

"No, I won't Rae, today has shown me that you are capable of waking up yourself, which makes me to realize that, all these years that you have been attending the witches school, I either wake you up or you wake up late on purpose."

"No granny, the witches school was boring, but this new school, is so exciting." Rae said in a happy smile.

"Was that the reason why you decided to beat up Lolly, do you have any idea who she is engaged too?"

"And I don't really care who she's engage too, all I knew was that, she is rude and I have to teach her a lesson." Rae said

"Don't forget the promise you made to me yesterday, that you will never engage in a fight again."

"I remembered granny." Rae said and finished eating her food, she touches her bracelet briefly. "Grandma, why do you want me to wear this bracelet always?"

"I have told you that once you touch it, the bracelet tells me that you are coming home. No matter what you do, do not remove that bracelet from your wrist, as long as you wear it, I will know where ever you are." Lillian said as finish explaining. She couldn't tell Rae it was a half truth, the bracelet hides her scent and made her appear as a normal witch, it also enables her to perform magic like a witches does. And she wasn't lying when she said she would know wherever Rae is.

Deep down her, she wants to open up to Rae about her parents but couldn't, telling her now might even put her in danger, she will tell Rae when it's time, for now, Rae will still be left in the dark.

"Okay, if you say so." Rae stood up from her chair and made the plate disappeared, wash by itself before settling itself amongst the rest clean plates. "I have to start going granny, see you later in the day." Rae said as a portal opened right before her. She stepped into it.

"Be careful and stay out of trouble Rae!" Lillian shouted behind her as the portal closes.

---

Stepping out of the portal, she noticed that every student, including some teachers had stopped and were staring at her as if a princess just arrived.

Feeling less concerned about the stares she was getting, she quickly made her way into her first class, history where she can't wait to see the pretty boy.

She entered the class and realized she was the only one there, she was crestfallen when she couldn't see Jorkallun.

She barely sat down in her seat when she saw someone entered her class. He was very handsome and his long white hair suited him. His eye balls were purely white.

Rae mouth was wide open when she saw him. Who is he? And why is he heading her way in much anger?

"So you are the new girl that beat up Lolly?" Jason asked in anger once he stood in front of the girl he has been told about.

Rae nearly melted by his tone, her heart was beating faster. Her eyebrows raised up as she stared at Mr handsome, she remembered what he had asked her.

"Yup, that's me, I beat their lazy arses especially that girl called Lolly, she was too proud." Rae said in pride as hoped she looked presentable in her clothes, does this school has handsome guys that keeps appearing everyday? Yesterday was the pretty Jorkallun and today another handsome boy. "And who are you, weren't you there yesterday to see the fight? They were rude to me and I have to teach them a lesson."

"I am Jason, and Lolly is my bride to be, how dare you lay your filthy hands on her!" Jason shouted as he introduced himself to the stupid girl.

By now, every student stood near the window and door to see what Jason would do, they were scared of entering the classroom.

Rae eyes widened a bit, this handsome guy that looks as if he wants to kill her was the Jason Sarah spoke about yesterday? Her Granny's warning came to her. "Like I said handsome boy, they were very rude to me, I mean how can someone not make noise in the school cafeteria because they are there? It doesn't work that way, I follow my own rules." Rae said without any inch of fear. "And if they tried that again, I will deal with them again." She added as she flipped her black hair out of her face.

"How dare You!" Jason shouted and made to drag Rae out from her seat but was stopped by a voice.

"I wouldn't try that."

Jason turned to look who spoke and saw Jorkallun who was inside the class no one dares entered.

He silently made his way to his back seat, he placed his legs on the desk. "She is my friend, if you have a problem with her, face me and not her."

Rae blinked her eyes a multiple times when she heard those words from the pretty boy. She could see the hate they had for each other through their eyes.

Two hot guys in her front, one saying she was his friend and the other one angry because she beat up his rude girlfriend. At least she has the pretty boy to her side, once again, Rae hoped she looked more presentable in her choice of clothes now Jorkallun is here.

She smiled and moved closer to Jorkallun, placing her legs on the desk as well, she smirked at an angry Jason.

"You heard him handsome boy, Jorkallun is my friend, face him and not me."

## Chapter 8

'Hope begins in the dark, the stubborn hope that if you just show up and try to do the right thing, the dawn will come. You wait and watch and work: you don't give up. Success comes from stubborn perseverance and the tenacity not to admit defeat.'

♥♥♥♥ AVONMORA ♥♥♥♥

Jason who has been staring heatedly at Jorkallun turned his gaze on Rae.

"What did you just utter?" Jason asked in anger, his eyeballs changing from white to pure red. His skin going pale the more.

For the first time in her whole life Rae felt afraid. She was grateful that she was sitting down and Jorkallun is right next to her, she prevented her fears from showing in her face and opened her mouth to answer, but Jorkallun beat her to it.

"You heard her, so stop pretending as if you didn't. Just because you're the son of the king doesn't mean your bride to be should be rude. She doesn't have any right to give out any rules that are not in the school rules." Jorkallun said calmly. "Under the circumstances, I will forget what I swore to do if I ever set my eyes on you, but get the hell out of my sight before I change my mind."

He said in anger, the school knows that they don't see eye to eye, and they made sure Jason and Jorkallun part never crossed each other.

In a blur of movement so swift that Rae couldn't follow it. Jason raised his arm and hurled a knife made of fire across the room. It sliced into the desk, a quarter inch away from Jorkallun's feet. The pretty red haired boy wasn't even scared, rather he raised one of his legs and pushed out the fire knife away from his desk.

"You don't fucking tell me what to do!" Jason yell.

"Unless you want to fight with me and repeat history itself, I will advise you to tell your bride to come and fight for herself, they are both ladies, this situation doesn't concern you. So I will say it again, if you have a problem with her, face me and not her, she is now under my wings, the same way Lolly is under yours." Jorkallun said in a tired voice as he stretches out his arms.

Jason turned to face Rae with the most ferocious look. "You are just lucky he got involved in this, stay out of my way if you don't want to DIE early, because if you don't, even him can not stop me ." Jason said in a stern warning to Rae and vanished into thin air, before he vanished, Rae briefly saw a pair of fire wings.



Rae had to blink her eyes twice to confirm what she saw, did Jason just disappear? Was that wings she saw? He is a wolf and werewolf eyes doesn't change and they don't disappear. How come Jason wolf is different?

A lot of questions that needed an answer and she doesn't think Jorkallun will tell her.

She turns her head towards Jorkallun who has already shifted to his seat, ignoring her whole existence, he was already placing his head on the desk when he suddenly stops and he faced Rae.

"Don't cross his part as he had said Rae, I am not as strong as he is, I might be a Dragon, but there are certain limits I can go. The only reason he didn't fight with me is because of our past friendship, so to avoid trouble, stay in your own lane." Jorkallun said with a cold voice and finally place his head on the desk.

Rae had noticed throughout their entire conversation, they didn't mention their names, whatever causes their separation was really deep. She made up her mind to find out what had really happened and maybe try to bring back their friendship between them once again.

Starting from Jorkallun, she was going to make the pretty boy smile and be friends with that handsome white haired boy.

Rae has forgotten the audience they had, it wasn't until Serena Birdrock voice spoke to the students outside that she remembered them.

"The show is now over students, go back to your various classes." Serena Birdrock announced as she made her way inside her class.

The students quickly disperse as they went into their various classes. Some entered the class Rae was.

Only one thing runs through their minds. Jason didn't fight and Jorkallun stood up for the new girl.

"So, that went well, at least the two pair didn't fight or destroy the whole school again." Serena said referring to Jason and Jorkallun. "So yesterday I asked you all to find out who was the first witch Queen, so who has the answer to that?"

All the students in the class turned to look at Rae.

Rae wondered why all her classmates were staring at her including Sarah.

"Why are those big heads staring at me?"

"You do realize that you are the only witch in this class, so my guess is that they are looking at you to tell me the answer." Serena answered.

"Oh, I don't know either." Rae said with a wave of her hand.

"But I thought your grandmother is Lillian?" Serena asked.

"Yes you are right, but I still don't know. You can ask Jorkallun, he knows everything and will gladly answer you, but me, I am still learning." Rae added with a wry smile.

Serena didn't press the matter any further as Rae mentioned Jorkallun.

"The first queen of the witches, her name was Queen Barb, the great grand mother of Lillian." Serena told the class as she flew around them.

"So today, we are going to talk about different kinds of creatures we have in the whole Supernaturals." Serena told her class. "Who can tell me the type of creatures we have?"

A male student raised up his hand.

"Yes, Al."

"We have the Arachnes creatures." Al said.

"And what are they?" Serena asked.

"Arachnes are supernatural creatures who have abilities similar to those of spiders." Al answer.

"Correct Al, who else."

Another male student raised up his hand.

"Yes James."

"We have the Crocotta creatures."

"And what are they?" Serena asked.

"Crocottas can mimic any person's voice to lure their victims out so they can feed. They feed on souls." James answered correctly.

"Very good James, who else again?"

This time around, a girl raised up her hand.

"Yes Joanna?"

"We have the Rakshasa."

"And what are they?"

"Rakshasa are creatures that eat the flesh, they sleep on a bed of dead insects and are great at shapeshifting." Joanna said.

"Correct, we all have different types of Supernatural that King Roen rules, we have, Fairies, Hellhounds, Witches, Centaur, Leviathans, Wolves, Vampires and a lot more."

Rae suddenly raised up her hand.

"Yes Rae what is it?"

"Why haven't any one of you made mention of Demons and Mermaids, or did they not exist?"

Serena shook her head painfully. "We can't mention them Rae, it is forbidden."

"Why? If they can't be mentioned then why are their histories and evidence of their existence not destroyed?" Rae asked intelligently, she had read about them in books.

"The mermaids and Demons did something bad in the past and the priestess made the rules never to mention their names, so let's discuss about others things." Serena said with a smile.

The rest of the day went by smoothly, even in the cafeteria, Rae avoided the Amazons warriors as well. Her mind wasn't there and Sarah noticed it.

"What's bugging you?" Sarah whispered asked since they were still in the Cafeteria and the Amazon's Warriors were eyeing their table.

"Thinking about a lot of things." Rae said not bothering to lower her voice.

"Shhhh, keep your voice down."

"Yes Mom." Rae said rolling her eye balls as she remembered her promise she made to her grandmother.

"So can you tell me what you are thinking?"

"Actually there are two things running in my mind that needs an answer, one is Jason, what type of creature is he and what did Jorkallun mean when he said 'Unless you want to repeat history itself'? What history was he talking about?"

"Well Jason is a Tribrid, and also, didn't I tell you they once fought, the cause of their fight is still unknown to us till date, it took a whole year for the school to be rebuilt again. And since they don't see eye to eye, they made Jason and Jorkallun their own different special class, that's why you hardly see Jason, but Jorkallun, still comes to his old class which you met him." Sarah finished explaining.

"I see, I have to make them friends again, they are too pretty and handsome for them to be keeping malice." Rae said after a while.

Sarah laughed slowly that you wouldn't hear it, "And you think you can achieve that?"

"I know I can."

"Okay, I am not running or going away anytime soon, so what is your second thoughts?"

"Demons and mermaids." Rae answered briefly. "I want to know why they aren't mention and what they did."

Looking around them carefully before Sarah whispered lowly, "Follow me."

With that Sarah stood up from the chair as Rae did the same, together they walked out of the cafeteria. Rae saw Lolly staring at her with heated eyes which she returns with a smirk.

Following Sarah, they walked out of the school compound and Sarah took Rae to the back of the school where another gate is, it was heavily padlocked.

Sarah removed one of her boots and collect the keys from it. Seeing the looks Rae was giving her, she smiled and told her. "My grandmother is the gatekeeper of this gate, I have the keys because she normally forget where she kept it."

"I didn't ask you." Rae said with a smile.

Sarah, with the keys, opened all the padlocks they used on the gate. Opening the gate she entered.

"Follow me." Sarah said and they went inside the gate.

Going further and further, Sarah stopped in her movement when she saw what she wanted to show Rae.

"Where are we?" Rae asked as she saw herself facing a Huge gate that was not closed completely, and has nothing holding it, it stood alone. Standing right in front of the gate was a frozen lady. She felt drawn to her

"We are at the Gate of Darkness, the gate I had unlocked when coming suppressed the dark powers coming out from this Gate of Darkness, since it hasn't been closed permanently." Sarah explained.

"And who is the lady frozen at the front of the gate?" Rae couldn't help but ask.

"She is Avonmora, the queen of mermaid. Her mate was a demon King. Her lover was the reason why there are no mermaids."

"I don't get you? What did the demon king do?"

"According to my grandma, he fought against the entire realm but lost the battle and the demons were seized, we don't know where the rest of the demons are kept. Avonmora pleaded on his behalf but he betrayed her and used her in opening the Gate of Darkness. The gods spoke to the priestess and they demanded the blood of all the Mermaids, which they use in closing the Gate."

"But it is not closed fully, why?"

"The priestess said that it remains one mermaid blood to close the gate forever, up till now, no one has ever seen any mermaid." Sarah said. "Wherever she is hiding, I hope one day she is fished out."

Rae couldn't say a thing, she saw herself going closer to the frozen lady, standing right in front of her, she raised up her hand and touched Avonmora face.

Where she touched shone.

Sarah gasped out in shock when she saw the light coming from where Rae had touched. She went over to where Rae stood.

"That's strange, Avonmora has never shone like this whenever she was touched." Sarah said aloud surprised.

"Really?" Rae asked in surprise as well as Sarah nodded her head, "Because I also find it strange that this lady I just touched, is still alive."

\*\*\*\*

The water man stares at the crystal stone that helped the soul of Avonmora in it as it was moving around it aggressively, as if it was trying to break itself free.

"Be patient Avonmora, is just a matter of time before you will be finally laid to rest." The water man said to the crystal stone in his hands.

The water man could feel Tharollin almost reaching where the gods had kept his bones. His only hindrance now was finding out where the last mermaid is. Without her blood, all his plans he had laid out will fail.

He knew she had been born, he felt it, but when he tried to search for the last mermaid, somehow, he couldn't find her. It was as if an invisible force was hiding her, as if a witch was behind it.

Something suddenly clicked in his mind. Perhaps it was a witch that is hiding the mermaid, a very strong witch.

If what he thinks is true, then, who might be the witch hindering him from achieving his aim? Who?

The water man thought.

## Chapter 9

'Secrets are like scars. The cut may no longer be there, but the scar's white line tells a story. Unless you share it, it's like you're hiding a part of yourself the whole world can already see. They may not know the how or the why, but they see it just the same. And above all, watch with glittering eyes the whole world around you because the greatest secrets are always hidden in the most unlikely places. Those who don't believe in magic will never find it.'

♥♥♥♥ SECRETS AND THAROLLIN ♥♥♥♥

Sarah turned to study Rae before turning back to Avonmora.

"Why do you say so?" Sarah asked curiously. "Avonmora had been like this for the past 1,000 years." She added.

"I don't know why I said that, but I am very sure that this frozen lady here, is much alive." Rae sounded so sure of herself. She could feel the strange tingles in her fingers, when she touched the woman's cheek, it wasn't icing as she had expected it to be, it was very warm. And her eyes, it speak of someone who had lost something. Rae leaned nearer to the face and stare at frozen eyes. Something doesn't seem right here and she was going to ask her mother to tell her more about this frozen woman.

"She is really beautiful." Rae said slowly studying the lady's face.

"Yes she is, my grandmother once told me that she was the most beautiful maiden in the entire Kingdoms." Sarah responded. Truly, Avonmora was beautiful.

Removing her hands from Avonmora cheek, facing her friend. "Come on, let's get out of here before someone sees us." Rae said.

"I was just waiting to hear that from you?" Sarah said with a smile as they walked out of there towards the gate. Rae turned for the last time to look at the frozen lady, she felt as if it was calling her to come back, her eyes said it all, for a moment, Rae had sworn that she saw a brief light that came out from the lady's eyes when she had touched her. Reaching the gate, Sarah locked it exactly the way it was and put the keys back inside her boots.

As the gate was locked, Rae felt as if a part of her were locked inside, she shook that feeling away and started thinking.

Sarah saw the look on Rae's face and decided to ask.

"What are you thinking?"

"Tharollin." Was Rae simply answer.

"Tharollin? What happened to him?" Sarah asked confusedly.

"Didn't your grandmother told you anything else concerning this demon king?"

"Nope, only that he betrayed the queen of mermaids, he broke the trust he had from Avonmora, I told you my grandmother forgets a lot of things so she couldn't remember." Sarah answered. "But I will tell you something, ask your grandmother, she was amongst the few who witnessed everything. My grandmother only heard hers from rumor, so if you want to know more about the demon King ask your grandmother, she is in the best position in telling you." Sarah added and they continue their journey back to the school.

"So where does this priestess of ours lives?"

"At the top of that mountain." Sarah answered and pointed at the highest mountain surrounding them.

Rae followed Sarah's finger and saw nothing at the top of the mountain she voice out her thoughts. "But I see no house or tent on it."

"Yeah, the priestess comes and goes like she wants. No one had actually know where she lived, we only know that she appeared from that mountain and disappeared at that same mountain." Sarah replied. By this time they were about to enter the school compound when Rae stops.

"I don't feel like going back in there today, I want to go home. Everything I saw today seem to overwhelmed me and going back to school would make me took for trouble, which I have been avoiding." Rae told her.

"Okay," Sarah said.

"Oh and you must not tell anyone what you saw, you know placing my hand on that frozen lady."

"I won't, I promise." Sarah promised and smiled. "So since I have memorized your rules about fighting when you beat up those Amazon's, when are you going to teach your new student how to fight?" She added.

"If you're ready I will know, but for now, I know you're not ready to learn." Rae said with a smile as she remembered how she had kicked their ass. "I better start going home and not delay you for your next class." She added as she touched her bracelet and a portal opened right in front of them.

"Take care Rae, see you tomorrow."



Rae waved and entered the portal, once it closes, Sarah quickly entered the school compound and made her way to her next class.

\*\*\*\*

Tamara who was sitting inside her cave, felt the presence of the water man heading towards her.

"I haven't figured out where the last mermaid might be yet my Lord." Tamara said with her back facing the water man. She stood up and knelt before him. The water raised up his hand which signified Tamara to stand up.

"I know that Tamara, but that is not the reason why I am here, you see, a thought just crossed my mind and I came here to share it with you." The water said.

"My Lord, what then do you want to share with me?" Tamara asked with her head bowed.

"I think a witch is hiding the last mermaid."

"A witch? Why do say so my Lord?"

"My instinct told me so, if not, where can she be hiding. I told you I once felt that she had been conceived and suddenly, I couldn't feel her aura again, it was as if she was killed, but today, I thought differently. What if a witch is the one hiding the last mermaid away from us. Avonmora soul moved aggressively today and stopped, her soul hasn't done that for the past 1,000 years ago." The water man said. "And you know my instincts never lie."

"Then I will check in the witches school and the supernaturals, and will have to come up with an excuse from the gods, telling all the witches and Jack that they were the ones who had sent me to check on them." Tamara suggested.

"Perfect plan Tamara, no one hasn't suspected a thing for so long. Tharollin is closer and will soon collect my bones, we don't have much time." The water man said.

"Of course my Lord."

"What about your sister's son, ask Rosa to get ready."

"Yes my Lord."

The water man disappeared leaving Tamara to her own thoughts.

\*\*\*

Rae stepped out of the portal and wasn't surprised when she saw her grandmother standing right next to her.

"What happened, why are you back so early?" Lillian demanded.

"I was down and became homesick, so I decided to come home straight." Rae answered.

"Okay, why don't you go to your room and change then come back to eat." Lillian said as she entered the kitchen.

Rae didn't reply back, she quickly walked up the stairs and entered her room, showered and change her clothes to the ones she normally wear at home.

Coming down the stairs, she sat on her chair awaiting her food.

Lillian came out of the kitchen and gave Rae her food.

"I called Jack and told him that you are home sick, so he said you should take the whole week off and resume school next week." Lillian said expecting Rae to start eating which she didn't.

"What is it Rae? Did something happen in your school that you are not telling me?"

"No grandma, nothing happened in school. I came across a lady today when I was taking a stroll." Rae said cutting off Sarah.

"What lady, was she the one who had offended you?" Lillian asked worriedly.

"No, I saw a gate behind the school compound and climbed inside it. Then I saw the lady, she was frozen and was standing right in front of a gate called the Gate of Darkness."

Lillian eyes were filled in shocked.

"You saw Avonmora?" Lillian whispered asked.

"Yes, and I touched it, grandma you won't believe that where I touched shone brightly. And I felt within me that Avonmora is still alive. Why was she frozen?"

"She was betrayed by her lover and has to pay the consequences of her actions. She was warned but she was blinded by love. I wouldn't blame her, who wouldn't do anything for your soulmate. She paid with her life." Lillian said sadly.

"So tell me more about Tharollin, the demon King."

"He was Lucifer son, the Prince of Hades. Back then, Lucifer was the ruler over us before it was taken forcefully away from him. Tharollin helped the gods by defeating his father, he gave his

father's bones to the gods who then throw it at the bottomless pit behind that evil gate. Tharollin was then given the King of Demons, he was a very good person, but all that changed one day, the Tharollin we know, changed into a cold hearted person. He kills and doesn't feel remorseful. He became greedy for powers and started a war with us, just like his father, he wants to rule over us again. He was defeated, later on, I realized that was his plans to fake his defeat and meet the healers, and when he met Avonmora, the gods made them mates. And he betrayed her and opened the Gate of Darkness, and entered it, he wants to bring out his father's bones." Lillian explained.

"Why then Avonmora didn't try to persuade him to stay back?"

"Avonmora tried and even told him about his child she was carrying, Tharollin still left."

"That's so selfish of him."

"Yes, you wouldn't blame him, Demons hardly bear children."

"So what happened to Avonmora child, did they killed the child?"

"The child is saved, but you must not tell anyone that I told you Avonmora has a child. One day, she will be revealed." Lillian said with hope in her voice.

\*\*\*

He was so close to where the bones were. Tharollin landed at last on the bare floor of the bottomless pit he had entered many years ago, coming out of the pit was simple. His feet the matching bones that lay on the floor as started going further.

His had father came to meet him and asked Tharollin to forgive him if he had wronged him. Tharollin had forgiven him.

"I will make you the king of all Supernaturals if you will do as I say." Lucifer had told him in the new form he took.

"King of all the supernatural." Tharollin had mused. He was suddenly interested.

"Yes, you shall be great and powerful and have all the powers of the supernatural, think about this my son."

"Even if I want to agree, I don't want to kill.

"You will not kill but killing is necessary, just bring back my bones that was thrown in the Gate of Darkness, and I shall help you be the King." Lucifer lied.

Tharollin had agreed to do it not knowing his father had a plan. When he fakes his own defeat, he ran knowing fully well he was going to run into one of the Mermaids, his plan was to kidnap one of the healers, their queen, and take her with him, and forcefully rape her and use her blood. But he met Avonmora and found out she was his soulmate.

"I can't continue anymore father, Avonmora is my mate and that changes everything, if I do as planned, she and her people might get killed, which I don't want."

"Don't worry Tharollin, none of them shall be harmed, I assure you, no harm shall come to them, I will make the priestess cover them up so that they will live." Lucifer lied.

And Tharollin went along with the plan.

He walked on, and saw the bones of his father in midair and walk towards it. When he was within arm reach, he heard the snapping of bones and turned to see all the bones scattered around had begun to form as a complete skeleton.

"You can not take the bones of Lucifer away from here." They said together and attacked.

Tharollin roared as black wings stretch wide behind him, two black horns coming out of his forehead, his hand began to form a sword. He charged at them.

His mind was on Avonmora, he hopes his father had kept to his words.

## Chapter 10

'The most beautiful people we have known are those who have known defeat, known suffering, known struggle, known loss, and have found their way out of the depths. These persons have an appreciation, a sensitivity and an understanding of life that fills them with compassions, gentleness, and a deep loving concern. Beautiful people do not just happen. The greatest healing therapy is friendship and love.'

### ♥♥♥♥ A SURPRISE VISIT ♥♥♥♥

Continuation from Rae and Lillian:

"By the way granny, how come you know Avonmora gave birth to a daughter?" Rae asked.  
"Because you just told me not to tell anyone, which means you're the only one who know."

"That's because I don't want anyone to know about her existence therefore putting her in grave danger." Lillian responded. "Start eating your food before it gets cold." She added.

"You speak of Avonmora daughter as if you knew her whereabouts grandma." Rae said going back to her food and started eating.

"I don't know her whereabouts and even if I do, I won't revealed that to anyone."

"And why is that? If I were to be Avonmora's daughter, I will reveal myself to everyone. By my calculations, she is the last mermaid and a half demon, it's not everyday you see such species." Rae said

"What if she had found out her life would be in danger if she revealed herself, and decided to keep herself hidden." Lillian said. "If you are in her shoes won't you do the same Rae?"

"Well that depends on the kind of danger I find myself in which I am not at the moment, but if the danger is bigger than me, then I will hide ." Rae answered. "So what of danger can Avonmora daughter be hiding from, that would prevent her from showing herself?"

Lillian took a deep breath as she tried to come up with something intelligent, knowing Rae, she won't let the matter rest until she had gotten her answer. Rae was as stubborn as her father.

"You know that gate you saw, the Gate of Darkness." Lillian said to which Rae nodded her head.  
"Well, if Avonmora daughter is found, she shall be sacrificed and her blood used in closing the Gate Of Darkness forever. Tamara the priestess told the council of elders and everyone has been on the lookout to find the last mermaid. Though no one knows she is Avonmora daughter, they all assumed that they're looking for an ordinary mermaid."

"If that's the danger Avonmora daughter is, surely I will hide. But why would she revealed herself to you, I mean there are others out there she can choose to reveal herself to, why you?"

Another intelligent question.

"Well that's because her mother and I were good friends, that was why Avonmora confided in me when she was pregnant and perhaps, her daughter felt that same connection with me."

"Oh, so when I can see her?" Rae asked with hopes high, she would like to make friends with the last mermaid.

"Soon I guess, it's been long she revealed herself to me." Lillian lied quickly.

Rae didn't say anything afterwards, she continued her food and finished it at last.

"Don't worry about the plate my child, I will wash it, go and rest, you need." Lillian said as soon as Rae reaches for her empty plate.

"Thank you granny." Rae said, stood up from her seat and started going towards the staircase but stopped, turning to face her grandmother. "What happened to the mermaid kingdom?"

"It's still there but isolated. By now it must have grown into a forest since we were banned from going nearer to it."

"I guess it's the Priestess who also said that."

"Yes, it was a message from the gods."

"So how can one find their way to the mermaid kingdom?"

"It isn't far from here, just follow the part that leads to that forest behind the witches kingdom, and follow the right road, you will see the caves where all the Mermaids once lived but...." Lillian started to describe the place and stopped. "Why are you asking about the road to the Mermaids kingdom? Don't tell me you plan on going there?"

Rae laughed out loud as if what she heard was hilarious.

"Who wants to go there before, I wouldn't even dream of going there if I was paid." Rae said with a disgusted look on her face and then pretended to yawn.

"Okay, go and rest, you won't be attending any school till next week." Lillian said.

Rae nodded her head and quickly climbed the stairs and entered her room, collapsing on her bed she started setting her plans.

She only said that so that her grandmother won't suspect a thing. She planned on going to the mermaid Kingdom later on, and since she won't attend school for now, she will use one of the days to go to the mermaid Kingdom.

Rae closed her eyes to sleep, for now, she needed her beauty sleep.

\*\*\*\*

Lolly snarled at whoever that stood in her way as she match to Jason class. When she got there, the door was closed and she entered it without even knocking.

Jason was at the center of the class, reading a book. He was the only one in that class.

"Yes, what can I do for you Lolly?" Jason asked without lifting up his face from the book.

"You didn't punish that stupid girl for what she did to me." Lolly said in anger.

"And why should I punish her?" Jason asked absentminded.

"Because she disgraced me in front of the whole school Jason, and I am your bride. Whoever offends me should be punished!" Lolly yelled.

"Well said Lolly, what's stopping you from punishing her then?" Jason asked and this time, he stares at her with his coldest look that makes people tremble in fear whenever they stare at him.

Lolly quickly removed her eyes from him and faces another direction. She was terrified whenever she saw that look.

"Because you are my husband to be and since everyone feared you except Jorkallun, you could have at least shaken her a little bit."

"I see, it's all about your reputation. If you had really cared about your reputation, you wouldn't have engage her in a fight with your three best warriors. You should be ashamed that as my bride to be that she beat the four of you together." Jason said calmly and return back to his book.

His mother that has been bedridden and couldn't speak for years was the actual reason he accepted to be engaged to Lolly. It was her wish, she wrote it out for him and his father to see, when Tamara had gone inside her chamber to speak with her.

He doesn't love her, but he would do anything for his mother. Tamara had told him once that Tribid species doesn't have a mate. He doesn't believe in the gods and cared less about what they say, but this was his mother.

And his decision has cost him his friendship with Jorkallun.

"So are you trying to say you won't do anything to that stupid girl?" Lolly asked, she was not that surprised.

"Fight your fight yourself Lolly, now get out of here, don't make me repeat myself." Jason said quietly.

Lolly left the classroom faster than her shadows.

She will have to deal with the new girl herself.

A plan began to form in her head.

\*\*\*

Two Days Later:

It was evening.

It has been two days since she had left the house. Rae had tried all her technique on Lillian to allow her to go outside but to no avail.

"I don't want you to go outside Rae, don't ask me why, if you love your grandmother like you claimed, you will do as I have instructed." Lillian had told Rae.

She doesn't want her to meet with the priestess. Tamara had made the announcement that she would be visiting all the witches school and the supernaturals to check their gifts, every single one of them as long as you're a witch.

Allowing Rae to go out there is a possibility that she may meet Tamara and that is what she is avoiding.

Rae was still in her room- sulking and disappointed that her grandma won't allow her to go outside- when she heard someone knocking at the front door, she didn't move an inch since she knows Lillian will answer the door.

She soon heard voices and she was curious to know who was that.

Her curiosity won, she left her bed and tip toe out of her room and down the stairs, she followed the voices to their living room. She was surprised when she recognized a voice speaking with her grandmother, she hid herself and then started eavesdropping on their conversation.



---

Opening the door, Lillian was very surprised when she saw her visitor. She had to clear her throat a multiple times before she could say anything. Opening the door wider for her visitor to enter.

"Jorkallun, what a very surprised visit." Lillian said with a smile as she usher the dragon boy in. "Please sit down."

Jorkallun had sat down on one of the chairs he saw, making himself at home before Lillian had even say 'Please sit down'.

"What can I offer you Jorkallun?"

"I am okay, thank you."

"So why are you here?" Lillian said going straight to the point.

"I came to check on Rae, she hasn't been to school for the past two days now." Jorkallun said and made some notes appeared and floating in front of him. "These are what she missed in school for the two days she stayed at home."

Surprised but collected the books. "Thank you. She was sick that is why she couldn't make it, but I can assure you that she will resume fully next week." Lillian said with a smile.

"Okay, I also came here to discuss something important with you." Jorkallun said.

"And what can that be?" Lillian demanded.

"I don't know if you're aware of this, but there is a hidden spell in Rae. My dragon sense the magic the first day he saw her. The spell makes someone appear what they are not, and hide their real identity."

Lillian was very shocked, as much as she tried to keep the shock away from her face, she couldn't.

"By your look, I am now certain you know about the hidden spell. If you are trying to hide something away from her, then you better double up the spell. If I can be able to sense it, whosoever that you're hiding it from can also sense it." Jorkallun said.

"Thank you Jorkallun, I really appreciate. I will double the spell on her. I hope you won't tell anyone." Lillian said in fear.

"It's not my secret to tell, so I won't." Jorkallun gave out his word.

What secret and why would her grandmother place a hidden spell on her. She decided to make her presence known without pretending.

"What secret?" Rae asked as she came out of her hiding place. "Hello Jorkallun." She added as she went to sit right next to him.

Lillian was surprised when she saw Rae. "No secret dear, I thought you were sleeping?"

"Yeah I was but I decided to come down for a drink, and I overheard you talking."

"Why didn't you use your magic to teleport water to your room."

"Stop changing the topic granny, I heard everything." Facing Jorkallun she asked. "What hidden spell are you talking about?"

"It's not my place to tell." Jorkallun said, he also wanted to know why Rae had that spell in her.

Rae faced her grandmother. "I am now old enough to keep secrets too granny, so what spell did you place on me and why would you do that?"

"Like I said, there is no secret Rae, get it out of your mind."

Standing up angrily. "Grandmother, I am not a little kid anymore. Why would you put a hidden spell on me? What are your reason exactly?" Lillian couldn't answer. "WHY IS IT SO HARD FOR YOU TO SAY IT!" Rae yelled.

Lillian stood up and slap Rae hard on her face. "You do not speak to me in such manner young lady, I am saving your neck and that is it. You can't force me to say what I don't want to say in my own home. THERE IS NO SECRET."

Without saying a word back, Rae ran out of the house that night, ignoring the calling of her name from Lillian.

Lillian started crying.

"Crying won't solve it. I will bring her back, but you have to tell her your reason, letting her know will remove a lot of burden from your shoulder." Jorkallun said and went after Rae.

---

Rae didn't know where she was going, she needed to find a place and clear her mind, she didn't mean to shout at her grandmother. The moon helped her in seeing her way.

She was running when suddenly a very huge red dragon blocked her path. She wanted to scream but stopped when she saw the dragon transformed back to the pretty boy she knew from school.

Rae hasn't seen that she was heading straight to the Mountain where the Crocottas lives, if Jorkallun hadn't blocked her, she would have fallen over the mountain and get eaten together with her soul.

"Come with me." Jorkallun said and started leading the way, turning briefly to see if Rae was following, which she was.

Higher they went until they reached the top of the mountain.

Jorkallun sat down over the edge of the mountain and didn't say a word. Rae sat down beside him. They sat side by side, looking over the mountain below, blanketed by the night as they faced the horizon.

"So, is this your super secret thinking spot?" Rae asked with a side-long glimpse at Jorkallun, her anger forgotten.

"Yes, I stumbled on it by accident one day when I was alone and upset, and looking to escape."

Rae looked out into the distance, but it just looked black to Rae. Bleak. She could barely make out the Crocottas she knew lay below.

"Escape from what?"

"From everyone and everything. That night, I left and ended up here. I sat right where we are. I looked out on the horizon, and tried to figure out the best time..."

Jorkallun's words drifted.

"Best time to what?" Rae ventured.

Jorkallun looked at Rae who was staring at him, then he looked away and swallowed.

"To jump."

## Chapter 11

'Love yourself first and everything else falls into line. You really have to love yourself to get anything done in this world. Loving yourself starts with liking yourself, which starts with respecting yourself, which starts with thinking of yourself in positive ways. The more you love yourself, the less nonsense you'll tolerate.'

♥♥♥♥ VISITING THE MERMAID KINGDOM ♥♥♥♥

Rae gasped. She almost sat up, but Jorkallun hands prevented her from doing so.

"I figured I would wait to see one last sunrise, and then I could do it. But when I sat and saw the sun begin to light the sky, I began to realize that I was about to throw everything away - my future, my life, and if nothing else, the chance to see one more sunrise. For what? For people who weren't going to matter in a few years anyhow. Even my problems."

"So, what did you do?" Rae find herself asking.

"I took control. From that moment when I decided not to jump, I took control. You know what Rae, I learnt something that very day, when you decide that you wanted things to change, then you would have to make them change yourself." Jorkallun said.

"You are right." Rae said after a while. "So, do you want to talk about it, why you tried to end your own life?"

The silence seemed to stretch out the more when she asked that question, she thought that maybe Jorkallun did not hear or he doesn't want to talk about it.

She was starting to say something when Jorkallun beat her to it.

"Jason and I were best friends, everyone thought that we were brothers separated from birth. I introduced Lolly to him as the girl I intended to get married too. He went behind my back and got engaged to her. That night I wanted to jump was their engagement party." Jorkallun finally said.

Rae widened in shock.

"He didn't tell you why he did that?" She asked gently.

"No, Jason didn't. He was cool with it, and I hate him for that." Jorkallun voice was filled with hate.

"Sorry to ask but I thought Dragons has mates, I mean the gods gave each and everyone of us mates who will complete us, wasn't Lolly your mate?" Rae asked curiously.

"No, we Dragons choose our mates ourselves. Once we fall in love with someone and we see that person as your better half, during the mating ceremony, we mark them and they become ours forever." Jorkallun explained.

"Oh, so you get to choose who you want to spend the rest of your life with?" Rae asked surprised, she didn't know of this, she needs to start reading more about Dragons history.

"Yes." Jorkallun briefly answered.

"Was Lolly Jason's mate?" Rae wanted to find out.

"No, I don't think so, we do hang out with Lolly and her friends before I officially introduced her as my mate to be. Jason would have told me if she was his mate the first day he met her, he knows it will hurt me but he will tell me. But he rather went behind my back to engage Lolly." Jorkallun said.

"What about Lolly, do you still love her?" Rae asked and prayed to the gods his answer should be No.

"No, after what she did, I don't love Lolly anymore.

Rae found herself smiling at his answer.

"So since dragons can choose who they wish to be with, what do you think of me?" Rae decided to ask that question.

Jorkallun laughed out which surprises the hell out of Rae.

The bright moon seem to make Jorkallun red hair glitter as he threw his head back to laugh, his long hair flying in the wind. His laughter sounded like music to Rae's ear. She couldn't help herself but fall in love with the pretty boy, she wished at that moment that Jorkallun should tell her he loves her.

"What's so funny about what I said?" Rae asked pretending to be angry at him.

The laughter quickly died as it was replaced with his favorite frown.

"Rae, the flower that blooms in adversity is the most rare and beautiful of all." Jorkallun said looking up at the stars.

"Meaning?"

Turning his head to face her, he lifted up his hand and caress her cheek, he smiled. "Meaning you are like a flower waiting to bloom, but I can't be the one to make that happen. Everyone has

his or her soulmates, in their lifetime, you just have to be patient, because when it comes, it will bloom, and when it blooms, it will be the most rare and beautiful amongst all." Jorkallun said then withdraw his hand and the smile was gone. Rae wanted to grab his hand and put it on her cheek, but she couldn't as Jorkallun continue. "The first day I saw you in school, I was drawn to you, because you weren't scared of me and even spoke back at me. I was happy you did so and that was why I had allowed you to sit with me, not because of you beating the vice principal but because you reminded me of myself. I then realized why I was drawn to you was because you reminded me a lot of my late younger sister. I see you as my younger sister Rae." Jorkallun said.

Rae felt her heart breaking into tiny pieces as she heard Jorkallun, covering up her crestfallen face with a bright smile.

"So what happened to your sister?" Rae asked.

"She died years back, she killed herself." Jorkallun replied.

"Why would she kill herself?"

"She caught her soulmate with someone and that left her devastated, he ran away with the other girl and my sister couldn't bear the pain it caused her, by her mate rejecting her, she killed herself. I traced that idiot and kill him together with the fool." Jorkallun said.

"I am so sorry about that."

"That's okay, it's all in the past now." Jorkallun said.

"I don't know if my grandma will forgive me for raising my voice on her." Rae said.

"Don't worry Rae, she will. All I want to say is that you should listen to your grandmother, maybe what she is hiding from you might be dangerous or might put her to death." Jorkallun said. "She may tell you now, but are you ready to know the secret?"

"I am afraid of hearing out the secret she hides, what if it will endanger me."

"You don't have to be afraid Rae, you have an elder brother now, I won't allow any harm to come to you."

"I will bear that in mind Jorkallun, I am glad I have a dragon as my brother...." It hurt her when she uttered the word 'brother'. "...who will always protect me from danger."

"Yes, and not only me, you have the backing of the whole Dragon kingdom, one of these days, I will take you to my kingdom." Jorkallun said, getting up to his feet, he held out his hand to Rae who grab it and get up. Walking a few feet away from the edge of the mountain, they stopped.

"I should take you home, your grandmother will be worried sick by now."

Rae nodded her head.

"I am so glad you came looking for me." Rae said with a smile. "You should smile more, it makes you more handsome."

"I will carry that in mind Rae." Jorkallun reply with a brief smile which melted Rae's heart, without wasting much time he transformed into his red dragon.

The dragon opened his claws and waited until Rae had entered it, he lifted his claws, hovering it over his huge head and gently placed her there. He roared into the night and flew.

Rae held onto the dragon's neck she was sitting tightly as it flew towards her house, she realized she was really far from home.

Sighing in bliss she hugged the dragon tighter.

Maybe one day Jorkallun wouldn't look at her as his younger sister but rather as his lover.

She hopes.

---

Lillian was more than happy when she saw Rae.

She thanked Jorkallun profusely for bringing back Rae and he later took his leave, bidding Rae and her grandmother good night, he changed into his dragon and disappeared into the night.

They entered inside the house.

"I am so sorry I yelled at you grandma." Rae apologize to Lillian.

"Don't say that, you have every right to get angry, I shouldn't have slapped you, I am sorry Rae." Lillian said as he pulled Rae to herself for a hug. "Don't ever run off like that my child, I was very worried." Lillian said as she kissed Rae forehead.

"I won't again."

Lillian smiled.

"About the secret I am keeping, I will tell you that now."

"No granny, I am not yet ready to hear any secret for now. I will ask for it one day, but not today."

"Are you sure?"

"Yes, very sure granny."

"Okay, if you say so. Go to your room and rest."

"Good night granny."

"Good night Rae."

---

The next morning met Lillian cooking and Rae walking down the stairs to the kitchen, she has taken her bath and changed into one of her tomboy clothes before making her way downstairs.

"Rae you're awake, hope your night wasn't stressful?"

"No, I slept like a baby." Rae answered with a smile. How can she tell her grandmother that she dreamt of Jorkallun all through the night.

"I can see that in your face." Lillian said as she returned the smile. "Breakfast is almost ready."

"Okay. Grandma, I really want to go outside today, please don't say no."

After thinking about it, Lillian shrugged her shoulders and turned back to her cooking. "You can go outside Rae."

"Yes!" Rae screamed and hug her granny once again. "Thank you Grandma, I love you."

"Yeah love you too, but that is after you have finished your food."

"Okay, that's no problem, I have been inside this house far too long that I now know where the rats family lives." Rae said as Lillian began dishing out their food. "Now I will have to hunt them down."

Setting their food on the table, she gestures to Rae. "Come and eat Rae and leave those poor rats alone."

"Whatever granny." Rae reply and sat down and begin to eat.

Lillian sat down and ate her food in silence.



"You sure you don't want to hear the secret?" Lillian asked one more time.

"Nope." Rae answered without hesitation. "I don't want to hear it now, probably when next I asked, you can tell me."

They ate their food in silence, soon Rae was through with her food and quickly packed their plates to wash, today she felt like not using her magic.

She was set to go.

"Grandma, I am off."

"Okay, be careful Rae, and when you're in trouble that is bigger than you, don't forget to....."

Interrupting her.

"Hit my bracelet, I know that grandma." Rae said.

"Be back before lunch time."

"I will."

With that Rae left the house, finally she was free.

With Lillian's direction to the Mermaids kingdom still fresh in her mind, she set out towards there.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jason sat down beside her mother as he held her hand. Seeing his mother in this way had hurt him. His mother was bedridden and couldn't speak neither could she move any part of her body except her hands, which she moved once in a while. The only part of her body that move where her eyes.

Whenever Jason looked at them, he felt as if she was trying to send him a message, he had tried to read what she was trying to speak to him through her eyes but couldn't.

Her strange sickness had been a secret that the whole kingdom wasn't even aware of, Tamara had told them not to reveal it to anyone until she's cured.

"Jason." Tamara voice said behind him. "Your father needs your presence immediately."

"Can't he come here himself and discuss with me whatever thing he wants to discuss?" Jason growls as he noticed his mother's hand stiff hearing that voice.

"Don't you dare growl at me child, I was with your mother the day she gave birth to you. You should be scared of me and not the other way round." Tamara answered.

"I am not scared of you Tamara." Jason said coolly as he turned to her. "The others may be scared, but not me."

"You should call my name with respect boy." Tamara said in anger, no one had ever called her by her name except her master, Jason should count himself lucky. In truth, she couldn't harm Jason, not because of her master but because her powers couldn't penetrate the Tribid wolf.

Both of them were staring hatedly at each other, waiting for who to give up.

"Your father wants to see you quickly and I am here to give your mother her herbs, I want to be left alone with her." Tamara said finally diverting her eyes away from Jason.

"Giving her the drugs while I am here shouldn't worry you, I am her son after all and I am not moving an inch."

"Don't make me force you out of this chamber Jason."

"I would love to see you do that Tamara.\* Jason replied with a smirk.

\*\*\*\*\*

Rae was breathing fast but smiled nevertheless when she saw the huge daek Cave staring back at her. She ran all the way here. She entered the dark cave and said out some magic words. A magic light appeared before her which brighten up the cave.

Going further and further, she came out in an open place where the early sun rays was seen with different size of caves.

Putting off her magic light out, she walked further. Everywhere looked so old, dirty and bushy.

She heard a splash of water and followed the sound. Getting to where she heard the sound from, she stopped as if she was in a trance.

Right in front of her was a mermaid, who was splashing the water with her white tale and was smiling. She was sitting at one of the biggest open caves around Rae, the cave was filled with the water she was splashing herself.

Didn't her grandmother told her all the Mermaids were killed, who then is this mermaid she was staring at.

She was really confused.

"What trouble you my child?" The mermaid asked without turning.

Rae eyes widened. Did the mermaid sense her, but how come?

"W-who are you?"

The mermaid lady finally turned to look at her. She was very very beautiful.

"My name is Selena and I am your Ancestors."

## Chapter 12

'We're all ghosts. We all carry inside us, people who came before us. When we illuminate the road back to our ancestors, they have a way of reaching out, of manifesting themselves...sometimes even physically, We are bound to our ancestors and to those who made us, whether we want to be or not. What matters is what we make of what we are.'

♥♥♥♥ SELENA (THE GODDESS OF MERMAIDS) ♥♥♥♥

"What!?" Rae shouted on what she heard the strange beautiful mermaid utter. "Whose ancestors are you talking about?"

"Yours of course." The beautiful mermaid answered.

"You're mistaking me for someone else, I am from the witch Kingdom, not a mermaid Kingdom, in fact my grandmother is the queen of witches. I was told your kind were wiped out to close down the Gate of Darkness years ago." Rae said and then remembered her conversation she had with her grandmother about the last mermaid. "Oh, I see that you are the last mermaid my granny had told me about, right?"

The beautiful mermaid shook her head. "No, I have already told you who I am." Selena said.

Rae was surprised, she thought the mermaid was the mermaid queen daughter. If she isn't, then this mermaid she is seeing here is a different one and her life might be in danger.

"Then if you are not Avonmora's daughter, do you know if any other creatures apart from me sees you, you are a goner." Rae said.

"Why would you say that?" Selena asked.

"Because they are looking for the last mermaid to sacrifice, so that the Gate of Darkness will close forever." Rae explained. "That was what they did to the rest of you."

"Well like I said before, I am your ancestors Rae, and no one can hurt me." Selena said smiling.

"And I have told you that you are not my ances-" Rae began to say but stopped as she looked at the mermaid in pure shock. "How did you know my name is Rae?" She demanded.

"Well, how I came to know about your name, is a secret. I am your friend Rae, I will not hurt you." Selena said with a smile as she went on splashing her tail into the water.

"But why would you say you're my ancestors when I am a witch." Rae asked confusedly.

"The secret you asked Lillian not to reveal to you yet is part of it." Selena said.

Rae was shocked to her bones when she heard that. "How come you get to know everything? Are you a witch mermaid or something related to that?" Rae asked now suspicious of the beautiful mermaid splashing the water inside the cave.

Selena laughed out loud. "No, we are healers. Come and sit down with me." Selena added tapping at a dry up space beside her.

"In that dark water cave?" Rae ask staring at the dark water. What if something was hidden beneath the dark water, and the creature will grab hold of her legs and eat them. She will be legless forever.

"Yes, nothing will eat your feet Rae, like I said before, I will not hurt you, I need you to sit with me to discuss." Selena said and went back to what she was doing.

Rae contemplate on it before making up her mind, after all, she was wearing her bracelet and one bad move from the mermaid, her grandmother will appear.

Removing her boots and rolling up her trouser higher to her knees, she walked the little distance between them and step one of her feet into dark water and waited for a minute, when nothing happened, she smiled and put the other leg inside, and sat down on the dry space.

"So Rae, tell me about yourself." Selena asked.

"I thought you know all things and my name too, so you should know everything about me since you said my name correctly." Rae said facing the lady, up this close, words couldn't describe the mermaid beauty.

Selena turned to regard her slowly.

"You're very intelligent and outspoken, just like her." Selena said sadly.

"Just like who?" Rae asked.

"My daughter, she is just like you." Selena answered with a smile.

"You have a daughter?" Rae asked surprised, which means there are two mermaids and not one.

"Yes, she looks just like your inner soul." Selena answered with a smile.

"What's her name, can I know her?" Rae asked.

"Her name is Avonmora." Selena replied.

"What!? Don't tell me the Avonmora you just mentioned, is the one who was once the queen of the Mermaids?" Rae asked with a raise eyebrows.

"She is the one, but I am afraid I couldn't save her." Selena said with a sad tone.

"Wow, you look younger but seriously speaking, you're old." Rae said and out of curiosity, she wants to know more about Selena.

"Why would you say I am old?" Selena asked smiling.

Leaning closer to Selena's ears, "I will tell you why I said that, if you will in return, tell me about yourself."

"Oh I see, no problem. You have my word." Selena promised.

"Good. The reason why I had called you old is that you are a grandmother. I promised not to tell anyone, but I was told Avonmora has a daughter who is out there somewhere, hiding." Rae whispered.

Selena smile, she knew but decided to play along. "Really?"

"Yeah, but do not tell anyone about what I just told you." Rae said with a serious face.

"Rae, I won't tell anyone what you told me, I give you my word." Selena promised.

"Good, so since I have told you that you have a granddaughter, go and look for her and hid her with you, because you both are the last mermaids."

"I will do that Rae." Selena said with a smile.

"Now, fulfil your own bargain." Rae said with her arms crossed. "It's your turn."

"Sure. My name is Selena, one of the seven goddesses of the Sea Nile. That's all you need to know about m-." Selena said and suddenly look up at the sky.

Rae also followed but saw nothing. "What is it?"

"There is not much time Rae, mermaids are known as healers, we cure and save lives no matter how tough the wounds and illness are, we don't use our gifted powers for evil. You will have to do something for me before I leave." Selena said when she stared back at Rae.

"What do you want me to do for you granny?" Rae felt glad calling her 'granny', she wants to remind the beautiful mermaid that she was a grandmother.

"I can't leave here, I am far away from this world." Selena said. "Someone need our help urgently, she is very sick Rae. You have to find out who the sick lady is and heal her from your touch." Selena added.

"Heal her with my touch, how? I am not a mermaid, even we witches aren't as strong as you guys when it comes to healing, I read that in history books." Rae said with disbelief eyes.

"Well, if she dies, the evil doer will gloat in happiness which I don't want. She did try to open up, but was prevented. if you believe in your powers and yourself, you can heal the lady." Selena said.

"Okay, I will try to find out if there is a lady sick in the kingdom."

"Good." Selena said as she removed herself from where she had sat and started swimming, going further inside the cave filled with dark water. "Get up from there Rae and leave this place at once right now."

Rae quickly left where she was sitting and put on her boots, once done, she faces Selena who was quietly observing her. "Will I see you again?" Rae asked hopefully.

"Yes, only when you have healed the lady can you see me again." Selena answered with a smile. "Now, off you go quickly and do not stop until you get home."

"I will try my best and I hope to see you soon, take care of yourself old woman." Rae said as she started running.

"Take care too..... my grandchild." Selena whispered lowly to herself before disappearing into the dark water.

Rae happened to glance back, the place she had sat with the mermaid a few seconds ago, was now filled with grass, not wanting to stop as something in her urge her to run. She left the same way she had came in and ran straight home.

Few minutes later, the water man appeared right in the middle of the caves as he stared around him.

He had felt the presence of the last mermaid when he was meditating. He had cast a magic spell around here to alert him when the last mermaid step her foot inside the Mermaid Kingdom.

"She was here, I can still feel it." The water man said as he began to look round the caves for her. He realized she wasn't there anymore. "I came late, she escaped me today but next time, she won't be that lucky." The water man said and vanished.

\*\*\*\*

Tamara nose flare up with anger as she stared down on Jason with so much disdain. "If not for one thing, I would have deal with you slowly." Tamara growl out in anger.

"And I have been telling you to tell me, what exactly is this one thing you keep on repeating." Jason said in the same tone as hers.

Tamara didn't say a word, she left the Chamber and soon came in with Roen.

"Son, didn't you heard that I was calling you, she told you, right, why then did you not come to me and choose to ignore me?" King Roen asked his son.

"I will answer you in my own convenient time father, for now I want to stay with my mum and even if Tamara wants to give my mother her herbs, I will still be here and there is nothing you can say about that father." Jason replied gently.

"I called you to come to me, but here I am now. I am not asking you to follow me back to my chamber or the throne room. Step aside with me, there is something I need to discuss with you privately, please son." Roen said.

"Okay." Jason said after a while. "We will discuss outside the chamber."

He let go of his mother hand and left with his father.

Tamara was left alone with Rosa. Clapping her hand a little bit, not too loud, she smiled sweetly at Rosa.

No one could hear their conversation now.

"Finally, I am alone with you." Tamara said with a cruel smile as she approached the bed.

Rosa eyes were screaming for help.

"I told you I have the final say in my plan, Rosa, but you wanted to spill every bean out to Roen. I was more faster and smarter than you." Tamara said with a smile, as she brought out a little knife she had hidden in her waist, with it she cut off a little bit of her arm and allow the blood to touch Rosa.

The wounds on her arm closed as the blood on Rosa turned into a white scorpion and entered inside her body, vanishing as the skin was made whole.

"I will be feeding my scorpions to you until you die, no one will come to rescue you Rosa, read my lips, No one." Tamara said and laughed, "Enjoy your last days on earth well slave."



Rosa wasn't really Tamara cousin, it was a planned work.

Tamara clapped her hands once more, at that moment, Jason opened the door and went back to his previous seat. As soon as he held his mother hand again, her hand felt colder than before, he shouldn't have left his mother alone.

"Why is my mother hand colder than before?" Jason asked

"How can I know when I have been standing right here." Tamara said. "I will have to give her the herbs so that she can heal."

"Give me the bowl of herbs and get the hell out of here." Jason said.

Tamara gave the herbs to Jason and walked out of the chamber with a hidden smile.

Jason gave his mother a little bit of the herbs. When he touched her forehead, it was as cold as her hand.

Closing his eyes, he concentrates on his inner fire and when he opened his eyes, he saw a little fire bird phoenix that was standing on Rosa forehead.

The fire from the Phoenix, gradually absorb the cold.

## Chapter 13

'Love is that condition in which the happiness of another person is essential to your own. Darkness cannot drive out darkness: only light can do that. Hate cannot drive out hate: only love can do that. And in the end, the love you take is equal to the love you make, one day you will kiss a man you can't breathe without and find that breath is of little consequence.'

♥♥♥♥ CROSSING JASON'S PATH ♥♥♥♥♥

When Rae got home, she didn't tell Lillian her encounter she had with the strange beautiful mermaid lady.

"How did it go, did you meet anyone when you were strolling?" Lillian asked, she was hoping Rae didn't come in contact with the priestess. She was in Rae's room.

"Nope, I met Mrs Ash daughter on my way home, she was going to the library." Rae answered. "I saw her with a guy, they were kissing."

Flashback:

Truly, on her way home she met Kate, Mrs Ash daughter with a boy older than her a little bit, hiding themselves at the back of the library, as they kissed passionately. With his pale look, Rae knows he was a vampire. She stopped her running and went to sneak on them.

Using Mrs Ash harsh voice, she shouted behind them scaring the hell out of them. "Young man what are you doing with my daughter!"

The young man nearly jumped out of his skin when he heard that voice, with his undead heart in his mouth, he fearfully turned to face Ash but was surprised when he saw someone else instead.

Rae laughed hard at his expression.

Kate who has been hiding her face for being caught by her mother, she lifted up her head when she heard the familiar laughter.

"Who is this?" The man with Kate demanded, his scared expression changed into anger.

"She is someone who isn't suppose to be here." Kate answered her boyfriend. "Rae don't you have something else to do in your house?"

"I have something I am doing now, that is seeing you kissing your boyfriend. Does your mother know you see a man behind the library?" Rae asked folding her arms under her breast.

"That's none of your business Rae, leave us alone." Kate answered her.

"Well too bad, you became my business when your mother gave a good recommendation to Principal Jack about me, so I am helping her." Rae said with a shrugged shoulders and faces the young man whose face clearly shows how angry he was.

"Young man, I believe you know who her mother is, right?" Rae asked the vampire.

"Yes I know who her mother is, how is that your fucking business?" The young man replied in a harsh tone.

"If you know her mother, why hiding and kissing her daughter here? This clearly shows that Ash doesn't know what is going on. Any way, I will make this very simple for the three of us, I will escort you both to Mrs Ash house now, so that you can officially introduced yourself as Kate's boyfriend." Rae told them with a sweet smile.

"You don't tell me what to do little girl, now get the hell out of here before I beat you to pup." The young man said. How dare this little stupid girl interrupt him and his girlfriend?

"You heard him Rae, get out of here, what I do or when I want him to be introduced to my mum is none of your business." Kate said supporting her boyfriend.

Shaking her head sadly. "I even volunteer myself to escort the both of you to Ash home and you are.....oh." Rae said not completing her words, she started folding her arm sleeves up, "Are we doing this the hard way or the soft way? Whichever you choose, I will accept."

"What are you going to do if we don't follow you?" The young asked as he began showing off his muscles. "Beat me?" He said in a mocking way.

"No, do this." Rae answered and punch his face hard on his nose.

A sound of cracking was heard which shows, his nose was broken.

The vampire was shocked at first as he touched his bleeding nose, he growls when he saw blood. His red eyes flashes in anger as he throws a punch to Rae with vampire speed.

Rae was expecting it and didn't dodge the blow, she stood her ground and caught the fist in time before it touches her face.

The man tried to remove his hand from the iron grip of Rae but couldn't.

His canines became visible and he tried biting Rae's hand which was holding his, but Rae who already knew what he was about to do, slapped him with full force and kicked him hard on the stomach.

5 Minutes Later.....

"Wait!" The vampire guy shouted which stopped Rae in her tracks, her left leg raised up to the sky to give him another kick. He was bleeding and the girl he was fighting wasn't bleeding at all, a witch beat him up and in front of his girlfriend? It was humiliating. Breathing hard, "What did you say I should do?" He said at last.

"I want you to officially introduce yourself to Mrs Ash right away." Rae answered.

"I will do it." The vampire finally agreed.

Bringing down her leg, "Good." Facing Kate. "Lead the way home, you have to introduce your mum to her son in law."

Fuming in rage, Kate lead the way to her house.

Rae and the vampire followed suit. The injuries on the vampire started healing. Once they got to the front door of Ash, his wounds were completely healed.

Rae knocked on the door and Ash opened the door. She was very surprised to see Rae, her daughter and a vampire.

"I didn't tell Jack anything Rae." Mrs Ash said to Rae. "Whatever he heard was probably from someone else and not me."

"I am not here for that, I came here for a total different thing. Your daughter here has something to say to you, right Kate?"

"Yes mum." Kate answered with her rolling her eyeballs, pointing at the vampire. "Mum, meet Kane, he is my.....boyfriend."

Shaking her head with satisfaction, she gave Kate a thumb up. "My mission has been accomplished, don't worry about the pay, I did a charity work free of charge for your family. Do remember that wherever my grandma wants your help."

With that, she left them, smiling at the vampire.

End Of Flashback:

"Oh, I hope you didn't do anything to them?" Lillian asked.

"Nope, I minded my business like you've always told me to me granny."

"Good, I want you to always stay out of trouble, okay?"

"Yes, I have promised you that granny, I won't go back on my promise."

"I hope you do Rae." Lillian said going out of the room.

\*\*\*

As soon as Tamara left the Wolf Kingdom, she appeared inside her cave and was surprised when she saw the water man already waiting for her.

"My Lord." Tamara said and bowed her head. "What brought this visit?"

"I went to the mermaid Kingdom, I was just coming out from there." The water man responded.

"Why would you visit the mermaid Kingdom after so many years?" Tamara asked.

"I sense the presence of the last mermaid there. I went there but I came too late, before I would come, she has gone." The water man answered.

"That means she is closer to us than we think." Tamara said.

"Yes, are you sure you checked all the witches?"

"Yes, I did my Lord."

"Then where could she be hiding?" The water man asked no one in question. "Where are you coming from?"

"From the palace, I went to visit Rosa." Tamara reply.

"How is she? Hope the illness is eating her deep?" The water man queried.

"Yes my Lord." Tamara answered.

"I love what I am hearing, she wanted to play smart with us and we put her where she belongs, after all she is a slave." The water man said.

Rosa was Tamara slave who was disguised as Tamara cousin to Roen and everyone. When she later got to find out their real motive, Rosa turned her back on them and decided to let Roen in of their plan. Tamara silence her with the sickness and made her not to talk. Tamara wrote that Jason should be engaged to Lolly on a piece of paper, she used magic in writing in Rosa handwriting.

That was what made them believe Rosa want her son to get engaged to Lolly.

"And what about her son?" The water man asked.

"He is getting stronger by the day my Lord." Tamara answered.

"Are you sure he will do as you said once it's time? I have this feeling that I will find the last mermaid sooner than later."

"He will dance to our tune my Lord, the same way I made him got engaged to my daughter Lolly, is the same way I will make him do as I say." Tamara revealed with an evil glint in her eyes.

"Good, I hope Lolly hasn't revealed her real identity yet to others?" The water man asked.

"No one knows who her mother is, her father can't speak about me." Tamara said.

"I trust you Tamara, you always make everything right on time, everything..... except for the last mermaid which is holding us back."

"Don't worry my Lord, she shall soon be fished out."

\*\*\*

Waking up and preparing herself for school made Rae excited.

One she was going to see Jorkallun and Sarah. She had missed her friends, especially Jorkallun. Ever since that night he had showed up, she hasn't heard from him.

Going down the stairs as she took the stairs two at a time.

Lillian had already set her food on the table, sitting down, she quickly ate her food, finishing up her food, she carried the empty plate back to the kitchen.

Greeting her grandmother who collected the plate.

A portal opened right there.

"Don't forget your promise."

"I won't." Rae responded as she entered the portal, it closes.

The portal opened at the front of the gate, she stepped out of it and it closes. The whispering started as soon as the students saw her.

Unlike her first day in school, she didn't want to create a scene so she ignored everyone and started going to her class, she still remembers it.

Sarah blocked her way as she throws herself on Rae in a bone hug.

"I have missed you friend, the school has not been the same without you, we need to see more action." Sarah said as both of them started heading to their class.

"Well, I am not causing any trouble as I had promised my grandma." Rae said. "But do not worry, I have a lot of gist for you."

She stopped as she sighted the handsome white haired boy making his way towards a classroom.

"Where is he going?" Rae asked pointing at Jason.

"To his class of course." Sarah answered.

"Why is he the only one heading that way?" Rae asked as she stared at Jason walking as if he owns the whole school. His shoulders high.

How can someone shoulders be that high because of pride? Rae thought.

"Haven't I told you before that this school built Jason and Jorkallun classes separately, Jorkallun just like coming to our class to intimidate us and Jason doesn't mingle with us." Sarah explained.

"I wasn't paying attention." Rae said and shouted so loud. "Hey Jason!"

Her shout attracted everyone's attention to her and Jason, the noisy school suddenly became quiet. Jason stopped and didn't turn, after a while he continued his walk.

"Hey Jason, I am talking to you!" Rae shouted louder this time and ran up to him since he was ignoring her. She blocked his path.

"Get out of my way now?" Jason spit out with venom.

"No, I want to know why you didn't answer me when I first called your name."

Everyone's eyes were on them now.

"I am losing my patient, haven't I warned you to stay off my path?"

"Yes you did, prove me if I am wrong, but every Kings and Queens both contributed in building this school, so I have every right to walk as I pleases in this school." Rae said.

Rae could see Jorkallun as he approaches them. "Hey Jorkallun." She smiled at the pretty red haired boy then back at Jason.

"Get out of my way, I won't say that again." Jason added with a warning.

"I have this problem that I can't stop doing. Whenever someone tells me not to do something, I find myself doing that. So handsome boy, I won't get out of your way until you have answered my question, why didn't you answer me when I called your name the first time?"

The promise she made to her grandmother was totally forgotten as she faces the handsome boy.



## Chapter 14

'There is never a time or place for true love. It happens accidentally, in a heartbeat, in a single flashing, throbbing moment. If I had a flower for every time I thought of you ... I could walk through my garden forever, I desire a love so loud that it shatters the darkness — its echoes reverberating through the rising and falling of the sun. I crossed a thousand leagues to come to you, and lost the best part of me along the way. Don't tell me to leave.'

♥♥♥ CONFUSED FEELINGS ♥♥♥

"What did you just say?" Jason asked as his white eyeballs turned red immediately. He started closing the tiny distance between them at a slower pace.

All the students held their breath as they await the outcome.

Like before, seeing his eyes made Rae suddenly afraid, but she was the kind of person who could never run away from a fight, no matter how tough it was.

"I said, you should tell me why you ignored me the first time I called your name, are you that daft or are your ears paining you?" Rae asked without a hint of fear.

It suddenly looks to Rae that Jason red eyes seem to glow.

Jason stopped right in front of Rae with the most angriest look ever, his right arm raised up in the air, his fingers turning into claws.

They stared at each other, their noses nearly touching.

Rae noticed some few things she hasn't noticed before. There was only one word to describe the sun-kissed Tribid standing before her, he was handsome. Rae gaped openly as she observed his sharp jaw, chin, and cheekbones.

Something in her wants to embrace the white haired boy into her arms. She was drawn to him like the way she was to Jorkallun.

His icy cold stare could melt any soul standing in his way, but not for Rae, she was far too gone admiring Jason looks.

Jason was wondering who gave the girl standing right in front of him, the guts not to back away from him when she should. No one has ever stared into his eyeball the way she was doing, no one, even Lolly wasn't brave enough to stare at him.

Jason admitted to himself that he admired the lady courage. She wasn't scared of him like the others, maybe that was what Jorkallun had seen in her and had struck with her.

He had warned her not to cross his path again and here she is. He doesn't want to fight with the girl who is friends with Jorkallun. Holding his anger, he slowly shook his head as he regarded Rae once more.

"You're not worth the fight." Jason said as he took down his arms, his claws changing back to his fingers, and with that, he left a very surprised Rae and a more bewildered crowd behind.

Some of the crowd starts to disperse as the fight they were expecting didn't happen, while some stood to watch Rae and hoped she called out Jason.

Rae watches until he disappeared into his private class, she turned to face Jorkallun when someone tried to punch her face.

Rae quickly blocked it by holding the hand that was intending to punch her face.

It was the Amazon's Warriors again, this time, they were 10 in numbers and were with their swords.

Rae slightly pushed off the girl arm she was holding and faces an angry Lolly.

"What is it?" Rae asked nonchalantly at Lolly and the girls as they surrounded her.

"Who do you think you are that gave you the impetus in shouting out my husband to be name?" Lolly demanded.

The students that was already dispersing came back to watch another fight between Jason's bride to be and the new girl.

"Did he complained?" Rae asked as she went over to where Lolly stood. "Did I in any way talked to you Lolly or are you now Jason?"

"Do.Not.Talk.To.My.Man, no one in this school does that, and you're not allowed to do so. Am I clear!" Lolly shouted as she stared angrily at Rae.

Rae snorted.

"Was the last time we saw didn't leave you with enough sense? Jason isn't married to you yet and you're behaving like this, what if at all, he doesn't end up with you, won't you feel ashamed when that happens?"

The slap that echo round the school caught Rae off guard. She wasn't expecting that.

It was one of the Amazons Warriors with Lolly that has slapped her. She was among the new Amazon's.

Holding her left cheek as she faces the girl who had slapped her, she spat out blood, smiling to herself, she cleaned her mouth and stare at the blood in her hands.

One thing people don't know including her grandmother, Rae doesn't like seeing her blood.

"How dare you say such a thing to the next queen of the Supernaturals, apologize to her right now or else....."

Rae didn't allow her to complete her words as she slapped the girl next to the one speaking.

Her jaw broke, without wasting time, she kicked the girl out of the way with her infamous kick.

The Amazon's draw out their swords at Lolly nod, they attacked Rae at once.

They didn't stood a chance against Rae, who was very fast, slapping and kicking them all, she left them on the floor bleeding from their mouth with their jaws, hands and noses broke.

"Pathetic." Rae said to them and finally turned to the one who had slapped her. She went over to meet the sudden scared girl again.

"Or else what?" Rae demanded as she took the girl sword from her hands.

"No-noth-nothing ma'am." The girl replied with shaking voice.

Dropping her sword to the ground, Rae slapped the girl in her two cheeks.

"Next time, think before you talk, and think again before you attack someone." Rae said and left the shaking Amazon whose cheeks were now swollen from the slap, pushing Lolly out of her way.

Rae looked around but couldn't see Jorkallun anywhere, walking over to where Sarah stood, she throws her hand on her shoulder and started walking, which prompted Sarah to start walking with her to their class.

"Where did Jorkallun go?" Rae asked forgotten the scene she had created behind.

"He left when she slapped you." Sarah replied.

They entered the class and saw Jorkallun already in the class, sitting down.

Rae left Sarah and went over to her sit. Jorkallun turned to face her with a little smile that made Rae's heart beat faster. He looked more handsome with that smile. She was glad he was smiling at her.

"Hope you dealt with them?" Jorkallun asked.

"Yes, next time they will think twice before attacking anyone." Rae said returning her own smile.

Jorkallun smile widened more and he nodded his head.

Rae shifted closer to him and whisper in his ear. "I want you to come to the cafeteria with me today and I am not talking no for an answer. I am always bored in the cafeteria."

"I don't like eating in the cafeteria Rae, beside you have Sarah with you." Jorkallun said.

"Then I will follow you to wherever you eat your food instead of the cafeteria."

"Okay....." Jorkallun got interrupted when a vampire rushed in.

"Rae you're needed in the Principle office now." The boy said.

"Hmm, why?" Rae demanded.

"Lolly called King Roen and he is here." The vampire answered.

Rae stood up from her seat and was surprised when she saw Jorkallun doing the same.

"Where are you going?" Rae asked.

"Following you." Was Jorkallun brief reply.

"Aww, that sweet of you, but I can handle them myself you know." Rae said, she was flattered by his response.

"I know, but knowing Lolly, she might have lied to Roen which prompted him to come here." Jorkallun said. "So I am coming with you."

"Okay pretty boy, then tag along." Rae said and smiled when she saw Jorkallun rolled his eyes.

They left the classroom to the Principal office.

---

Entering the office, Rae saw a man who looks exactly like Jason, white hair, tall, same body build. This must be Jason's father and the ruler of them.

Rae saw Lolly sitting next to Roen as she smiled evilly at her.

Rae and Jorkallun sat down on the two empty chairs before Jack will tell them to sit.

Placing her legs on the table, a habit she was so used to.

"You sent for me." Rae said.

"Yes I did, but I wasn't expecting Jorkallun." Jack said with a surprise when he saw the dragon.

"Am I now the topic or is that why Rae is here?" Jorkallun asked the principal who looks baffles when he was spoken to.

"No, not at all Jorkallun, I was just surprised, that's all." Jack replied then faces Rae. "The king is here to speak with you, and haven't I warned you that placing your legs on my desk is against the rules here?"

"I tend to forget things Jack." Rae answered sweetly but didn't put her legs down. She faces Roen who has been observing her since she walked in. She reminded him of someone.

"Hello Sire."

Roen nodded his head. "Lolly told me you attacked her and her friends simply because she asked you to kindly get off the path you were blocking."

"And you believed that sire?" Rae asked the king. "How can I beat up 10 girls including her." Rae said and started crying. Her tears can draw her sympathy's. "She is lying, I was on my own talking to Jason. They attacked me first after Jason left me."

King Roen eyes widen, "You spoke to Jason and he didn't...." He stood up from his seat and went over to the window, he looked around the school. "....tore down this school?"

"Yes sire, he didn't, in fact, Rae had shouted his name." This time it was Jorkallun who spoke, surprising the Roen the more. Ever since the engagement of Lolly to his son, Jorkallun had distance himself away from them. "Rae is my friend and wouldn't do as 'the girl' had said. She was the one who had injured them to blame Rae for doing that." Jorkallun added.

"How did you even know what happened, thank the heavens I wasn't alone as I had presumed." Rae said agreeing to what Jorkallun had said.

"Well." Roen said clearing his throat, since Jorkallun has joined his mouth and has called Rae his friend, any decisions he makes concerning the girl might result in a war with the Dragons, which he was avoiding. "I guess it was a misunderstanding."

"Yes, a very huge misunderstanding." Rae said after him.

"Lolly, apologize to Rae right now for false allegations." Roen commanded her.

Fuming in anger. "I am sorry." Lolly said the words that were not from her heart. Her plan has failed.

"Good, now go and treat your comrades." Roen said and Lolly left them in anger. He faces Rae. "I am so sorry about that, just because my son will be getting married to her soon doesn't mean she should disrespect anyone from the school."

"Thank you sire." Rae thanked him with a smile.

"So, Jason didn't fight you when you shouted his name?"

"No he didn't."

"Wow, that's strange. The only person who shouts his name and goes scot free is Jorkallun, apart from him, no one else does that. I am surprised hearing this." Roen said looking at Rae strangely.

That feeling of she reminding him of someone came again.

Placing his hand under his jaw in a thoughtful expression, he couldn't help but ask.

"Who are your parents?"

Placing her hand under her jaw in a thoughtful expression, just like king Roen.

"As the king of the whole Supernaturals, isn't it your job to know everyone you rule the name of their parents and children?" Rae said to the king without any hint of fear.

King Roen was surprised and shocked by her answer. She reminded him of her son and someone else.

"You're right, I will love you to visit the palace whenever you want, I like your spirit Rae." King Roen said with a smile and stood up. He bid Jack, Rae and Jorkallun his goodbye before he left.

"Rae, be glad it wasn't the Vampire King or the Fairy Queen you reply in such manner." Jack said with a smile, he was coming to like this Rae of a girl. "And since he said you should visit him, do not forget to visit him. You can go."

Rae nodded and left the office together with Jorkallun.

As soon as the door to Jack's office was closed, Rae hugged Jorkallun.

She knows one thing, she loves him and also saw herself falling in love with Jason.

A confused feelings she has.

\*\*\*\*

Above them, up there in the sky stood Michael, he was standing alone in a room when the door to the room opened to reveal an Angel.

"Michael, how long shall you mourn her? Her kind and yours are never meant to be, get that into your head, even our king was against it." The angel who came in said.

"Do you know what love is Gabriel?" Michael asked sadly. "I know you don't. She left me."

"Michael, that happened fifty thousand (50,000) years ago and you still haven't gotten over her? She won't come back." Gabriel said, his white wings spreading itself as he stood beside the other angel.

"I love Selena with all my heart, but our love was forbidden."

## Chapter 15

'There are two basic motivating forces: fear and love. When we are afraid, we pull back from life. When we are in love, we open to all that life has to offer with passion, excitement and acceptance, In all the world, there is no love for you like mine. Once upon a time there was a boy who loved a girl and her laughter was a question he wanted to spend his whole life answering.'

♥♥♥♥ LOLLY ♥♥♥♥

Gabriel heaved out a sign as he stares at his old friend, placing a hand on his shoulder.

"Michael, you and I know that there is nothing you can do about it, except you want to go against our King order." Gabriel said.

"But I can't seem to forget about her no matter how hard I tried to, her memories are buried deep inside me. I choose my position instead of her Gabriel, I was such a big fool." Michael said. "Can Selena ever forgive me for denying her in the presence of everyone?"

---

Selena was one of the seven goddesses of the Great Sea Nile, in fact, the seven goddesses of the Sea Nile were blood sisters.

Selena was the seventh daughter of King Nile, who fell in love with Michael.

She saw a shooting star falling from the sky and landing near the back of a cave one night she was alone.

Her sisters and father had gone out for swimming, she was left alone.

Seeing the shooting star, she rushed to where it had landed and saw a man with wings, unconscious. His wings broken, almost tearing off from his back, he was seriously injured.

She lifted him up to her shoulders with the little strength she had, and took him down to her cave filled with water, placing her lips over his, she breathed air into the unconscious wings man, she entered the water with him, transforming into her full mermaid form, she swam lower until she got to the bottom of the cave where she kept her healing medicine. Placing the unconscious man on her large seashell bed, she went over to where her medicine shells were kept.

She opened the green sea shell she normally kept for emergence and apply it on the place where the wings were almost fallen out. It healed and the wings became whole again.



Selena smiled to herself as she saw the wings patching themselves up in their rightful places. His wounds, he had sustained started healing at a faster rate.

At that moment, the unconscious man sneezed and opened up his eyes.

He was very surprised when he saw himself inside the water with a beautiful lady with tail beside him, looking at him. He stretched out his arm to attack but Selena used her tail to knock that arm out. He clutched his throat as he breathed in some water.

"Relax, the water won't kill you, I was able to make you breath and talk in the water. I am not your enemy, you fell down from the sky and landed here, I saw you and took you down here to heal you." Selena explained.

He looked doubtful though as he stares at her.

He looked everywhere and saw all types of shells, he tried to move his wings and realize that it moved perfectly.

He turned to stare at the mermaid. His broken wings were healed? How?

Remembering what the mermaid had said about breathing and talking and healing, he decided to test that talking in the water, "Who are you?" He asked as his wings stretch out, not so wide. It felt strange hearing himself talking in the water.

His angelic voice made Selena smile the more. "I am Selena and you?" She answered leaving out the part of her being the daughter of King Nile.

"I am Michael." He reply still staring at her.

"How did you fall off from the sky? What wings tribe are you from?" Selena asked, she wanted to know.

"I am an Angel who lives in the sky, we are at war with the unholy ones." Michael answered her and without saying much, he rose from the huge seashell which serves as bed to her kind, and swam up.

He came out of the open, at the mouth of the cave and came out of it, surprisedly, his war clothes were dried.

He turned to regard the mermaid coming out from the cave behind him, her tail transforming back to her legs.

"Thank you Selena, when this is over, I will come back."

Without waiting for a response, he flew up and disappeared into the clouds.

Selena watches until he was out of sight, something triggers in her heart, but she couldn't point exactly what the feelings were.

She waited and waited for 1,000 years, but Michael didn't show up like he had promised.

Everyday she hoped to see the angel who lives in the sky, but her dream wasn't forthcoming.

The once happy mermaid became sad, she realized that feelings she had felt when she saw the angel flying away, was actually love.

Her sisters and father had tried to find out the problem which she kept mute and couldn't open up to them.

One day, after she has almost given up on setting her eyes on Micheal, she got a surprise visit.

"Selena, someone is looking for you." Lydia, the second sister, said to Selena. They were out in the open.

"Someone?" Selena asked confusedly as she left what she was doing to face her sister.

Lydia closed her eyes answering her.

"Yes, a good looking young man, he called himself Michael. He said he was looking for Selena and..." opening her eyes, she found herself alone.

Selena ran with her heart in her mouth and hope it was the same Michael her sister is talking about.

She wasn't disappointed, it was indeed Michael, stopping at his front, her smile came out again.

They stared at each other for a long time.

"I thought you had forgotten about your promise and me." Selena finally said breaking off the silence that has engulfed them.

"Forget you? How can I forget the beautiful lady who healed me? Sorry I came back after so many years, we were rebuilding what was left of our Kingdom after the war." Michael told the lady he kept dreaming of every single day after he had left.

"I am glad you remembered me." Selena said.

"Who wouldn't remember your beautiful face?" Michael said with a smile which Selena returned shyly. "I was in haste the last time you saved me and didn't take my time to look at you, you are truly beautiful Selena, I kept thinking of you all these years, you are in my dreams and the first thing I saw each morning I wake up." Michael confessed at last as he closed the distance between them, touching her cheek. "I owe you a lot Selena for saving me years back, I am grateful I met you. I love you Selena, this is the second time I am seeing you physically, please do not reject my love I have for you."

Selena didn't know which one of them moved first, definitely her, as they kissed passionately.

Their love story began....

Selena introduced him to her father and sisters. He was welcomed by them.

Michael always sneaked out to see his lover who was not from his world, their love was unbreakable and strengthen with time.

They got engaged and set to marry. Selena knows he always sneaked out to see her and her people.

Whenever king Nile asks her daughter why he hasn't set his eyes on the Angel people, Selena always find an excuse to cover him up.

All was going well for them and Michael was planning on revealing Selena to his king when an Angel who despise Michael informed the king of his movement.

King of the Angels, Aaron, told Michael what he heard which he confirmed it to be true.

King Aaron was outrage when he heard Micheal's confession.

"It is abominable Michael, you, getting married to a fish, a mer-folk, that's unheard off. It is forbidden Michael." King Aaron said.

"But we love each other my king, there is nothing abominable about our love." Michael said.

"Have you ever heard of an Angel marrying outside his or her kind? No, and it will not start with you, if you don't cut whatever it is you said you have with the fish girl, then I will wage war against her people." King Aaron said with finality.

Michael hurriedly went to tell Selena what transpired between him and his king.

"I will stand by you, don't be afraid Michael." Selena assured him.

"I am not afraid Selena, I am just confused." Michael said.

"Confused about what?"

"He said our love was forbidden, that it wasn't meant to happen."

"Then we are going to prove him wrong Michael."

When Aaron saw that Michael wouldn't yield to his command, Aaron called out his best angels warriors and they went to war against King Nile.

King Nile was surprised to see an army of Angels descending towards his Kingdom and without waiting to give his reasons for coming, Aaron commanded his angels to kill all the mer-folk.

It was a great massacre as the mer-folk who weren't prepared were killed.

Selena who had gone hunting with her sisters returns to see the angels killing their people.

Lydia shout of rage stopped all the angels in their tracks.

"What is going on! Why are you attacking us!" Lydia shouted in anger.

Aaron then told them why he had attacked them. When he finished explaining, he turned to look at Michael.

"Now Michael you will have to choose between your people and her, choosing her, I will strip you off your powers and wings and you will become a human, or, choosing your kind, you will become my next in command. It is now your choice."

Selena knew that Michael would choose her over anything, but she got the shock of her life when Michael choose his people.

"I am sorry Selena, you know I have been fighting for that rank since and I can't let it slip away from my hands. I am sorry." Michael told her sadly.

"Well, it is done, he chooses his people." Aaron said with pride and they flew away.

Michael didn't look back.

Selena who had started crying turn to face her father.

"I banished you from ever returning here again, you have caused us a great loss. From today henceforth, Selena ceased to be my daughter." King Nile decree.

He ordered some of the guards to throw Selena out of his Kingdom.

"We shall all live in our caves from now henceforth, let it be known that all the mer-folks were wiped out." King Nile decree.

With no where else to go, Selena left her home in tears. Crossing to the other side of the great Sea.

She later got to know she was with Michael's child, rather than killing the unborn child, she let it live.

Along the way, she met with others friends, who were supernaturals, Roen's father and so on, together they built their own kingdoms.

She gave birth to a girl and named her Avonmora

Saving stray mermaids, turning evil sirens to good, became Selena's hobby and soon all the whole mermaids made their way to be with Selena.

No one knows that beyond the reef of the sea lives King Nile and his people and her sisters.

---

"Like I said before, you can't change the past my friend." Gabriel said. "Instead of dwelling in the past, you have the future facing you, if you really love her like you claim, then correct your mistakes now."

"True, I will search for her everywhere, since she was driven away from her home by her father." Michael said with determination. "She is somewhere out there."

\*\*\*

Hugging Jorkallun felt right as she relaxes the more into his body. She wished that Jorkallun would love her and not see her as his little sister.

"Rae, we are being stared at." Jorkallun voice broke through her thoughts.

All the students including the teachers had stopped what they were doing and were staring at them. Jack has to open his office door a little bit to peep at them when he heard the students whispering with his wolf hearings.

Releasing herself from him with embarrassment. "Sorry about that, I am happy you came with me." Rae said almost blushing, almost.

Jorkallun sent her his charming smile, "It's okay Rae, we get carried away sometimes, come, we are late for class." Jorkallun said holding Rae's hand and leading them towards their class.

Rae smile at their joined hands and felt how right they fit together.

They could make a great couple if Jorkallun would give her chance.

Rae thought as she allowed the pretty red haired boy to lead her.

\*\*\*\*

Lolly was enraged when she left the principal office, King Roen has sided her enemy.

Instead of going back to her class, she left the school in a fit of anger.

She got home and found the house empty, she was glad she was alone. She utter some magic words and a little whirl wind blew before stopping. Tamara stood in the place of the wind.

"What is it Lolly?" Tamara asked once she saw the anger in her child's eyes.

"It's a new girl in my school mother, she is really getting on my nerves." Lolly answered.

"Then deal with her, you are an Amazon warrior from your father's side, take some of your best warriors and deal with the girl, no one will question." Tamara told her daughter.

"That's it mother, she has defeated me and my girls twice, I have been humiliated by her, and Jason wouldn't do a damn thing."

"And you kept it all away from me until this moment?" Tamara asked.

"Sorry mother, I thought I would handle her on my own." Lolly responded.

"Who is this stupid girl that dares humiliate you?"

"Rae, her stupid name is Rae."

"What's the name of her parents?" Tamara asked.

"She is Lillian's granddaughter mother."

"Lillian? You mean the witch Queen?" Tamara asked and Lolly nodded her head. "She has a granddaughter?" Tamara asked with surprise, she didn't know Lillian has a granddaughter.

"Yes and this granddaughter of hers humiliated me."

"Don't worry my child, I will pay Lillian a visit and probably get to see this young witch I haven't encountered yet."

## Chapter 16

'Love is a temporary madness, it erupts like volcanoes and then subsides. And when it subsides, you have to make a decision. You have to work out whether your roots have so entwined together that it is inconceivable that you should ever part. Because this is what love is. Love is not breathlessness, it is not excitement, it is not the promulgation of promises of eternal passion, it is not the desire to mate every second minute of the day, it is not lying awake at night imagining that he is kissing every cranny of your body. No, don't blush, I am telling you some truths. That is just being 'in love', which any fool can do. Age does not protect you from love but love to some extent love protects you from age.'

### ♥♥♥♥ TAMARA'S VISIT ♥♥♥♥

"I will love that mother." Lolly said after hearing her mother promises to visit the Witch Queen.

"Trust me I will visit her, by the way, no one knows anything about you right?" Tamara asked.

"No one mother except us. Jason hasn't even asked me who my mother was." Lolly answered and then heaved out a sad sigh.

"What is it my child?" Tamara asked as she saw the sad look.

"I don't think Jason will love me mother, he doesn't even like me, are you sure your plan will work between me and him? Will he get married to me when it's time?" Lolly asked her mother.

"You worry too much my child. You told me you love Jason and would like to be with him forever, I made it so, isn't it?"

"Yes mother, you did, I am just scared that he won't return my love." Lolly said with a more sad tone, Tamara went over to meet her and pull her for a hug, patting her daughter's head gently.

"You don't have to worry Lolly, I am always with you my beloved child, whatever you want you shall have. Jason is yours and no one can change that, with time, he will come to love you, just be patient, trust me on this one." Tamara said gently as she kissed her child forehead.

"Okay mother, I trust your decisions." Lolly said smiling, her sad face gone. "But don't forget about the new girl I told you about." Lolly said reminding her mother. "She must pay for humiliating me."

"I won't forget, I have to go before any of your friends walk in and sees me here." Tamara said and made a tiny bag appeared in her hand which she handed over to Lolly. "Put some of its contents into your father's food, you know what to do my child."

Having collected the tiny bag from her mother, Tamara vanished into thin air.



"I can't wait to see my mother put that stupid girl in her place." Lolly said to herself as she climbed the stairs of her house to her room to hide the bag away from prying eyes.

\*\*\*

Jorkallun and Rae entered their history class together where Serena was already teaching.

They all paused in what they were doing and stare at the duo who quietly made their way to their sits. They had thought that King Roen would have sent or better still, expelled Rae out of the school for disrespecting his son's wife to be, but it wasn't as they had expected. They had seen King Roen walking out of the Jack's office in all smiles, which means, Rae had impressed him, or probably because Jorkallun was with her.

They all stared at them even though they had sat down already.

"I thought Serena was teaching you all, why then are you staring at us?" The quiet question Jorkallun asked made everyone to return back to what he or she was doing, that is, writing down the notes that Miss Serena was teaching them.

Jorkallun placed his head on his desk ignoring every noise.

When she was through with her students, Serena flew out of the classroom to her next class.

Jorkallun raised up his head after Serena had left the class to go for his next class.

"Don't forget that we are having lunch together." Rae whispered into Jorkallun's ears and left with Sarah to their next class.

She glanced back at Jorkallun and sent him a smile. "Don't forget!" She shouted back to Jorkallun who nodded his head in return.

"I envy you Rae." Sarah said as they made their way to their next class.

"Envy me? Why?" Rae asked curiously.

"You're so fearless and outspoken Rae. You talk to Jason and Jorkallun without any hint of fear in you and make one your friend, I wish to be like you." Sarah replied smiling at her friend.

"You have your own hidden strength Sarah, don't be like me, do your thing." Rae said throwing her arms on Sarah's shoulder. "Anyone can hide, I choose not to hide. Facing up to things, walking through them, that's what makes me strong, that's the way I roll and I don't see myself changing soon."

"Okay, but you are always awesome in whatever you're doing, and you do get away from trouble, always." Sarah chip in.

Rae smiled as they entered their next class.

---

It was lunch break and Rae had followed Sarah to the noisy school cafeteria where they sat down together. Since their table has two chairs which they are occupying, Rae took one of the empty chairs from the Amazon's table (looking for trouble).

The table where the Amazon's do seat were empty, they're probably not in school treating their wounds.

Sarah noticed the way Rae kept glancing at the door of cafeteria, as if she was waiting for someone, she couldn't help but ask.

"What is it Rae, why do you keep looking at the cafeteria door every second and who has the third chair?"

"Jorkallun promised me he will come here or take me to where he normally eats." Rae answered looking at Sarah.

"Jorkallun told you he will come to the school cafeteria?" Sarah asked surprisingly.

"Yes, he is not here yet, if he doesn't show up, this school will not contain Jorkallun and me."

"And you think he will co-" Sarah started to say when she saw Jorkallun heading towards them.

The noisy cafeteria suddenly became quiet as they all stare at the guy making his way towards Rae.

Smiling at him, "Glad you could make it pretty boy." Rae said and tapped the empty chair in her and Sarah middle. "Sit."

It wasn't an order, Jorkallun sat down ignoring the stares he was getting.

"Why are they staring at you?" Rae asked as she noticed the stares.

"I don't usually come to the school cafeteria." Jorkallun answered. "They're surprised."

"Wow, I am getting a lot of attention because of you." Rae said and smiled sweetly at him. "Let me introduce my suddenly quiet friend to you, even if you know her before, for my sake pretend as if you are meeting her for the first time."

Jorkallun nodded his head.

"So Jorkallun, meet my friend Sarah, and Sarah you already know who he is."

Sarah seems to have lost her voice but nodded her head.

Jorkallun turn to regard Sarah, though he knows that she was in his history class, this was the first time he was actually seeing her face. Something seemed odd about her as he stares at Sarah.

He couldn't deny the fact that she was beautiful.

"Hello Sarah." He greeted.

Sarah nearly fainted when she heard his voice directed to her. Her crush just spoke to her. Jason and Jorkallun were every girl dreams.

"Hi Jorkallun." She said shyly.

Jorkallun stare at her for some minutes before facing Rae who has been staring at him. He shrugged his shoulders and sent a smile to Rae.

"I am hungry, can we eat." Jorkallun finally said breaking off the silence.

---

School ended and Rae said her goodbye to Jorkallun before touching her bracelet. A portal opened immediately and Rae entered it.

The portal opened in the middle of the sitting room.

Lillian was just coming out from the kitchen with a plate of food when she saw Rae. She knows the time Rae usually closes from school.

"Hello Rae, how was your day in school today?" Lillian asked putting down the plate of food she was carrying.

"Great grandma." Rae answered, sitting down on one of the chairs. She started eating the food. She was greatly famished.

"That's good, hope you stayed away from trouble?" Lillian asked.

"Kind of, Lolly called King Roen over to school today."

"Lolly called Roen? For what?" Lillian demanded immediately. "Did something happen in school?"

"No, I was attacked by her and her gang up girls just because I was talking to Jason."

"You were attacked because you talked to Jason? Is that why King Roen came over?"

"Yes, Lolly lied I injured her stupid warriors with her, I only talk back to her and she lied to the king. I was called to the office and told the King what had happened. To cut this story short, he said I should pay him a visit." Rae concluded with a smile. "Isn't that great grandma, I am being invited to the palace." She added happily.

"Did he say anything?" Lillian asked.

"Anything like what?" Rae asked with a raise eyebrows.

"Like your parents you know that stuff."

"Oh, he did ask and I kindly told him I don't know them, don't forget I said kindly grandma."

"Okay, even if I know that was the opposite of your 'kindly words' I will like to have that bracelet on your wrist Rae." Lillian said.

"Why would you want the bracelet, you said I should never remove it."

"I know." Lillian replied, joining and closing her hands together, she muttered some words and open her hands. In it was a more beautiful bracelet.

Jorkallun words hasn't left her that night, she has been preparing this powerful charm bracelet mixed with her blood for Rae.

"But I am already used to this one grandma." Rae groaned.

"I know, I will redo this one and make it more beautiful than before, and then give it back to you." Lillian promised.

Though reluctant about it, Rae gave the bracelet to her grandmother who then gave her the new bracelet. She wore it on her wrist.

"Like I always tell you Rae, on no account should you remove it, even if I tell you to remove it later on, do not do so, okay?"

"Yes granny, I will not remove it." Rae said and went back to her food.

Eating up, she quickly wash her plate and went to her room to take her bath. Lillian made the other bracelet in her hand vanished.

As soon as Rae left for her room, Tamara appeared right in front of Lillian.

Lillian was shocked and surprised when she saw the priestess.

"Greetings my priestess, what brings you to my humble home?" Lillian asked as she bowed down her head to salute Tamara.

"I was just strolling by and remember my old friend lives here. How have you been Lillian?" Tamara asked sitting down on one of the chairs.

"I am good my priestess." Lillian reply with her head still bowed to her.

"I was told you have a granddaughter, where is she and how come I don't know anything about her existence." Tamara said suspiciously.

"You know my daughter was pregnant before her death with her husband."

"Yes, I remembered, but I vividly know she died with her unborn child Lillian."

"Her baby didn't die my priestess, she survived and live."

"Hmmm, but why does it seem as if you are lying?" Tamara asked no one as she studies Lillian face but couldn't find any suspicious look on it.

"So where is she, I mean your grandchild. I need to see her and confirm if you're saying the truth." Tamara said with a smile looking around the house. "And also to see if she will make a strong witch."

"Rae!" Lillian shouted.

"Yes granny, am almost done." Rae answered as made her way down the stairs.

She was surprised when she saw a woman with her grandmother, and what shocked her the most was to see her granny standing and bowing her head to this strange woman.

"Granny, why is your neck that way, or is it hurting you?" Rae asked as she went over to meet her grandmother, trying to help her but was rebuked by Lillian.

"Shhh, be quiet, you're in the presence of the high priestess, you bow down to her until she leaves your house, it is a rule." Lillian caution Rae.

"Oh, I see." Rae said and went to sit down on the chair opposite the priestess, crossing her legs as they both regarded themselves.

"You don't stare at me child, no one does, bow your head to me." Tamara ordered angrily.

"You're in my house high mighty Priestess, so I should be the one ordering you and not the other way round." Rae said in anger.

"Rae! Don't speak to the high Priestess in such manner, apologize to her right now." Lillian said to her granddaughter.

Looking around her with seriousness, "Apologize to who grandma, I can't see anyone."

Smiling coldly, "I can see you're not scared of me."

"And why should I be scared of you?" Rae asked with a thoughtful look. "Oh because you're the high Priestess right? That doesn't work for me, as far as I am concerned, you are sitting comfortably in my chair, shouldn't you be the one scared of me?"

"So you are the Rae who causes trouble in school" Tamara said aloud in thought.

"Yup, that's me, the one and only troublesome girl." Rae responded sweetly.

"Give me your hand." Tamara commanded.

"And why should I do that?" Rae demanded.

"She wants to know if you will be a strong witch." Lillian answered instead. "The gods told her too."

"I know I am a strong witch Priestess, I don't need you to touch my hands to know that, I know that already." Rae said with a smile.

"You are very disrespectful and you shall be punished for that." Tamara said getting up to her full height in pure rage.

Standing up to her feet as well with the same expression of the priestess, "And who wants to punish me, you?" Laughing hysterically at the Priestess, "Your dreams are too high almighty Priestess, don't make me cut it off."

## Chapter 17

'Stubbornness is like setting yourself on a path with your eyes closed. In other words, you are not seeing and listening for information that is available to help you make the right decisions. The primary information you are missing is information from others and information from your own internal voice. Life lives, life dies. Life laughs, life cries. Life gives up and life tries. But life looks different through everyone's eyes.'

♥♥♥♥ FALLING IN LOVE WITH RAE ♥♥♥♥

"You will cut it off?"

Tamara laughed wickedly at Rae's comment.

"You don't know my dream girl." Tamara said with a smile.

"And I don't wish to know it. If you came all the way here just to touch my hands, am afraid your coming here is useless." Rae said and moved closer to Tamara, nearly touching her, the Priestess was taller than her by inch. "Why would the gods ask you to check on only witches and not the rest of our supernaturals, why would they do that?" Rae said prying into the eyes of Tamara. "Or are you hiding something, because to me, I see a conspiracy in this, prove me wrong oh high and mighty priestess." Rae bowed her head mockery at the priestess.

Tamara was livid in anger as she stared down on Rae, she saw why her daughter had given her the task to deal with this witch girl. She had thought she would intimate her with her mere presence, but she wasn't expecting it to go this way.

"Rae! Show some respect for the priestess." Lillian said to Rae with pleading eyes.

"I am grandma, but she doesn't appreciate it." Rae said with a shrugged shoulders.

"Y-yo-yo-"

"Oh is the high and mighty Priestess of the gods speechless now?" Rae asked her with a smile as she turned to face her grandmother, flipping her hair backwards with her hand, she makes sure it wiped Tamara's face since she was near her. "Please grandma, remind me once again why the priestess is here again?" Rae said with a singing tone as she flipped her hair once again to stare at Tamara's face.

Lillian rolled her eyes, Rae is impossible.

"I can see I am not welcome in your home Lillian, I will take my leave now." Tamara said cleaning her mouth on where Rae's hair had touched, glaring dangerously at the girl. "You will soon hear from the king." Tamara said and move closer to Rae, bending her head to Rae's

height, their noses nearly touching. "Then we shall see who the King favour." Tamara added and vanished before Rae will reply back.

Stretching her neck as she stands to her full height, Lillian looked at Rae in amusement. Her fears about Tamara finding out who Rae is, wasn't discovered yet, thank the gods she gave Rae the bracelet in time before the un-announcement of the priestess.

"Rae, I think Tamara is scared of you, you were a badass to her, and the scary big cat got scared of the little rat, that she wants to report you to the king." Lillian said with a smile.

"What will she say to the king?" Rae said and cleared her throat to speak. "King Roen a little ruffraff insulted me and I don't want her to get away with it, it will tarnish my image." Rae said in Tamara's voice.

They were silent for a moment before dissolving into laughter, clutching their stomachs as they laugh.

"I can picture her face right now Rae as she tells the 'King'." Lillian said in between laughs. "But on a more serious note, why aren't you scared of her?" Lillian asked, she was a witch and people who knows her late daughter and husband knows them to be very quiet couple who doesn't have time to be looking for trouble like Rae does.

"You've always taught me that the eagle has no fear of adversity grandma. We need to be like the eagle and have a fearless spirit of a conqueror, I followed it and see myself not getting scared of anything or anyone." Rae said as if it was a normal thing. "Besides that is how I gain the trust and respect from Jorkallun." Rae added with a smile as she remembers the pretty red haired boy.

"But she will really tell the king how disrespectful you are to her." Lillian said, the laughter gone fully from her face.

"Don't worry about that grandma, the king won't say a thing once he sees me." Rae said dismissively. "And I told you some few minutes ago how he invited me to his palace, he will be glad to have me in his palace."

"But nevertheless, be very careful, Tamara might not take this lightly." Lillian said in a warning.

"What can she do? Call the gods on me or Lucifer? Nah, she can't do that, I am not scared of them." Rae said.

"Well you never can tell Rae, I will be going to my room now." Lillian said going towards the staircase..



"Yeah, me too granny, I need my beauty sleep." Rae said with a yawn as she followed her.  
"Before I forget Grandma, do you know of anyone who is seriously sick in the kingdom?" Rae asked.

"No one, I would have known if someone is sick." Lillian answered her after thinking about it.  
"Why are you asking me Rae?"

"Nothing grandmother, I just feel like asking." Rae replied sweetly. "I thought you said you want to sleep?"

"Yeah, I will call on you after I have prepared our dinner, so you can sleep all through the hours."

\*\*\*\*\*

Appearing in her cave, Tamara blow out part of her cave in anger with her magic, which quickly rebuilt itself.

"How dare she talk back to me in such manner, who the hell she is to talk to me in such a rude way?" Tamara asked no one in particular. "I will deal with her that next time she hears my name, she will be afraid."

Going further into the cave she stopped at the front of a wooden door, she opened it with magic.

Tamara entered a much lower cave room that one has to bend half way through to enter it. And even inside the cave, you can't stand to your full height, it was very small.

Tamara was already used to the dark and didn't bother to lighten the cave room. She walked straight to where a bowl of clean water was kept and began stirring at it with her right hand.

A beast head came out of the bowl. Bigger than the bowl itself.

"Possess a girl call Rae Fey, I need you to put fear into her, make her lose her courage."  
Tamara commanded the beast.

Without saying a word, the beast sink back into the bowl to do as it's mistress has commanded.

Tamara smiled wickedly. Now she has to visit the palace and report Rae to the king just in case her beast fail.

She has this sudden doubting feelings that it will fail.

Leaving the cave and shutting the door after her, she went back to the old cave her things were.

She teleport herself to King Roen's palace.

\*\*\*\*\*

Tamara was filled with rage as she made her way to the King's throne room, she snarled at whosoever that stood in her way. Opening the throne room and entered it without closing the Oak door, Tamara saw Roen who was discussing with his general, she quickly dismissed the general.

"I want to talk to you, alone Roen." She told the King but her eyes were fixed on the general, it shows he wasn't needed here.

Nodding his head, he gesture with his hand to his general towards towards the door, "I will see you later Iroh." King Roen said.

Bowing to the king. "Of course my king, my priestess." With that he left them alone, closing the door behind him.

"What is it Tamara, your face isn't looking bright, did something happen to my wife?" King Roen asked worriedly because that can be the only reason why her face is like this.

"I have been insulted by a riffraff Roen and I want you to do something about it." Tamara said finally.

"Insulted? By who?" King Roen asked not getting it.

"A girl named Rae." Tamara answered briefly.

"Rae? You mean the girl who goes to my son's school?" King Roen asked to be sure.

"Yes, she attends that school." Tamara confirmed.

"How can she insult you when everyone knows fully well who you are." King Roen said not believing her words but couldn't voice it out.

"I don't want her to get away with it, it will tarnish my image once it leaks out." Tamara said.

"Who and who was there when she insulted you?"

"Her grandmother my king who wasn't disrespectful, Rae was the only one that insulted me."

"Oh, I will send for her, she will have to tell me why she insulted the high Priestess whom the gods speak to directly, she must be punished." King Roen said not meaning any of his word.

He was very curious of the girl and would want to draw closer to her, she reminded him of Avonmora.

"I know I can always count on you Roen, I take my leave." Tamara said with a hidden smile that Roen didn't noticed.

"How about my wife's health, when will she get better? It has been long her strange illness came and she is getting worse every day." King Roen said sadly.

"She will be fine my king, trust me, the gods will one day tell me the solution to her illness, but for now she has to be managing the herbs I give to her." Tamara said convincely.

"The gods are testing my patience Tamara, and before that one day will reach, I will question them myself." King Roen said with seriousness.

"You don't have to do that Roen, you have the priestess with you, I need time, time to purify the gods for an answer. They will give me the solution Roen, time is all I ask for." Tamara said and was able to convince the Wolf King.

"Okay." King Roen said finally. "You can have the time you want, but nothing should happen to Rosa."

"I give you my word, nothing will happen to her." Tamara said. "I will take my leave and check on Rosa on my way out."

"Jason is with her Tamara, so there is no need for that, he specifically said you shouldn't be coming to see his mother, and any herbs you want to give to her, should be given to me and I in turn will give it to him, he will be the one to apply it on her." King Roen said replaying the conversation he had with his son, in his head, a few hours ago when he came back from school.

Concealing her anger with a bright smile. "I will do as the Millenium Wolf has ordered my King." Tamara said. "And do not forget about the girl who had insulted me." She added.

"I won't Tamara, you have my word." King Roen promised.

Tamara left his presence. If her beast fail, Roen won't.

King Roen sighed and left his throne room in search of General Iroh to continue their discussion.

\*\*\*\*

The Vampire Palace:

Dean who just returning from his hunting, entered his room .He had been thinking lately about the girl he had fought with and couldn't get her off his mind no matter how hard he tries.

He was so engrossed with his thinking that he didn't notice the presence of his father in the room.

King Darin, the king of all Vampires, cleared his throat to alert his son of his presence. Dean was pulled out of his thoughts by that, he was surprised when he saw his father in his room.

They had just returned from hunting, they usually go hunting every week to catch mountain lions and kill them, storing the animals blood which they drink instead of the humans blood (their slaves). King Roen had ordered them not to drink from humans again and rather told them to be drinking from a wild animals.

"Dean, what is going on, since the past few days you have not been yourself." The vampire King Darin said in concern written all over his pale face. "What is troubling you son?"

"There is a girl I met, she is a very good and strong fighter, and also a witch." Dean said.

"A girl who is a witch and she is a strong fighter, who is she?" King Darin asked curiously.

"Her name is Rae father, I was very impressed by what she displayed that very day to me." Dean said smiling as he remembered his encounter with Rae.

"Hmmm, so because you were impressed by her display, is that why you didn't notice my presence in your room? If I was an enemy, I would have killed you."

"I am sorry about that father, I just won't get her off my head." The attractive vampire Prince said.

"I knew it, the girl has taken all over your thoughts, isn't it?" King Darin demanded.

Nodding his head, "Yes she has, I think I am falling in love with her already father."

"Then make her yours son. You're a Prince and a handsome one at that, she will fall for you." King Darin told his son.

"And what if she doesn't fall for me father, what will I do?" Dean asked.

"Then I will force her to marry you, it is simple as that." King Darin said with a smirk which Dean returned.

Though it will be very difficult as she has proven to be a strong fighter, but he will surely make her his wife.

"Thank you father." Dean said with smiles.

"You don't have to thank me son, you are my only son and I can do anything for you. So tell me more about this Rae of a girl, where did you meet her?"

## Chapter 18

'Battle is the most magnificent competition in which a human being can indulge. It brings out all that is best; it removes all that is base. All men are afraid in battle. The coward is the one who lets his fear overcome his sense of duty. Duty is the essence of manhood. Love is the master key that opens the gates of happiness, of hatred, of jealousy, and, most easily of all, the gate of fear. When the Sun and the Storm refused to yield. Each celebrating power that they wield. Their stubbornness and strength are revealed. And they combine to grow the crops in every field

### ♥♥♥♥ THE VISIT AND SARAH ♥♥♥♥

Lillian heard a knock on her door that same evening. She was in the kitchen cooking she and her granddaughter dinner as usual when the knock came.

"I am coming!" She shouted not too loud to whoever that is knocking on the door.

Quenching the fire under the pot with her magic, since she has finished, she went to open the door.

Once it was opened, she was very surprised to see two palace guards standing outside her house, she knew them, they were the guards who were always guarding King Roen's palace. Ushering them quickly inside, she offered them a seat which they rejected.

"No worries ma'am, we are fine," One of the guards said to Lillian.

"Okay, so, to what do I own this august visit?" Lillian demanded of them.

"King Roen asked us to come here and ask Rae to come with us over to the palace." The same guard who spoke, said again.

"The King asked you to come with Rae to the palace?" Lillian asked and the guards nodded their heads together. "Why? Why will he send for my granddaughter?" She asked fearfully.

"The priestess visited the King, we don't know what they discussed, but as soon as she left the palace, he asked us to call Rae." The same guard said again.

"And he orders us not to leave without Rae coming with us." The second guard chip in.

"But it is late already, the night has finally conceal the daylight, can't she come tomorrow?" Lillian asked with her heart in her mouth, she was scared. This is what she had wanted to prevent when the priestess came visiting earlier today.

"The King knows that, unless you want to question the king, you can follow us to the palace and ask him why he wants the girl at this time." The second guard said.

"I-I" Lillian didn't know what to say.

"Grandma I will follow them." Rae voice sounded behind Lillian who turn around quickly to see Rae at the top of the stairs.

Taking the stairs two at a time, Rae went over to where her grandmother stood with the guards.

"You're Rae, right?" The first guard asked as he regarded the girl who was dressed in clothes meant for men. The only thing that differentiates them with her was her long black hair, breast and her beautiful face.

"You just heard when I said to my grandma that I am coming with you, and you're still asking if I am Rae, of course I am Rae." Rae answered with a boring face. "Why do you ask?"

"Your clothes..."

Interrupting him, "Got a problem with my clothes, are you the one wearing them?" Rae asked and didn't wait for him to answer. "I will come with you to the palace, but first I have to eat." She added.

"There will be no time for that Miss Rae, you will eat once you get to the palace." The first guard said.

"And like I have said a few minutes ago, I will eat my grandmother's food. After that, I will follow you to the palace, it is so simple." Rae said and faces her grandmother. "Granny, I am greatly famished here, please where is my food." Rae said to her with a smile, Lillian went into the kitchen to bring Rae's food, leaving her with the two palace guards.

"You're not permitted to eat anything until you are in the palace." The second guard said.

"Says who?" Rae asked as Lillian came out with a plate of food and handed it over to Rae who gladly took it from her.

"Says the king, we can't allow you to eat that food, you're coming with us right away." The first guard said.

Sitting down in her favorite chair, as she turns to look at the two guards. She'd like to see them try and stop her from eating this food, taking one spoon into her mouth and eyeing them. "You just watch me!" Her eyes gave them a warning of 'mess.with.me.and.go.home.with.a.broken.limp.'

She took another spoon again, using one of her eyes to look at the guards. "Granny, this food is very delicious." She took another spoon and deliberately put the food in her mouth in a slower space.

The guards has no other option than to wait for her to be through with her food. Roen had warned them about her, but they had ignored his orders to do what they please.

After eating to her fill. She took the plate to the kitchen to wash, ignoring her grandmother's call to leave the plate for her.

After spending close to five minutes just to wash one plate, she came out of the kitchen.

"Granny, let me go with my new manservants to meet the King." Rae said looking at them sideways, daring them to speak.

But the guards remain mute.

"Be careful Rae." Lillian said and kissed her forehead.

Being more dramatic, Rae fake cry as she hugged her grandmother.

"I will miss you so much granny, it may take years when i will come back here again."

Lillian rolled her eyes and pushed Rae gently to the guards.

Staring at the two quite guards in her presence, who were staring at her. "What?" Rae snapped at them. "Can't a girl bid her granny goodbye?"

The guards quickly bid her grandmother their goodbyes and went outside the house with Rae closely behind them.

Once outside, Rae couldn't see any carriage, she voice out her thoughts to them. "Where is the goddam carriage? Should we be waiting for that one too?" Rae asked them.

"Sorry, we didn't come with that, we ran here straight and forgot it." The first guard reply.

"Oh, I see." Rae said and place her hand under her jaw and started stroking her invisible long beards looking at them.

"Which one of you is a wolf?" Rae suddenly asked.

"The both of us, why?"



"Why is because, one of you will have to carry me, you know I can't walk or run with you to the palace." Rae said. "So choose who I will ride with to the palace."

Arguing with her was pointless, the first guard quickly volunteer himself and transform into his Grey wolf. The second guard, changing into his Sandy wolf.

Climbing on the grey one, she patted it on its head as if it were a dog. "Am set, you can go."

The wolves ran out of the witch Kingdom with full speed, going straight to the Palace.

Rae's mind was on a certain white haired boy she was going to see in the palace tonight.

Her heart beat faster when she thought of Jason.

\*\*\*\*

The huge red dragon which was Jorkallun reached the dragon's lair and saw his father waiting.

Transforming back into his human form.

"What is it father?" Jorkallun asked.

"Oh nothing, just to confirm if what I am hearing is true." Vermitrax, the King of Dragons, said to Jorkallun with a smile.

Like his son, his hair was red in color together with his eyes. The red shows that, they were destined to rule over the dragons, it was very rare to see a dragon with a red hair.

"What rumors father?" Jorkallun asked.

"That you are friends with a girl called Rae." Vermitrax reply with a smile. "Is that true son?"

"Yes father, Rae is my friend, and she reminds me of Kate."

His smiling face was replaced with sadness. "Really? Your dragon acknowledge her as Kate?"

"Yes father, my dragon seem protective over her." Jorkallun responded.

"Wow, that's great to hear. I will like to see this Rae of a girl who befriended my son without him hurting her." Vermitrax said smiling again.

"You will see her soon father, I promise to bring her to our lair one day."

"Good, I can't wait to see her." Vermitrax said still smiling which Jorkallun return briefly.

\*\*\*

Sarah was coming back from an errand she went for her grandmother when she came across Jorkallun, resting his back against a pavement as if he was waiting for someone, closing his eyes and looking towards the Sky.

She was surprised to see him and decided to pretend she didn't see him, her intention was to walk past him pretending not to see him, but stopped in her tracks when she heard the pretty boy voice.

"Hello Sarah."

"Hello Jorkallun." Sarah said to her long time crush.

"Where are you coming back from by this time of the night?" Jorkallun ask.

"I went on an errand for my grandma." Sarah reply shyly. "Who are you waiting for?"

Jorkallun shrugged his shoulders. "I was waiting for you Sarah, I came to ask you something which I need your honest answer."

"Which is?" Sarah asked.

"Are you on the good side or the bad side?" Jorkallun said not beating around the bush.

"Meaning?" Sarah asked pretending to be confused.

"You're hiding something Sarah, whatever you are hiding, if you ever hurt my sister, I will hunt you down wherever you are and kill you  
." Jorkallun said in a warning.

"I don't understand what you mean by that Jorkallun, why are you saying things that aren't true."

Getting off the pavement, he walked over to her. "You can pretend all you want Sarah, but I see a concealing spell on you. Like I said, whatever you do, do not hurt my sister."

"And who is this sister of yours?"

"Rae, do not hurt her."

"You asked me a question before and I will be honest with you Jorkallun." Sarah said without being shy. "I am on the good side."

With that she left Jorkallun staring after her in thoughts.

—

Sarah got home and gave her grandmother what she went out to get. Going straight to her room, she locked the door and brought out a mirror.

Whispering some magic words, the mirror shone and a woman appeared in it, her large mermaid tail was visible

"Where you able to find her?" The mermaid from the mirror asked.

"Yes, but her granddaughter mother." Sarah answered.

"Selena won't be that easy to find, to the mer-folk and the rest of the supernaturals, she is just a myth." The mermaid said. "That's my sister for you. You must protect her granddaughter at all cost against any harm."

"Yes mother."

"I hope no one can see through your hidden identity?" The mermaid asked her daughter.

"No one mother notice, except for Jorkallun."

"And who is Jorkallun?"

"The one I told you I have a crush on."

"Okay, whatever you do be vigilant. Alert me once you see Selena, rest well my child." The mermaid said and the mirror became clear.

Sarah dropped the mirror, took her bath and went to bed.

\*\*\*\*

The wolves stopped running once they arrive at the palace. King Roen who was waiting for them outside his palace, he was glad to see Rae with his guards. He feared the girl wouldn't come with his guards.

He quickly usher her inside the palace.

"Thank you for honoring my invitation even though it came late." Roen said leading her to the banquet room where all assorted food were on the table.

"No problem my king." Rae said with a smile.

He opened the door the door to the banquet. "Ladies first."

Rae walk in with a genuine smile as she heard the door closing behind her.

Rae saw three chairs, guessing one for her, the other for Roen and who owns the last one?

"Please sit down in any of the sit, my son, Jason, will soon join us." Roen said and allowed Rae to sit first before he does.

Rae eyes perk once she heard Jason's name.

She was about to ask him when his son was coming when the door to the banquet opened to reveal the devil himself.

Jason was handsome in his choice of clothes he wore, it was simple, a white t-shirt and long trousers. His white long hair was packed in a ponytail.

He started walking towards them, his smiling presented face he always present to his father's guest, faded and was replaced with a frown.

"Don't tell me she is the one who you invited father?" Jason said with in a boring tone.

"The very one son." King Roen reply, Jason turned to leave but Roen voice stopped him. "Sit down Jason, you promise not to leave me alone with my guest."

Groaning, he sat down, his knees touching Rae's which he ignored.

"I know you two have not met each other yet, since my son has his own class and...." King Roen started to say but got interrupted by two voices.

"We've met and I don't like her." Jason said at the same time Rae said..

"We've met and he is too proud."

Blinking their eyes they both stared at each other, starting a staring contest.

Jason had always win when it comes to that, he could stare at you without blinking.

And Rae, that was one of her talent, her grandmother doesn't know.

They stared at each other, waiting for one to fail.

## Chapter 19

'There is a stubbornness about me that never can bear to be frightened at the will of others. My courage always rises at every attempt to intimidate me. Stubbornness can be another name for self-confidence. I'm stubborn; once I start something, I want to see how far I can go, All my problems bow before my stubbornness. You can hate a person with your whole body, but love is a stubborn thing, it clings on in your heart.'

♥♥♥♥ HEALING QUEEN ROSA ♥♥♥♥

They continue their stares as none of them wants to lose to each other.

Jason saw at that moment, how beautiful she looks. She has a hidden beauty which was covered in her boyish ways. She was very beautiful, was that what Jorkallun saw apart from her courage? He thought as he stared.

King Roen tried to start a conversation with Rae and his son.

"Rae how is Lillian, it's been a long time since I last saw her." King Roen said hoping to gain Rae's attention to him.

"She is fine my king, she sent her greetings to you." Rae answered without breaking her eye contact with Jason.

"Jason why don't you eat your food, it's getting colder." King Roen suggested to his son, hoping to the gods he break his eyes contact with Rae.

Taking one spoon into his mouth, "Happy father? I am eating." Jason answered him without breaking his eyes contact with Rae.

He smirked, he can't wait to see her blink her eyes, he was a champion in this.

Rae also smirked, matching Jason's own. She can't wait to see him blink his eyes, and declare her the winner.

Groaning, King Roen touched his forehead, why did he even invited Jason?

"Aren't you tired of staring uh handsome boy?" Rae asked the white haired boy.

"I would ask the same of you, don't you think the time is going and your grandmother might be worried about you, unlike me who is in my own house." Jason fired back.

"Oh sorry I forgot handsome boy." Rae said and place a finger on her head without breaking off her eye contact with him. "I just remember your father invited me over brainless."

"You could have said no instead of coming here, can't you see you are not welcomed here oh wise one." Jason said back.

"You could have not honored your father's invitation by coming here dumbass."

Standing up to his feet, he leaned over the table that separates them glaring at her, "I dare you to say that again!" Jason shouted, his eyes still on Rae's.

Rae stood up to her feet, leaning over the table, making their faces inches away from each other. She could see that his eyeballs weren't red yet, so she was still safe. "Is it the part I called you dumbass or the part where I said you shouldn't have honored your father's invitation, which one of them handsome boy?" Rae said with the same tone of voice Jason had used.

"Fool."

"Idiot."

"Jerk."

"Arsehole."

"Bonehead."

"Twat."

"Dipstick."

"That's enough the both of you." King Roen finally said, his son doesn't like it when he intervene, but he is still the King.

Jason and Rae stared at King Roen like he'd grown another head, breaking off their eyes contact. No one ever cut in when they were arguing with someone, for fear of their lives, Roen should be lucky that he is their King.

King Roen smiled when they both look at his direction with a deadly glare. He had just stopped a fight from happening right there in front of him.

"Now, you both lose in the staring eyes contact. And as the only living witness here, I hereby declare the both of you the winner." King Roen said and clapped his hands. None of them move as they glare at him. "Rae sit down, Jason please sit down."

"Whatever, I am leaving this minute, I can't breathe in the same air as she does." Jason said and walked angrily at them, opening the door and closed it behind him.

Snorted, Rae sat down finally.

"I am so sorry for his behavior Rae, he is always like thi-" King Reon was interrupted by the opening of the door to reveal an angry Jason walking towards them.

"I just remembered that this is my HOUSE, you should be the one leaving, and not me leaving stupid witch." Jason said stopping in Rae's presence.

"Yeah yeah like I will leave." Rae responded. "I just found out I love this place, in fact by tomorrow be expecting me and my grandmother here, we are coming here for a vacation you four legged wolf."

"Jason, please she is my invited guest, I called her here to ask her a few questions regarding the complaints the Priestess gave to me earlier today." King Roen voice interrupted anything Jason had wanted to say.

"Oh, I should have known that nincompoop was here." Jason said turning to face his father and at the same time Rae said.

"She was truly scared of the little mouse, which is me."

Her response made Jason looked at her.

"What did you do to her Rae? She said you insulted her." King Roen asked.

"Nothing my King, she asked me to touch her palm which I refuse." Rae answered staring at Jason.

"Why would she want you to touch her Palm?" King Roen demanded.

"To see if the young generations of witches will be strong."

"But that is not her business, whoever the gods chooses to bless, he or she will be blessed. Why would she even do that without my permission." King Roen said with wonder.

Standing up from her seat, she went to meet Roen and patted his shoulders gently which surprises Roen and Jason, her expression exactly like King Roen's own. "I thought the same way too my king, and to worsen my curiosity, she only did that to the witches." Rae said. "Isn't that suspicious?" She whispered lowly.

"It is, I will find out tomorrow from her." King Roen said. "She is a Priestess of all the Kingdoms, so I must ask her with wisdom."

"She is your only Priestess, not mine." Jason said to his father.

"Me too, I don't like her." Rae said after Jason.

"You don't like the Priestess too?" The question was coming out from Jason without any hint of anger in it. She has to blink her eyes and clean her ears for her to see Jason's expression and voice.

"I don't like her at all." Rae answered immediately.

That brought a genuine smile on Jason's lips.

Rae blinked her eyes a multiple times to see if she just saw Jason smile. He smiled at her without any anger on his face. Rae realized how breathtaking he looks with his smile that has begin to fade.

He had smiled at her because she hated the Priestess, does that mean he hated that stupid Priestess too? Only one way to find out.

"Do you hate her?" Rae said trying her luck.

"Do I hate her? Of course I hate her, if not for my father, I don't like seeing her at all."

Did he just replied to her without shouting, or getting angry?

"Glad that we are on the same page, I only met her today and she has run to your father to report nonsense about me." Rae said.

"She is a scared big cat who always runs to cry at my father's feet."

The room was quiet for a moment before the sound of laughter was heard.

Clearing his throat and drawing their attention to him, "Not that I'm not thrilled that you pair seem to be getting along." King Roen said, fixing both with playful stern looks. "But couldn't you have bonded over something else then laughing at the Priestess's expense?"

"Nope."

Jason and Rae both said at the same time.

"Okay, Jason, why don't you show her around the palace before taking her home." Roen suggested to his son, fearing that he may reject it but he was surprised when he heard Jason's answer.



"Okay father." Facing Rae. "Ready whenever you're bonehead."

"Give me a minute to take something from here fishhead." Rae said as she took two laps of fried chicken she will chew on her tour around the palace. "Ready."

Jason started walking out of the banquet room again, but this time, Rae was behind him.

\_\_\_\_\_

They walked in silence as they walked around the Palace, the only time Jason speak was when he wants to point something or answer a question Rae's thrown at him.

"So, how is your mother, I haven't heard from her neither have you or your father talked about her." Rae said as they started going back towards the banquet room. He was quite.

Rae thought that Jason didn't want to talk about his mother, that is why he hasn't answered her. Maybe she should change the topic.

"She is very sick." Jason finally breaks the silence.

"She is sick? How?"

"It started years ago, she couldn't talk or stand up, that useless priestess couldn't cure her yet and she calls herself a Priestess of the gods." Jason said.

"But how come no one knows about her sickness?"

"The same useless priestess told my father not to let the words out."

The words of Selena came back to Rae.

"Can you take me to her chamber, please."

"Well since you asked nicely, I will take you there." Jason said. "Hold my hand." Stretching out one of his hands to Rae who took it immediately.

He noticed how tender it was. "Close your eyes."

Rae did without any argument. Going closer to her he smiled, he realized he was getting drawn to this stubborn girl standing close to him.

He closed his eyes and his fire phoenix wings came out of his back and engulfed them.

The fire faded as they were gone.

"Open your eyes Rae." Jason said.

Rae opened her eyes and saw they were inside a chamber, she also noticed how close they were. She closed her eyes again and open it, she found herself alone and saw Jason neared a bed.

Once again, Rae found herself admiring the handsome boy. She won't wash the hand that Jason has touched for a full week.

"Here is my sick mother." Jason voice brought her out of her thoughts and she went over to meet Jason.

She saw Rosa laying helplessly on the bed, not moving.

"She is dying." Rae didn't mean to say that aloud, but she did.

"Yes, she is, I hope I can do something to cure her before death finally comes knocking." Jason said sadly. "Because I won't open the door for death."

Rae noticed the sad look on his eyes and wanted to wipe that look from his face.

Selena had told her she has the power to heal a particular sick person.

Could she be the one Selena is talking about?

Rae thought to herself.

Rosa was deadly pale, she was looking like a corpse, if not for the movement of her clothes which signify that she was breathing, one would have thought she had died.

"Do you believe in miracles Jason?" Rae asked softly as she turns to look at Jason, holding herself from reaching out to caress his handsome face, she wanted to feel Jason's touch on her, she couldn't deny her attraction.

Jason turned his head to look at her.

Why is she suddenly feeling this way towards him? Wasn't she having feelings for Jorkallun? Why is she suddenly attracted to Jason, like she wants him to continue looking at her forever.

"Of course, I do. I believe miracles can happen."

"You should know there are only two ways to live your life. One is as though nothing is a miracle. The other is as though everything is a miracle." Rae told him. "Can I touch your mother,

please Jason." This was the first time she was adding please to her words, and the first time she was telling someone. "I believe I can heal her."

She believed Selena's words.

She wants to heal Jason's mother and get closer to the handsome boy standing right in front of her.

"Okay." Jason said, if Rae was able to heal his mother, does that mean the priestess knows she could be healed elsewhere? He just has to wait.

"And when I do heal her, no one must know who healed her, not even your father, promise?"

"I promise." Jason promise. "If you can be able to heal her, I will grant any two wishes you want, that is within my powers."

Rae smiled at that.

Maybe, if she heals his mother and he asks her what she wants in return, she knows what to wish for. He had promised her he would grant her two wishes.

There are only two things on her mind and he has to grant it since she was admitting in loving him.

One wish was he has to love her.

And the second wish was,

Being friends with Jorkallun again.

Placing her two hands on Rosa forehead, she closes her eyes..

## Chapter 20

'When you run with a Doctor, it feels like it'll never end. But however hard you try you can't run forever. Everybody knows that everybody dies and nobody knows it like the Doctor. But I do think that all the skies of all the worlds might just turn dark if he ever for one moment, accepts it. Everybody knows that everybody dies. But not every day. Not today. Some days are special. Some days are so, so blessed. Some days, nobody dies at all. Now and then, every once in a very long while, every day in a million days, when the wind stands fair, and the Doctor comes to call... everybody lives, People usually consider walking on water or in thin air a miracle. But I think the real miracle is not to walk either on water or in thin air, but to walk on earth. Every day we are engaged in a miracle which we don't even recognize: a blue sky, white clouds, green leaves, curious eyes of a child—our own two eyes. All is a miracle.'

### ♥♥♥♥ THE MIRACLE HEALING ♥♥♥♥

As soon as Rae closes her eyes, she saw Selena, smiling at her. Rae saw herself beneath the water as Selena white tale swam around her, she realized she was breathing underwater.

Rae found herself smiling back.

"You have found who I wanted you to heal Rae." Selena voice drifted around her. She started circling Rae faster.

"This is your first step Rae." Selena said still smiling as she stopped her circling and stood in Rae's front. "This will be your first time of healing. The healing will drain your energy and makes you weak, are you ready Rae?" Selena asked her grandchild.

Rae nodded her head.

"Now, repeat after me."

Jason watches Rae as she placed her hands on his mother's forehead. He couldn't take off his eyes from her no matter how hard he tries too.

Something magical happened that force Jason's eyes off her to his mother.

Rae's fingers begin to glow brighter and brighter as the minutes past. Queen Rosa whole body began to glow exactly the way her fingers were glowing.

Rosa opened her mouth and black scorpions began to come out of her mouth, they were burning in fire as they crawl out of her mouth, the fire wasn't touching or hurting Rosa. The black scorpions kept crawling out faster from Rosa mouth, they tried crawling towards the hands on Rosa forehead but they were burnt along the way.

As soon as they were burnt beyond recognition, they disperse into thin air.

When no scorpions seem to be coming out from Rosa mouth, she coughed out once and black blood started coming out from her mouth.

Rae didn't know what was happening as she was still closing her eyes.

Jason who had seen what happened, quickly wiped out the blood from his mother's lips with the bedsheets.

He saw his mother's pale skin was gradually fading as her tan skin they once knew her with, begin to resurface once more again.

"The healing process has taken over." Selena voice said again. "We shall meet soon my child."

With that, Rae found herself alone and the water was gone, she opened her eyes and removed her hands from Queen Rosa forehead.

"Rae are you okay?" Jason asked worriedly as he saw how she looks.

She felt very weak, her eyes tired and sleepy, she could only nod her head before she gave in to sleep.

Jason was fast enough to catch Rae's body from hitting the ground.

The last thing that came into Rae's thought before giving in to sleep was how good she felt in Jason's arms.

His mother had coughed out black blood and whatever that was eating her inside, which are the scorpions, has been removed.

He looked at his mother and saw her breathing, her eyes now closed in sleep. He doesn't know when she will wake up, but he believed that his mother has been healed.

It's time for Rae to go home.

He carried Rae in his arms, bride style, and was starting to leave his mother's chamber when he stops.

What if he was gone and the priestess appeared to give his mother her herbs. He knows the Priestess well enough to ignore his warning and will only come when she knows his mother is alone.

Not wanting to take any chances, he made his phoenix fire wings appear, he flew and surrounded his mother with the fire from the Phoenix. No one except him can penetrate through the fire including Tamara. The fire wasn't hurting Rosa who has fallen into a deep sleep.

Once again the wings engulfed them and they vanished.

Jason appeared in the banquet room his father was, he had been waiting for them. He was worried and wondered what might have been keeping them away for almost 2 hours, it was towards midnight and Lillian would be so worried by now.

King Roen saw the girl in his sons arms and his worried face was quickly replaced by anger.

"What did you do to her Jason?" King Roen demanded angrily.

Not intimidated by his father's angry stares, he just shrugged his shoulders and brought Rae's face closer to his.

"She fainted when we were doing hide and seek games, and stopping staring at me like that, it doesn't suit you father." Jason responded.

"Okay, if that is the case then, we have to get her home fast." King Roen said, and put his right hand under the table to hit the hidden bell under it.

But Jason's voice stopped him.

"Don't worry father, I will take her there." Jason said and smiled at his father. "There is something that will happen soon father, a miracle."

Jason didn't wait to hear his father response. He just ran with his vampire speed towards Lillian's house. Being a Tribrid, he was the fastest Vampire in the entire supernaturals.

Roen was surprised when he heard those last words from his son.

What miracle was his son talking about? He thought.

He rang the bell under the table and soon two guards entered the banquet room.

"Share the remaining food amongst yourselves and clean up here, I am going to bed." King Roen told his guards and left the banquet room.

\*\*\*\*

King Darin was very impressed by what he heard from his son.

"With the way you have described her and your encounter with her, she will make a great Vampire Queen for you my son." King Darin said finally, after listening to what his son says.

"Yes father." Prince Dean said.

"Do you know her house so that I can visit her parents myself." King Darin asked his son.

"Not yet father, but I will ask Kate if she could direct me to her house, though Rae only spoke about her grandmother and not her parents." Prince Dean said.

"Very well then, find out from whom you want to find out from and give me the details." King Darin said.

"Thank you father." Prince Darin said happily.

\*\*\*\*

Tharollin breathed in short gasps as he saw the skeletons he had fought with scattered around him. His black sword vanishing in his hand as his black wings entered his body back.

He turned and started making his way towards the bones of Lucifer, he has just bent down and touched the bones of Lucifer when he started hearing the snapping sounds of bones joining together.

Stopping in his tracks, he turned around and saw the skeletons moving towards him.

"You can not take the bones of Lucifer away from here." They said together again and attacked him.

Tharollin was ready for them, he made his black sword appear and fought with the thousands skeletons.

He had destroyed all of them and they only came back to life when he touched the bones, that means it was fruitless fighting them.

An idea click on his mind and he decided to use the bones of Lucifer to fight off the skeletons. Maybe, just maybe they wouldn't rearrange their bodies once again.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jason got to Lillian's home, balancing Rae's gently with one of his hands, he knocked on the door with the free one.

Lillian didn't even wait for the knock to end when she opened the door expecting to see Rae but was surprised when she saw Jason instead and on his arms was Rae.

"What did you do to her Jason?" Lillian asked with her heart in her mouth.

"Like seriously people, why are you asking me the same question, first my father and now you." Jason said and pushed Lillian out of the way entering the house without her permission.

Lillian locked the door after him and went to meet Jason who stopped when he reaches the stairs.

"If you weren't the one who had put her in this condition, why she is like that?" Lillian demanded with one crazy witch look.

Jason was about to say 'Because she healed my mother and that probably made her weak'. But on the other hand, he thought about what he had promised Rae, it won't come out from his mouth. So he told Lillian the same flimsy excuse he had told his father.

"She fainted when we were doing hide and seek games and stop looking at me as if I am lying." Jason said.

"Are you sure of what you are saying?" Lillian asked not buying his lies.

"Believe all you what Lillian, but you have to direct me to Rae's room so that I can put her in bed, in case you don't know, your granddaughter has weight."

Lillian lead the way to Rae's room in silence, since he was obviously lying, she will have to wait until the next morning when Rae will be fully awake to know what actually happened.

Opening Rae's room, Jason went inside and dropped Rae's on her bed. He looked around the room and saw that there was nothing to see. He reminded himself she wasn't like others girls.

"Good night Jason." Lillian voice brought him back to the present.

"Yeah, good night." Jason said and open the window in Rae's room.

"What are you doing? The door is downstairs." Lillian said as she saw Jason opening the window and jumping out, ignoring Lillian totally.

The Shadow of a giant bird would be seen on the ground flying away.

Lillian went to close the window and cover Rae with her bedsheets. She quickly left the room and came in afterwards with a cup of water in her hands.



Keeping the cup of water closer to the bed for Rae to drink whenever she wakes up. She went over to Rae and kissed her forehead tenderly.

"Good night Rae." With that Lillian left the room and went towards her room to sleep. Climbing her bed, she slept off immediately.

The bright moon was suddenly covered in dark clouds.

The cup of water in Rae's room began to vibrate and the beast which Tamara had sent was seen coming out of the cup. It was very huge in size and one would have thought how the beast was able to come out of the cup, magic.

The beast whole body came out of the cup and it went nearer to Rae.

This was the girl his master wants him to occupy her body.

Circling Rae's bed two times, he climbed on the bed and wanted to lay on top of Rae, in that way, the beast will enter her body, controlling her and making her scared like his master had ordered.

The beast was surprised and jumped out of her bed in time when he saw a light in the form of a sharp sword circling Rae's body. The beast was lucky he jumped out of the bed in time, if not by now he would have lay in pieces.

The beast decided to go back and inform his master about the sword which prevented him from occupying her body.

Entering the water, he sank lower until he was out of sight. The sword circling Rae's vanished.

Michael, the Angel, who was sleeping, felt something drawing him to come down to earth. Once he was fully awake, the feeling was gone.

What just happened?

\*\*\*\*

Jason arrived home and was told by the guards that his father had gone to bed.

He left them and entered his mother's chamber. He touched the fire surrounding his mother and it went back inside him. Sitting on the chair he normally keeps beside his mother, he held one of his mother's hand and slept off, dreaming of the one person that came to his thoughts, Rae.

---

He was awake as he tried to clear his eyes from sleep with his hand, his eyes were still closed. Something had woken him up from sleep or rather someone.

"Jason."

The voice made Jason stopped in his movement. Was that is mother's voice he was hearing?

"Jason."

This time around, he knew the voice belongs to his mother.

Opening his eyes, he met the shock of his life. His mother was staring at him, she was sitting on the bed.

"Mother...are you now okay?" Jason asked.

"Yes son, I can feel my arms and body and tongue again." Queen Rosa said with a smile. "What happened? Who healed me?"

Whatever Rae had done worked. His mother has been healed, he shall forever be grateful to Rae.

With a joyful heart, he ran out of the room to his father's Chamber. The guards station there bowed as he entered the chamber without knocking.

King Roen wasn't sleeping and was surprised when he saw Jason with a wide grin he hasn't seen on him for a long time.

"What is it son, did something happen on your way to Lillian's?"

"No father, come with me quickly, that miracle I told you about has happened." Jason said and left the room without looking back, he knew his father was right behind him.

They entered Rosa room and King Roen halt in his footsteps.

He saw Rosa standing up to her feet.

She was healed. What a great miracle.

He now understands what his son had said.

With tear filled eyes, he embraces his wife. The sound of crying was heard. After a while, King Roen dispatch himself from his wife, holding her hands tenderly as he facing his son.

"What happened son?" King Roen asks Jason as he uses his other free hand to clean the tears falling off from his eyes. "Did an Angel visit her?"

## Chapter 21

'Life takes us to unexpected places... love brings us. The sun loved the moon so much, He died every night just to let her breath. There are two people you'll meet in your life. One will run a finger down the index of who you are and jump straight to the parts of you that peak their interest. The other will take his or her time reading through every one of your chapters and maybe fold corners of you that inspired them most. You will meet these two people; it is a given. It is the third that you'll never see coming. That one person who not only finishes your sentences, but keeps the book.'

♥♥♥♥ QUEEN ROSA ♥♥♥♥

Jason's face lit up with smiles as he heard his father's statement. Rae, an angel? Thinking about it, she truly is. If she wasn't, how come she healed his mother when she was just a beginner when it comes to witches magic.

"Yes father, an angel visited mother and I saw who did the miracle." Jason replied without going any further.

"Really? You saw who healed Rosa?" King Roen asked surprisingly.

"Yes father, I did." Jason answered.

"Can you tell me who did it, at least I will reward him or her for healing my queen." King Roen said hopefully as he waited for his son to reveal the angel that healed his beloved wife. What Tamara couldn't do.

"I can't say father."

"Why won't you tell your father who healed my mate?" King Roen demanded and faces his wife and asked her tenderly. "My dear Rosa, do you by any chance see who healed you?"

Rosa shook her head sideways as no, truly she didn't see her healer even know her eyes were opened.

Turning his gaze back to his son with no other option, only his son knows who healed his wife.

"Why won't you tell me son?"

"I am being guarded by an oath not to reveal the angel to anybody, and I won't break my oath." Jason said shrugged his shoulders in less concerned. His gaze landed on his mother and he smiled. "Mother, I am glad you're yourself once again."

Rosa smiled weakly at him.

King Roen saw that his son wouldn't elaborate more on the issue of the mysterious angel who had healed his wife, he gently made Rosa sit down on her bed.

"My king there is something I want to discuss with you, it's very urgent." Rosa said very weakly, her voice was not clear yet as it hasn't been used for a very long time, it was very hoarsely.

"Whatever you want to say can be said tomorrow, for now, I want you to have your sleep and rest well for me." King Roen said tenderly to his wife.

"But my king it is very importa-" she got interrupted by king Roen.

"Shhh my love, you have enough time to tell me whatever it is you want to tell me tomorrow." King Roen said. "So please rest your voice."

Rosa nodded her head, making up her mind to tell her husband everything, so she placed her head on her pillow and slept off before her head even made contact with the pillow.

Going out of the chamber, father and son walked side by side along the long hallway.

"So you won't tell me how she got healed or who the person was?" King Roen asked again trying his luck, hoping that Jason will tell him now that they were alone, perhaps, he doesn't want his mother to know who had healed her.

"Father, I won't tell you who healed her or who the person is, please, respect my decision." Jason said and without waiting to hear from his father, he vanished like he always does, into thin air.

King Roen heaved out a huge sigh and continued his way to his chamber. He just wanted to thank the said person and perhaps made whoever it was the personal assistant of Tamara.

Speaking of Tamara, he will send for her early the next day so that she could see that the gods has finally remembered his wife.

---

Jason appeared inside his room, and landed on his bed without taking off the clothes he wore. His thoughts were on Rae.

He was very curious about what wishes Rae would want him to do.

Rae, Rae, who truly is she? A normal witch couldn't heal someone overnight, let alone someone they haven't met before to know what kind of sickness they were suffering from.

Rae had just come, touch his mother and healed her without much time.

How did she do that?

There is something special about her that he couldn't wait to find, and to think he has been an asshole to her in school couldn't help matters. He can't wait to strike a friendship deal to her tomorrow at school after her wishes.

He couldn't deny the attraction he had felt with Rae when she was healing his mother. He felt like kissing her right there. He had felt a strong connection between him and Rae and couldn't understand it. He wants to be closer to her, to know her likes and dislikes, in fact every little thing about her.

Giving in slowly to sleep, he couldn't wait for tomorrow to come so he could tell Rae how her healing magic hands works.

He smiled into his sleep as the thought of seeing Rae in school the next day filled him with happiness.

\*\*\*

Tamara was in the larger cave when she senses the creature coming. She left whatever she was doing and went back into that smaller cave, she walked towards the bowl of water as the beast head emerged from the bowl.

"What happened? Why are you not occupying her body yet?" Tamara thunder in anger.

"The child has a protection." The beast spoke, his voice was hideous and wasn't pleasant to the ears. His voice vibrated the cave as he spoke.

"That can't be possible." Tamara said not believing the beast. "A protection? Are you lying to me?"

"I am not lying to you, I have never failed any of your assignment before, but I am afraid I can't do this one, she has a protection that couldn't let me get close to her, I am sorry I failed you."

The beast was right, he hasn't fail her before so she should stop her doubt.

"Fine, you can leave, I will send for you again when I need you." Tamara said and spoke some magic words. "Return back to where you came from."

The water in the bowl raised and covered the beast head completely..

Tamara went back to her cave and start searching through her books for a spell.

A spell she might use on Rae.

\*\*\*

Rae woke up as usual, feeling refreshed. She remembered everything that happened the previous night and smiled to herself.

Though she was weak and fell asleep, but she could still hear what was going on around her. It was as if she wasn't there but was there. She tried to open her eyes to see how Jason's face looked like when he was telling his lies.

She heard the flimsy excuse Jason had given to his father and her grandmother.

Did his eyes narrowed when he was answering them that they were playing hide and seek? She couldn't tell.

She had also heard a strange noise that seemed to move around her bed later in the night, but couldn't point out where it was coming from.

Well, today she was going to find out if truly it had worked. She couldn't wait to see Jason.

Doing her business in the bathroom, she came out dressed in one of her boyish clothes. Combing her long hair and put it in a ponytail like she saw Jason did last night.

She took the full cup of water her granny had kept for her and left for the kitchen. Taking the stairs two at go and heading straight for the kitchen, she stopped when she saw her granny coming out of the kitchen with a plate of food, broth. Passing her the food as she collected the cup of water from Rae.

"Good morning grandma." Rae greeted as she collected the plate and leaned over to kiss her grandma's cheek.

"Morning Rae." Lillian said as she kissed Rae's forehead. "You didn't drink the water?"

"Wasn't feeling tasting when I woke up." Rae said as she went to sit in her chair, Lillian went back to the kitchen to drop the cup. Eating her broth quickly so that she won't be late for school, Lillian soon came out of the kitchen and sat next to Rae hoping that Rae start talking about what happened the previous night.

"Jason brought you home yesterday night in his arms." Lillian started the conversation since her granddaughter suddenly find her almost plate interesting. "Would you mind telling me what happened between the both of you that you ended up in his arms sleeping?"

"Nothing happened granny." Rae said.

"Well I don't believe that young lady, if nothing happened between the both of you, then how did you end up in his arms, did you fight with him?"

"Granny, if something like that had happened, wouldn't I told you about it before you'd ask?" Rae said, she couldn't tell her grandmother yet that she saw a mermaid who then told her to heal a sick person which she later got to know was the queen of the supernaturals.

"So you're telling me you didn't fight with Jason?" Lillian asked again.

"Fight? We didn't, we only have an argument and became friends later on, we then decided to play hide and seek and I fell asleep. I didn't want to admit to him how tired I was so I agreed to his game." The lies rolled easily out of Rae's mouth. Come to think of it, was she and Jason even friends?

Well she will find out today in school. Though she couldn't wait to see Jason, another part of her also couldn't wait to see Jorkallun.

Finishing up her food, she stood up to go and wash it but Lillian stopped her.

"Don't worry about that, give me the plate, you need to start going to school." Lillian said as she took the plate from her.

"Thank you granny." Rae said in appreciation.

A portal opened and Rae entered it.

"Don't forget to touch your bracelet once school closes." Lillian said after her as the portal started getting smaller and smaller before it vanished.

\*\*\*\*

Jason was all dressed for school, he couldn't wait to tell Rae the miracle that happen.

He heard a knock on his door and a voice he recognized so well said.

"My Prince, your father request for your presence immediately at the throne room." The guard said in an audible voice.

"I am coming." Jason replied as he heard the retreating steps of the guard.

Why would his father wants to see him early this morning? Doesn't he know that today is school and he doesn't want to be late?



A voice was telling him in his head 'that's a lie, you aren't going to school early because you don't want to be late. You're going to see her.'

Dismissing the voice in his head to one side, he stepped out of his room and headed straight to throne room.

He was greeted by the servants littering around the palace hall. The guards stationed at the door of the throne room greeted him.

Nodding his head to their greetings, he opened the door and entered inside.

He saw his father and his one enemy, Tamara.

"Good morning father, what is she doing here?" Jason demanded after he greeted him, ignoring the Priestess totally.

"She came to give Rosa her herbs but I told her she was healed. She couldn't believe it." King Roen told his son. He had wanted to send a message to the Priestess with the magic pen he normally used whenever he needed her attention, but was surprised when he saw her early this morning with herbs.

"What then is my business if she doesn't believe?" Jason asked with a boring expression.

"She ask to know who had healed Rosa." King Roen said.

Jason laughed out surprising them, "And you think I will tell Tamara who healed my mother?" Jason asked looking at Tamara like she has two heads.

"Well, yes." King Roen admitted.

"I have not told you or mother yet and you expect me to tell Tamara." Jason said pointing at Tamara. "I thought she was a Priestess, she ought to know all things." Jason mocked.

"At least tell me if the healer was a he or she, I would love to know the healer gender." This time Tamara voice was heard.

Snorting and turn his gaze on her. "As if." He returned his gaze back to his father. "Have got to go father, I am already late for school."

Jason vanished after he said that.

"I hate it when he does that." King Roen said. "I have things I want to discuss with you my Priestess." King Roen said, his conversation with Rae still fresh on his mind.

"We will discuss after I have seen your wife, my sister."

"Okay, you know where she is."

The Priestess left without a reply.

—

Entering Rosa chamber, she saw the queen, dressed in her queenly attire that shows her as a royalty, and she was walking around without any help.

Queen Rosa wasn't surprised when she saw Tamara, she smiled sweetly at her.

"Hello, good to see you." Queen Rosa said with a smile embedded on her face.

"I see you're healed Rosa." Tamara said with a cold expression.

"Yes Tamara and I am back to my feet, surprise?"

"Such guts, well did you by any chance happen to see this angel that healed you?" Tamara asked.

"No, and even if I did, I won't tell you. I will expose all your evil doings to Roen once I see him." Queen Rosa said.

"Go on and explain to him, tell him the whole truth Rosa, you should know as soon as you have finished exposing us, I will remove the mate magic I place on Roen into thinking you were his mate." Tamara said with a smirk.

That shut Rosa up, that was her biggest fear. Roen will never forgive her if he finds the truth that they weren't mate.

"I won't tell Roen the truth then, but you should know my son will never get married to Lolly. I will tell them I mistakenly wrote it." Queen Rosa said after a while.

"You wouldn't dare Rosa, I put you where you are today and you shall do as I say, or else..."

Interrupting Tamara. "Or else what? Kill me? I am not scared of you anymore Tamara, as you can see, I have a guardian angel who will protect me." Queen Rosa said speaking about the unknown healer.

"You don't know who I am Rosa, I am Tamara, the Priestess of the Supernaturals and my word is law." Tamara said with fury in her eyes.

"And I am the Queen of the whole Supernaturals and my word is final." Rosa said with the same matching Expression. "Jason will Not marry Lolly."

## Chapter 22

'Do not watch the petals fall from the rose with sadness, know that, like life, things sometimes must fade, before they can bloom again. At the beach, life is different... Time doesn't move hour to hour but mood to moment... We live by the currents, plan by the tides and follow the sun....I may not be someone's first choice, but I'm a great choice. I may not be rich, but I'm valuable. I don't pretend to be someone I'm not, because I'm good at being me. I might not be proud of some of the things I've done in the past, but I'm proud of who I am today. I may not be perfect, but I don't need to be. Take me as I am or watch me as I walk away!'

♥♥♥♥ MY TWO WISHES ♥♥♥♥

Tamara gave out a short laugh.

"You don't know anything Rosa, in case you have forgotten, you are just a slave I helped in becoming the queen." Tamara said.

"That may be true, I am a slave you helped, agreed, but now my eyes are opened and I now know my left from right." Queen Rosa told Tamara.

"Rosa, don't bite the Fingers that feed you, Lolly will marry Jason and that's final." Tamara said with finality.

"Says who? You? Tamara, I have told you that I am not scared of you anymore. If my healer didn't come in time to save me, you would have left me dead, but the gods were by my side and allowed me to live." Rosa said and moved towards Tamara, standing right in front of the Priestess without any hint of fear. "I won't tell Roen what happened or tell him you were the cause of my illness, I can obey you on that part Tamara, but you this very one of Jason getting married to Lolly, I won't support you."

Tamara felt enraged, how could a slave she had picked and told her all her plans decided to backslide now? If only the unknown healer hasn't healed her, she won't have the guts to talk back at her.

"You have grown wings Rosa, we shall see who wins."

"Tamara, even the darkest night will end and the sun will rise, my time has come, I won't be that dumb Rosa you always control, this is my son life we are speaking here, he will marry whosoever he chooses to marry and Lolly won't be forced on him."

Tamara nodded her head.

"Perhaps the healer gave you the ability to speak to me without any fear again." Tamara said still nodding her head. "We shall see who wins."

With that being said, Tamara left with a huff going back to see King Roen still in his throne room.

"Did you examine her to check if truly the illness are gone for good?" King Roen asked once the Priestess stepped her foot inside the throne room.

"Yes I did and I believe the strange illness is gone completely." Tamara said with a forced smile.

Smiling in relief, "Thanks to the gods who showed me mercy." King Roen said praising the gods.

"Of course your majesty." Tamara said. "You said you wanted to discuss something with me."

"Yes I do." King Roen said and move towards his throne chair and pointed at an empty chair beside him. "Come sit with me Tamara, whatever I want to discuss with you can't be said while standing."

Sited, she turn her gaze towards Roen. "What is it my king?"

"I asked Rae to come here yesterday night." King Roen began. "She said she didn't insult you."

"Of course she would lie."

"Not only that, she told me something which I want to confirm from you." Roen said.

"And what can that be?" She asked.

"Why are you checking on only the witches, I mean we have a lot of creatures living around us, and out of all of them, you choose to start from the top three best supernaturals, why is that Tamara?"

"It is the way the gods want it, they wanted me to know how powerful this generation will be." Tamara lied.

"Why did you not inform me about this? At least I would have sent a word around informing everyone of your coming."

"I am sorry it won't happen again."

"It had better not happen again, I hate to be left in the dark."

"Of course, what about Rae's punishment, will she still be punished for insulting me?"

"No she won't, though I apologise on her behalf."

Forcing back the smile to appear in her face, she could only nod, because opening her mouth might result her saying things which she wasn't supposed to say.

"I shall take my leave now." She managed to say as she stood up from the chair.

"Okay great priestess of the gods." King Roen said. "And do not forget to leave the girl alone, I have talked to her and she will be on her best behavior." He added, he couldn't tell Tamara, that he, Rae and Jason had dinner together last night.

Tamara could only nod her head and left the throne room.

A minute later, Roen also left the throne room walking towards his mate chamber.

\*\*\*\*

Sarah gasped for breath when she lifted her head for air, her blue tail shiny like that of crystal from the little light from the morning sun through the window. She was under the water for close to an hour, it has been long she had done that.

Seeing the early morning sun, Sarah remembered that today was another for school.

Removing some of her blue long hair out of her face, she whispered some words and blue tail was replaced with her human legs as she gets up from the bath tube.

Quickly wearing her clothes, blue jeans and top, she checked herself in the mirror on the wall of the bathroom, and quickly ponytail her hair. Looking at herself with pride, she knows she was beautiful, she was a very strong warrior in the Great Sea of Nile. Opening a little seashell, a blue light in a tiny ball started floating in mid air. She touches it with a finger and the blue ball shone alongside her blue eyes, what she just did was to enhance the spells in it since Jorkallun said he could sense a hidden spell in her. She opened her mouth a little bit wide and the tiny blue ball entered her mouth.

Once she swallowed it, her appearance changes to the shy timid Sarah everyone knows. Her blue eyeballs and hair were replaced with black.

Looking at herself once more on the mirror as the changes occurs, in this form, she was beautiful though not as beautiful as in her mermaid form.

Her father was a centaur creature, half human and horse, that was why she had told Rae earlier that she was a centaur creature.

Opening the door of the bathroom and letting herself out, she walked over to where her grandmother was sited in a rocking chair, sewing a torn cloth with needle.

She pecked the old lady on her cheeks, Sarah had made the old lady believe she was her granddaughter with a little help of magic.

"I am going to school now grandma." Sarah shouted behind her as she made her way out of the house.

She couldn't wait to see Rae today and of course her crush Jorkallun.

\*\*\*\*

Tamara appeared outside her cave, her face was filled with the most angriest look no one has ever seen, she couldn't wait to summon her master and tell him what was going on. Rosa has the guts to talk back at her.

Rae punishment will have to wait for now because Rosa has just taken her place.

It was as if the water man had read her mind because the next thing she knows, she saw the water man next to her.

"What is it Tamara, why is your face like that?" The water man asked.

Kneeling down and bowing her head, "Rosa has been healed my Lord." Tamara said.

"What? That's impossible." The water man bellowed in anger. Who could have healed her?

"I saw her with my eyes my Lord, she was hale and hearty and even talk back at me."

"I still can't believe it, Rosa healed not by you, right?"

"No my Lord, I didn't cure her, someone else did."

"How can someone heal the sickness I placed on her?" The water man said in wonder. "Did they tell you who did it?"

"No my Lord, Rosa didn't see the face of the healer, the only person who knows the identity of the healer is Jason."

"Jason?" The water man asked to know if he heard right.

"Yes Jason, I asked him but he couldn't tell me who the healer was."

"It will be very difficult to get the information out of him." The water man said.

"Yes, you know he is immune to our powers."

"I know that Tamara, I am just thinking why I didn't know the child would become a tribrid, I only thought he would be born as a millennium wolf and we would use that position into making him believe he is destined to sacrifice the last mermaid." The water man said.

"We are going to find a way to break off his wings my Lord, my problem is Rosa, she plans on telling the king the truth, but I threatened her a little bit and that shut her up." Tamara told the water man.

"Good."

"We should kill her and get on with our plans my Lord." Tamara suggested.

"You just said she was healed by someone who is not you, right?"

"Yes my Lord."

"Then what makes you think we can be able to kill her?" The water man demanded as Tamara couldn't find a perfect answer for that. "So you see, we have to first of all find whoever that heal Rosa and the last mermaid and kill them at once, I feel my bones, he is coming."

\*\*\*\*

The portal opened right in front of the school gate and Rae stepped out of it, she ignored the looks she was getting and entered the school compound. Wow, a lot of students came early.

She saw Sarah first who was heading towards her with a little smile on her face.

"Hello Rae." Sarah greeted shyly.

"Hello Sarah, how are you?" Rae asked as she flung her hands on Sarah's shoulders and they started walking into their history class.

"Hope you didn't cause any trouble yesterday?" Sarah asked.

"Nah, and even if I did, I can handle any problem that comes my way." Rae said with a bright smile.

"Yeah I know, you have already demonstrated that when you fought with the Amazon's." Sarah said with a smile.

Rae was about to say something when she got interrupted by the voice she was dying to hear since. She pauses in her tracks together with Sarah.



"Rae!" Jason shouted again drawing the attention of all the students including the teachers who have to peep through their Office door to see why Roen's son has called out Rae first.

It was as if the whole school was frozen as they all saw Jason walking towards the two girls.

If possible the trees stopped their swinging.

"Hello Rae." Jason said as soon as he was an arm length with Rae, ignoring Sarah totally.

"Hi Jason." Rae said smiling at him.

Jason return the smile with one of his own. They both stared at each other for sometime, both lost in each other's eyes before Sarah's fake throat clearing brought them back to the present.

"I came here to thank you for what you did." Jason said glaring at Sarah who backed off away immediately leaving both of them alone.

Even in her mermaid form, she was no match for Jason, everyone knows that.

Mr Jack who was among the few teachers who was peeping through their office started coughing out, he nearly fell off from his chair since he was using it as a supporting height to look at his two stubborn students. Did he heard right? Did Jason just thank Rae, as in Rae?

Returning his gaze once more on Rae he saw her looking at him with amusement.

"What?" Jason demanded.

"Nothing handsome boy, I was just thinking and I am not telling, so did it work?" Rae asked knowing why he was thanking her.

Smiling brightly, "Yeah it did work, thank you." Jason said, pretending as if he couldn't remember the wishes, he pretends he was leaving her presence. He was hoping she stops him and remind him of her wishes.

"You promised to do something for me if it works Out." Rae said as soon as she saw his back. Does he forgets things easily?

Hiding a smile as his gaze landed on Rae. "Oh, I totally forgot about it." He said. "Come with me to my class where we can discuss privately without the students eavesdropping on our conversations." He added as his eyes scanned the whole building. "Jack I can see you."

Mr Jack who was in haste to get out of the window fell down flat.

"Are you coming with me or not?" Jason asked.

"You haven't lead the way yet, how can I follow you blockhead." Rae teased.

"Oh no more fishhead, I am now blockhead." Jason said smirking.

"Yes, fishhead sounded old fashioned so I came up with blockhead." Rae responded with a matching smirk.

If the students were shocked before, they were now speechless as they saw Jason talking with the tone he had never used before even on Lolly.

"Whatever, your name still remains bonehead." Jason said walking towards the direction of his class.

Rae followed him.

—

Sarah wasn't surprised when she saw Jorkallun alone in the class when the rest of the students were staring at Jason and Rae.

She went over to sit. Why won't Jorkallun noticed her for once? She thought.

"Hello Sarah."

Sarah could feel her heart beating faster than before as she heard his voice. She turned her head to face Jorkallun.

"Hello Jorkallun, I have told you I am on the good side." Sarah said rolling her eyeballs, though her heart was beating much faster now.

Jorkallun smiled and Sarah find herself blushing.

Jorkallun was one of her reasons she was still here apart from Rae.

"I wasn't talking about that, I know you were saying the truth. I am glad you tighten the spells that is concealing your hidden identity." Jorkallun said with a smile as he regarded the beauty before him and stared into her eyes.

Sarah couldn't remove her eyes from Jorkallun no matter how hard she tries, she was glad her crush was staring at her for the first time.

This would be the third time he was just seeing her face, and she looks breathtaking. Jorkallun thought, breaking off their eyes contact, he placed his head on his desk pretending to sleep.

---

Entering his class that looks almost like hers. She sat down on the only chair in the class.

"Hey that's my chair and I haven't ask you to sit yet." Jason said, though not in a angry manner.

"None of my business handsome boy." Rae responded with a roll of her eyeballs.

"So what are your wishes?" Jason asked immediately, he couldn't wait any more. He was dying to know her wishes.

"Well my two wishes are....."

## Chapter 23

'Love is like a tree: it grows by itself, roots itself deeply in our being and continues to flourish over a heart in ruin. The inexplicable fact is that the blinder it is, the more tenacious it is. It is never stronger than when it is completely unreasonable. When love has fused and mingled two beings in a sacred and angelic unity, the secret of life has been discovered so far as they are concerned; they are no longer anything more than the two boundaries of the same destiny; they are no longer anything but the two wings of the same spirit. Love, soar.'

### ♥♥♥♥ MY TWO WISHES (PART 2) ♥♥♥♥

"Well, my two wishes are..." Rae said drawing 'are' longer. "If I tell you my two wishes, you must promise me you will fulfill them no matter how hard it is." Rae said all of sudden, she has to be sure Jason will carry out her two wishes. And he has too, especially her second wish.

"I promise, now get on with it, I don't have all day, in case you haven't noticed I am the one standing and not you." Jason said pretending as if he wasn't really interested in hearing her wishes, in fact his tone sounded like he was hurrying her to spit it out and get the hell out of his class.

"Okay, my first wish is to fall in love with a girl." Rae said finally, she doesn't want to let Jason know she was the girl yet.

"Fall in Love with a girl?" Jason question, his handsome features were filled with a frown. He wasn't expecting that, he thought she was going to ask him to be friends with her and not this one, and now, he has fucking given out his words to keep his promise. "Who is this 'girl' you want me to fall in love with?" Jason asked his frown deepened even more as he mentioned the word 'girl'.

Rae smiled at his expression, she won't let him know 'the girl' was her, placing a finger on her lips as if she was about telling the biggest secret ever. "It's a secret and you will get to know the girl though me."

"Is there no other option than me falling in love with a girl I haven't seen?"

"There is no other option, beside you know the girl."

"Why won't there be a second op-" stopping midway as what Rae said digest fully into him. "I know her?"

"Yes, as a matter of fact you do, she goes to this school, she is my friend." Rae said.

"Your friend...." Jason's eyes narrowed into slits as he remembers the other girl with Rae. "I hope you're not talking about the girl I saw you with because if it is, then I am going for the second wish."

"Nope, she is not the one I am talking about, she is a different friend, don't worry, with time you will come to know her." Rae assured him with a smile, she was feeling nervous telling Jason the truth.

"But what if I refuse to fall in love with her, what if I am in love with someone else?" Jason asked holding himself from saying. 'why can't the girl be you.'

"Trust me you will." Rae said with a mischievous smile. "And if you don't do as she asks you to do, I will redo what I did yesterday, I hope you understand what I mean."

"Okay, it's your wish as long as it pleases you, so what about the second wish?" Jason asked as Rae smirked, seeing that, he uses one of his palms and gently touched his forehead. "Please don't tell me the second wish is for a guy."

"Actually, it is, I want you to become friends with a guy who is my friend."

Groaning, he nodded his head.

"Okay, so who is this guy?" Jason asked.

"You know him already." Was Rae simple reply.

"Don't start with that again, I don't know anyone in this school." Jason said in annoyance.

"You do know this guy, he was your friend, your very best friend, and I will like to rekindle that friendship between the both of you again."

Realisation hits Jason harder than he could imagine as he knew who Ra was talking about.

"No I can not do that." Jason said in a low voice.

"Why is that?"

"You don't know the genesis of our story and that's why we can never be friends." Jason said. How can he and Jorkallun become friends after he had betrayed him, well it wasn't his doing.

"Yes you can be friends with him again."

"He won't even talk to me." Jason said, you could see in his eyes how he missed his friend.

"Just start with a simple 'Hello or Please Forgive me' to him everyday instead of ignoring him, you both are hurting yourselves without knowing it. He told me everything Jason, and I realized that the fault was not from him but you." Rae said, this was the first time she said his name and she loved how it feels on her lips.

"You just called out my name." Jason said smiling, the way she had said his name almost turn him on. Different images of him and Rae kissing filled his head, he tried to get it out of his head but couldn't, one of the most disturbing images of all was when he saw Rae bend over his desk as he fuck her hard from behind, she was moaning out his name and was telling him to go faster and harder. He nearly moan out but pressed his lips tighter.

What is wrong with him all of a sudden?

"What is wrong?" The soft concern voice of Rae draw him out of his sinful thoughts. "Why are you holding your head?" Touching his head to check his temperature.

Jason noticed two things, one, indeed his two hands were by the side of his head, Rae was standing close to him, very very close to him and her hands were on him. He could feel his wolf trying to take over his body. This was the first time his wolf was acting this way.

Very strange.

Looking at Rae he quickly closed his eyes, the things he wanted to do right now as she was standing close to her, couldn't be explained.

He shifted back a little bit distancing himself and the girl he saw himself fucking, his eyes were closed when he moved back and didn't see the hurt look on Rae's face.

Rae felt hurt when Jason shifted back, she felt her heart breaking a million pieces when he did that. Doesn't he want her touch?

Rae quickly covered up her hurt look when she saw Jason eyes open.

"What did you do to me?" Jason asked slowly, he was very confused. Why was he having a fantasy of him and Rae having hot sex? What was happening to him?

"I don't know what you mean by that?" Rae voice was filled in confusion.

"Yesterday, did you by any chance use something on me, like a spell or something related to it?" He has to know, he couldn't just wake up and see Rae and start imagining things, things he wants to do to Rae right now. He took all of his will power not to let his wolf take over him.

"No." Rae answered not understanding why he was asking her such a strange question. "I have never used my magic for evil once. Jason, are you okay?" Rae asked softly as she licked her sudden dry lips, he was behaving strangely.

His eyes couldn't leave her lips as he wants to grab her and kissed her so hard. She had said his name again, and he couldn't hide the effect it had on him, he was very hard and he hoped Rae didn't see his hard on.

He wants Rae, he wants her badly, he wants her only for himself.

What is wrong with him?.

"Rae." Jason said, trying to hold himself from lunging forward and hold her captive forever in his bed.

"Yes Jason." Rae said yawning.

Jason couldn't stop himself from imagining as Rae kneel down in front of him, his d\*\*k in her mouth as she deepthroat his entire length into her mouth and he face f\*\*k her, sinful thoughts.

Why is he thinking of this now?

If only she knew what his name from her mouth does to him, she would distance herself away from him. Breathing in slowly as he tried to steady his breath.

"Please leave right now, I will give you an answer to your second wish tomorrow, please Rae don't ask me why." Jason pleaded unlike him.

Something is tearing this handsome boy up, she nodded her head without pushing any further. "Okay, I will be expecting your answer tomorrow." Rae said heading towards the class door. "See you around Jason." She opened the door and almost all the students fall down flat, they were embarrassed for being caught eavesdropping. They quickly stood up from the floor and ran to their various classes, within a twinkle of an eye, no students were seen.

Looking back at Jason, she sent him a smile and left the class, closing the door behind her.

Jason breathed out in relief as soon as Rae closes the door, his wolf strangely calming down. If Rae hasn't left at that moment, his d\*\*k would have brought all his fantasies to life.

He doesn't know what's wrong with him, but he has to find out why he was suddenly feeling that way towards Rae.

---

Kate wasn't surprised when she saw Dean leaning against the threshold of the library outside the door, waiting for her as usual.

She smiled at him when she walked up to him which he returned.

Kate who has an average height and also beautiful count herself lucky to be dating a Vampire Prince.

Grabbing her by her waist, he pulled her towards himself and kissed her on her lips, lifting her higher, he ran with vampire speed to the back of the library.

Once they were out of sight, he turned her to face the wall and lifted up her short dress up, bending her over, without wasting much time, he unzipped his shorts and brought out his already hardened length which was hardened by the thought of a girl, and without warning, he shoved his entire length into the wetness of Kate.

He started thrusting hard with his vampire speed into Kate as the slapping of skins was heard and the minutes went by. He couldn't stop himself from imagining Kate to be Rae right now, fuckking her like this.

His thrusts going faster and harder as the thought of a naked Rae filled his head.

He really wished Rae should pass this way like she did a few days ago when she caught them kissing.

Focusing on Kate who was moaning so loudly forgotten that they were outside, she screamed out as she finally reached her orgasm, holding her waist in a tight grip he pounded into her like a wild animal.

And finally, he pulled out at the last minute and pouring out his sperm on the ground.

Cleaning themselves up, Dean gave Kate a peck. They started off towards Kate's house.

"You don't like pouring your seeds in me Dean, I have told you I am capable of carrying your children." Kate said.

"I know that Kate, I am not ready to be a father now, don't worry, I will make it up to you." Dean said smiling though not reaching his eyes.

Smiling too, "I can't wait to have your children Dean." Kate said happily.

"So do you know where that girl lives?" Dean asked out of the blue.

"What girl?"



"The one who had walked on us making out some days ago, I think you called her Rae or something related to that."

"Yes Dean, her name is Rae." Kate response. "But why are you asking of her?"

"I reported what she did and my father wants to summon her, to warn her so that she would not try such a thing to someone else again." Dean said convincely.

"Okay, I will show you the path that leads to her house." Kate said in a singing voice. "At least someone has to teach her how to respect other's privacy and mind her business."

Nodding his head in agreement, he kept quiet thinking of seeing Rae as Kate started blabbing how their children will look cute.

\*\*\*\*

Lolly heard the whispering going around her as she made her way to Jason's class.

Entering it without knocking.

"What is this thing I am hearing?" Lolly demanded angrily.

"What things have you heard?" Jason demanded.

"That you and that stupid girl spend close to two hours locked up in this class."

Was it up to two hours? Shrugging his shoulders. "We were talking Lolly." Jason said trying to be polite to her.

"Talking? For close to two hours!" This time Lolly shouted in an angry voice, the school walls surrounding the entire school started cracking.

"Lolly, if the walls break more than they have, I will personally have them expelled you from this school." Jason said in a much calmer voice.

—

Rae quickly blocked Jorkallun path, preventing him from going outside the classroom.

"What is it Rae?" Jorkallun asked softly.

"Will you ever forgive Jason if he comes to beg you for forgiveness?"

Jorkallun eyes flashes in anger. "Don't ever call that name to me." And made to leave the sudden quiet room but was stopped by Sarah's voice.

"Forgiveness is a gift you give yourself. The first to apologize is the bravest. The first to forgive is the strongest. And the first to forget is the happiest Jorkallun." Sarah said.

Supporting her friend. "Sarah is right Jorkallun, It takes a strong person to say sorry, and an even stronger person to forgive. At least for my sake if you truly consider me as your little sister, hear him out, there might have been a reason why it happened."

She wants the two friends to get along once again. She suddenly realized how the word little sister sounded to her. For once, she wasn't angry that he sees her like his younger sister.

"I will think about it Rae, Sarah." With that he left them, one with open mouth wide and the other one smiling.

"Close your mouth before you swallow a fly." Rae teased her friend.

"He called me by my name." Sarah said in sudden happiness, her crush just called her by her name.

"I wasn't having hearing problems, what's the big deal if he calls out your name."

"Never mind, let's go to our next class." Sarah said still smiling brightly.

## Chapter 24

'He that cannot forgive others breaks the bridge over which he himself must pass if he would ever reach heaven; for everyone has need to be forgiven. Inner peace can be reached only when we practice forgiveness. Forgiveness is letting go of the past, and is therefore the means for correcting our misperceptions, we win by tenderness. We conquer by forgiveness. Confront the dark parts of yourself, and work to banish them with illumination and forgiveness. Your willingness to wrestle with your demons will cause your angels to sing.

♥♥♥♥♥ THE ROSES ♥♥♥♥♥

That silent Lolly for a while before she burst out in anger.

"You will ask the school to expel me!" Lolly shrieked out in terror. "Your bride to be?"

"You heard me right Lolly, whatever or whoever I talk to is none of your business." Jason said.

"I demand an explanation right now Jason, why did you bring her here? I am supposed to be the only one you allowed here and no one else." Lolly bellowed in anger.

"There are no rules of such here and you weren't the one who built this school, and even if you did build it, you don't own me Lolly."

"Yes I do Jason, I own you and you know that."

For once, he didn't like the way his name sounded from Lolly.

"You don't know what you are talking about Lolly." Jason said and sighed out, getting up from his seat he went over to meet her, stopping in front of her. "Why did you even agreed to this arranged marriage in the first place knowing fully well I don't love you?"

"That's because I love you Jason and I will do everything to make you mine." Lolly said possessively as she closed the distance between them, she was reaching his shoulder height, though she wasn't short.

"What if tomorrow you met a guy who is your mate, and you are still engaged to me, what will you do?"

"I will leave him for you, you are all I need and want Jason, why are you so blind to see that?" Lolly said bringing one of her hands up and started caressing his face, the other one placed on his chest.

"This discussion is over Lolly." Jason said removing her fingers from his face and moving back gently, giving them enough space. "Get out."

Huffing out in anger. "This isn't over yet Jason, you will come to love me, I swear you will." With that Lolly walked out of the class.

Jason shook his head as he watched the retreating back of Lolly, he will have to ask his mother why she had asked him to get married to Lolly all of a sudden.

Thinking of his mother healing brought back Rae's memory to him.

He smiled.

\*\*\*\*

School have closed as everyone made their way out of their classes.

Rae and Sarah were seen walking out of a class together.

"Do you think he will forgive him?" Sarah finds herself asking.

"Why won't he, once they are friends again, all the awkwardness in the air whenever they cross each other part will vanish." Rae said a little bit happy.

"Do you think Jorkallun still loves Lolly?" Sarah suddenly ask feeling sad. What if Jorkallun forgives Jason and Jason tells him to take back Lolly, what will she do?

What if he still loves Lolly? What if he was just talking to her because of Rae?

So many what if ran through her mind as she awaits her friend reply.

"I don't think so my friend, he doesn't love Lolly anymore." Rae said.

Feeling a little bit better by that information, "But how did you know he doesn't love Lolly? Do you now see into the heart of everyone?" Sarah asked smiling.

"No but I wish I did, there is one particular boy I would have tested it on." Rae replied thinking of Jason. "Anyway, he told me that himself."

"He told you that?" Sarah asked. "When was that?"

"When I wasn't in school for almost a week, he told what happened between them." Rae answered. "Why do I have this feeling that you have a crush on one of them?"

"Well to be sincere with you Rae, I do have a crush on one of them."

"Who can that be?" Rae asked hoping it wasn't Jason but Jorkallun, she doesn't want to have Sarah as one of her new enemies, but within her, she knows it was Jorkallun.

"It's a secret and we are being heard, don't worry you will get to know him soon."

"Okay if you say so, but I will advise you to open up your feelings to your crush, tell him how you feel, who knows, the gods might surprise you with his answers." Rae suggested to her, she has seen the look between them.

"I don't think he will return my love back." Sarah said sadly.

"You never know unless you try." Rae said as she touches her bracelet and a portal opened. "I can't wait for tomorrow to come." Rae added with a smile and enter the portal.

Sarah waved until the portal closes before running towards the direction of her house.

Maybe she could do what Rae had suggested. Telling Jorkallun of her crush she has for him for a long time.

She hopes it won't turn out badly.

\*\*\*\*

Appearing in his room, Jason quickly took a shower and change his clothes he had worn to school. He went out to look for his mother. He first went to the throne room and saw only his father sitting down, thankfully, he was alone and was going through a scroll in his hands. Closing the large Oak door behind him, he went over to meet him, greeting his father, he quickly ask for his mother.

"She might be in the flower garden or in her chamber, I left her in her room some hours ago, though she told me she planned on visiting her garden since it's been long she step her foot there." King Roen replied his son. "I hope there is no problem? Or did something happen in school?"

"No father no problem, I just want to see her." Jason responded and turned to leave heading towards the door and was already opening it when he stops and turns his gaze back to his father who has been watching him also.

"Father."

"Yes Jason."

"Can I ask you a question?"

"Yes son, go ahead and ask, that's what I am here for." King Roen reply.

"How do you feel whenever you're near your imprint (mate)?"

Surprised by that question, King Roen answered with a smile. "My wolf always goes crazy and would want to do things with her. Why are you asking?"

"Nothing, I just wanted to know. Father how do one even recognizes his or her mates?" Jason throws in another question.

"Well, your wolf will know. When you imprint on someone, you would do anything to be with that person. The moment the shapeshifter sees the one they are destined to be with, they imprint. It is described as having every connection with everything else severed and instead being only connected to this earth for the other person. After that, nobody else matters because you are only there for your other half, your soul mate and sometimes you have a fantasy about him or her, they will be in your every thoughts." King Roen said with a smile remembering Rosa as he spoke.

It is now making sense to him, what if his wolf had recognized Rae as his mate? Was that why he was having trouble controlling his wolf and couldn't stop himself from having such wild fantasies about them?

He was going to find out if truly he was Rae's mate.

"Why are you asking me, did something happen?" King Roen voice brought him back to the present.

"No father, nothing happened, I just wanted to know more about wolves imprinting." Jason replied.

"Okay, I have even forgotten that the Priestess had said your kind doesn't have mates." King Roen said as he remembered the words of the Priestess.

"Everyone is blessed to have someone who connects with you in life father, and besides that, I don't believe a word coming out from her mouth." Jason said. "Thank you father for your information about imprints, it really cleared up some things." He added with a smile.

"Any time son." King Roen said, he was happy his son asked him.

Nodding his head, he left the throne room and went over to his mother chamber, he was told she wasn't in her chamber but in the garden.

He quickly left and went towards the direction of the garden. He met his mother there who was smiling as she walked from one flower to another watering them and whispering some kind words to them.

He coughs out a little bit to alert his presence which capture Rosa attention.

"Hello son." Rosa said dropping her water can she was holding on the ground, she opened her arms and without being told Jason walk right into her arms, embracing her, Jason was taller than her, he was just like his father.

She was the only one Jason had shown his soft side.

"How was school today?" Rosa asked as they dispatch themselves and she bend down to pick her water can and start watering the flowers again.

"It was fine mother." Jason answered. "Your love for this flowers is immeasurable."

"Yes son, I have missed it for so long." Rosa said and pointed at an orange Rose flower. "The orange Rose flower will soon blossom, for instance, it means chastity, purity, and loveliness."

Jason smiled and pluck out a white rose flower. "And what of this?"

"Red roses symbolize love and desire, but roses come in a variety of colors and each has their own meaning. For example, the white rose's you are holding is for purity and innocence, reverence, a new beginning, a fresh start." Rosa said and pointed at a Red rose. "Red rose means love, I love you." Pointing at a more darkened Red rose. "Deep, dark crimson rose means mourning." And pointed at another one. "Pink rose means grace, happiness, gentleness." Pointing at another one. "Lavender rose means love at first sight. And finally, this one." Rosa said as she pointed at a yellow flower. "Yellow rose means joy, friendship, the promise of a new beginning. You must know all types of flowers and their meanings." Rosa finally concluded.

"Wow, I think I will need the yellow and red rose flowers tomorrow for School." Jason said as he remembered Rae's wishes. The yellow roses stands for friendship, he hopes Jorkallun forgives him and let them start afresh. And for the red rose, he was going to give Rae.

"No problem dear."

"Actually mother, I came here to ask you something."

"And what can that be my son?"

"It's about Lolly."

"What about her?"

"Since you wrote we should get married, I don't see myself falling in love with her. I have tried and tried, I only agreed to marry her because of you." Jason said stating out his reason for his coming.

"So what do you want me to do Jason?" Rosa asked waiting to her son answer, her son's answer will determine a lot.

"I don't love her mother, I want to settle down with someone I see myself and future in her eyes everyday. I don't know if it is possible for me to break off the engagement. I...I-i think I am in love with someone else and she might be my mate."

"You have a mate?" Rosa's eyes were filled with shocked when she asked.

"I said might mother, but all I know is that I am beginning to fall in love with her."

"But Tribrid don't have mates, that's what the Priestess told us." Rosa said, that was what the Priestess had told her and King Roen the very day Jason was born, unless she was lying.

"It still baffles me a lot that you still believe the words of Tamara." Jason said shaking his head. He doesn't trust that priestess one bit.

"Follow your heart Jason, if you don't want to end up with Lolly, then break off the engagement, after all I wasn't thinking straight that day I wrote it." Rosa said. Telling Jason to break up with Lolly might get him angry as she was afraid he might have fallen in love with her, but his answers proved otherwise.

"Thank you mother, you're really the best."

"So who is this girl that has stolen my son's heart? Do I know her?"

"You might know her mother. I can't really tell you who she is exactly because I don't even know if she would return my love."

"Who wouldn't love you Jason, ask her out, who knows if she has feelings for you and might be hiding it."

"Thank you mother, I can always count on you."

\*\*\*

The portal opened and Rae stepped out of it, facing her grandmother who looks angry



"What is it granny?" Rae asked.

"You have a visitor who is waiting for you in the sitting room."

"A visitor? Who?" Rae asked surprised.

"A vampire." Lillian said. "You never told me you were friends with a vampire, not to talk about being friends with the Prince of Vampires." Lillian said accusedly. "I thought we never hide anything from each other."

"I don't know what you are talking about granny, I am not even friends with one." Rae said matching towards the sitting room.

She was very surprised to see the vampire she had fought some days ago. What was he doing here?

"What are you doing here vampire?" Rae asked. "This is not Kate's house."

"I came to see you to teach me how you fight, and I also know this isn't Kate's house." Dean responded.

"You're a Prince and you want me, an ordinary witch, to teach you how to fight? Are you fucking serious?"

"Yes I am serious."

"Sorry, I can't be your teacher, go and meet Kate, she is a very good teacher just like her mother."

"But I want you to teach me yourself not her."

"What's your name Vampire?"

"Dean."

"Dean, I am not in any mood to talk right now, you can come back again and try giving me your offer once again."

"Okay, I will come back next time Rae." Dean left smiling as Rae closes the door behind her to see her grandmother standing close to her with a questioning look.

"Explain young lady."

"Well he is my friend I helped sometime ago." Rae said.

"Tell that sorry excuse to the birds, tell me why would Darin son come here to look for you?"

Deciding to tell her the truth. "Remember that day I told you about seeing Mrs Ash daughter and a vampire kissing?" Lillian nodded her head for Rae to continue. "Well, I kind of challenge him and force him to meet Mrs Ash."

"No wonder she paid for the magic potions I brought in the store today and even escorted me halfway home." Lillian said. "Alright young lady, go and change I made you your favorite."

\*\*\*

Waking up the next morning, Rae quickly rushed to take her bath, and clip her hair in a ponytail, she quickly went down the stairs and ate her food quickly surprising Lillian.

"What's the occasion today Rae?"

"Nothing granny, just feel like going to school early today." Rae answered as the portal open, entering it. "Take care grandmother."

—

Ignoring the looks she was receiving as she made her way towards Jason's classroom, she couldn't wait to see white haired boy today.

Opening the door, though not entering the class, she wasn't surprised when she saw him, he was probably the first student to come to school early.

Getting up to his feet, walk towards her. He wanted to grab her and kissed her so hard that she forgets her name. He placed his hands inside the front pockets of his jeans when he stood in front of her. He doesn't want his hands to do otherwise.

"Are you ready?" Rae asked as she looked at him. She wants to throw herself to him and beg him to kiss.

"Yes, though I am very nervous." Jason confess.

Forcing herself to look away from his lips, she nodded her head. "It's okay to be nervous Jason, it happens to me a lot of time." Rae said smiling. "Let's go."

He excused himself and went back to his desk, beneath the desk were two color flowers, a red rose and yellow rose flowers.

He walked out of his class, closing the door behind him and turning to look at Rae who was staring at the roses in his hands.

All the students eyes were on them now.

"Who has these flowers? Lolly?" Rae asked trying to hide her jealousy as he gave her his charming smile that makes her heart beats faster.

She loves Jason.

"No, the yellow rose is for Jorkallun it signify friendship and the red rose is for you." Jason said and gave the red rose to Rae.

"What does the red rose signify?" Rae said and scented it, she loves roses.

"Something you're not ready to hear yet." Jason said, how could he tell her the red roses stands for 'I love you.' "Do you like the.....rose?"

"Yes, I love it, thank you."

"Can I be bringing you the red roses everyday?" Jason asked hopefully and he wasn't disappointed.

"I would love that." Rae said blushing a little bit. They stared into each other's eyes for some time.

"I think we should see Jorkallun right away, I am not that nervous again." Jason said breaking his eye contact with Rae.

"Yeah, let's go." Rae said, turning to go as she wants to place the rose flower in her hair but was stopped by Jason.

"Wait a minute." Jason said stopping Rae, he went to meet her, standing so very close.

Rae found herself staring at his chest which was very close to her face. She could smell the fragrance oozing out from him as she felt his hand on her hair losing the clip that holds her hair.

"Ponytail doesn't suit you at all Rae." She heard his voice whispering over her head, and felt her hair falling down passing her shoulder blade and stopping at her waist. Collecting the red rose from her, and he placed it near her ears. He didn't know when his hands found its way to her waist.

Moving a little bit back with his hands still on her waist, looking at her, now she looks better with her hair down than when it was in a ponytail. "Leaving your hair like this.....makes you more beautiful Rae." Jason said looking straight into her eyes as she did the same to him.

They were so lost into each other's eyes, ignoring the surprised looks they were giving them.

All the students eyes were on them, they were speechless by what they had just witnessed.

## Chapter 25

'Every friendship travels at sometime through the black valley of despair. This tests every aspect of your affection. Don't walk behind me; I may not lead. Don't walk in front of me; I may not follow. Just walk beside me and be my friend. I think if I've learned anything about friendship, it's to hang in, stay connected, fight for them, and let them fight for you. Don't walk away, don't be distracted, don't be too busy or tired, don't take them for granted. Friends are part of the glue that holds life and faith together. Powerful stuff. Sometimes being a friend means mastering the art of timing. There is a time for silence. A time to let go and allow people to hurl themselves into their own destiny. And a time to prepare to pick up the pieces when it's all over, Love is blind; friendship closes its eyes.'

♥♥♥♥ THE TRUCE (Let's Start Over) ♥♥♥♥

So lost they were in each other's gaze that they didn't know what was going on around them.

The whispering around them as every student couldn't tear their eyes off them.

Rae realized how close his face were inches away from hers, so close. Does he want to kiss her?

Should he kissed her not? Jason thought as he stared on those enchanted lips of Rae. He then remembered her first wishes, he had promised her he would try to love the unknown girl yet.

A clearing of throat brought then back to present.

Blinking their eyes, Jason and Rae both turn to look at the intruder who just disturb them and saw Sarah.

Jason growls loudly, his growls shook the whole school as he stared at Sarah with a deadly look.

"In as much as I love what is going on between the both of you, you guys are seriously creating a huge scene right now with the way some of the students and teachers faces are here." Sarah said and quickly went behind Rae's back when she told them, Jason's stares were fearing her, if looks could kill she probably be six feet down with her skin cut into many pieces. "Oh and I think there was something you want Jason to do you remember, right Rae?" Sarah added in Rae's ears and ran off as fast as her legs would carry her without looking back until she entered the history class where Jorkallun was already in.

The speed she had used in entering the class made Jorkallun thought at first it was a vampire.

What was chasing his beautiful one? He nearly cough out loud when he realized his thoughts. Did he just say 'his' in a possessive way?

Jorkallun couldn't tear his eyes away from Sarah as she was breathing hard as if she met Lucifer and had run away from for her life.

She looked very beautiful and he has to admit within himself that he had started to love her.

"What's chasing you?" Jorkallun decided to ask as he knows his intense stare towards her was very creepy and might freak her out. His calm face perk with curiosity as he awaits an answer

"Jason." Sarah answered after gaining her breath.

Something steer inside of him, when he heard Sarah mentioning his name. He couldn't deny the fact he was jealous. Anger swirled like a red tide within him, rising to choke him. His breath became harsh and shallow, his hands automatically curl into fists at his sides, itching to swing out and put a dent in the wall behind him. She was his girl and has no right to say someone's else's, especially a boy, name apart from his.

He was much drawn to the girl now than before and he couldn't hide it. He was very possessive of her suddenly and will kill any boy who dares says a simple 'hi' to her. He wasn't like this with Lolly, no, he allowed her to do whatever she wants, but what he felt with Sarah was totally different.

He wants to claim her forever as his. His dragon wants her badly.

Sarah might have seen his expression because her next words seemed to strangely calm his jealous side a little.

"Jason and Rae were about to kiss and I interrupted them. I have to run for my life and come here." Sarah said as she finally sit down.

Jorkallun didn't know when he smiled staring at her.

—

Rae looked around them and saw all the students looking their way, some in envy, others in admiration and the rest, mostly Lolly's friends stared at them in hatred, especially on Rae.

Lolly wasn't in school, she had stormed out of the school in anger when Jason had told her to get out.

Rae turned her head back to look at Jason and noticed he hasn't taken off his eyes from her. It felt good as she blushes the more when she realized Jason's hands on her waist, it gave her hope, maybe he loves her as she does to him.

She couldn't deny their chemistry between them, but in as much as she loves to remain here, in his arms forever lost in his gaze, today was the day she wants Jason to beg his long lost friend for forgiveness and hopefully, Jorkallun forgives him.

"I think Sarah is right, come on, let's go and meet him." Rae finally said breaking off the silence that was still engulfing around them.

Jason nodded his head and realize his hold on Rae's, he didn't even remember when he had held her waist. If Sarah hasn't interrupt them, by now he would have tasted Rae's lips he had so much dream off. He started thinking of a hundred ways to murder Sarah without anyone suspecting him.

It pained him when he shifted back to give themselves space.

"You are right Rae, but on a serious note, you are beautiful with your hair down, I like it." With that Jason left her going towards the class Sarah had just entered a few minutes ago, snarling at the students who ran into their various classes.

Rae smiled and touched her hair with a dreamy face, Jason like it? She would have jumped up in happiness if not for some students that were still lingering around staring at her.

Rae sighed in a happy way and jogged to meet with the handsome boy. If he loves her hair like this, then she will always let it down but her stubborn side decided against it, tomorrow, she's going to clip her hair in a ponytail and feel Jason's hands on her hair once again.

Catching up with the handsome boy walking side by side, they entered the history class together.

Rae was surprised when she saw the smile Jorkallun had on his face as he ignored the students coming in to sit down in their various seats.

"Everyone out of this class right now!" The booming voice of Jason alerted Jorkallun of his presence, he had carried away by the thoughts of Sarah.

The students started leaving the class as Jason has commanded. Turning to face Sarah who hasn't moved. "Including you pest." Jason said thinking of a thousand ways to kill her as he glares at her.

Sarah who had badly wanted to witness Jason beg her crush couldn't hide her crestfallen face as she stood up to go. She wished Jorkallun would asked her to stay.

"She stays."

The voice made her stop in her tracks as she turned to look at the owner of the voice, which was her crush. Did he just asked her to stay? Was she dreaming?

Jason turned his heated gaze to Jorkallun as his eyes soften once it landed on his best friend.

"Sarah stays." Jorkallun repeated again still staring at Sarah so that she would know he was referring to her. "Whatever you want to say, say it because she isn't going anywhere, she's also Rae's friend." Jorkallun added and tore his eyes away from Sarah's and looked at Jason with hardened eyes. "What do you want?"

Rae didn't escape the look between Jorkallun and Sarah and she knows Jason saw that. Jorkallun was the one Sarah was talking about. She was standing beside Jason staring at his lips, she couldn't help but fall more deeply in love for the white haired boy, she wants to feel Jason's hands around her again.

"Rae." Jason's voice broke through her thoughts.

"Yes."

"I have been calling out your name for the past two minutes and you have been staring at me." Jason said with a smile.

"What is it?"

"I want my conversation here to be private, but I don't think it will happen because of some stupid set of people who wants to poke their noses in my private life." Jason said as he looked at the students standing near the class window.

"And why are you tell me?" Rae asked in confusion.

"Because you're the only witch amongst the four of us, do a spell or cast one that will make them not to hear whatever we are saying in here." Jason responded.

Oh, she understands now.

Closing her eyes, she breathed in and whispers a silent spell that only made her lips move.

A white line suddenly appeared all over the four corners of the class. It was a special spell that her grandmother had taught her to use when she really feels the need. No one, not even another witch can be able to break off that spell.

Opening her eyes, she congratulated herself for her handwork.

"It is done, now out with your words Jason." Rae said with a brilliant smile.



Jason saw the students looks and guess they wouldn't hear them. "Thanks my witch..." His eyes widen up a bit when he said that. "I mean Rae."

Smiling as her heart fluttered by his words. "No problem."

Breathing in deeply, he returned his gaze to Jorkallun. He has to say the first three letter words before anything. "I am sorry." He waited for Jorkallun response but was not getting any, he wouldn't blame him, so he continued. "I am very sorry Jorkallun, I betrayed our friendship and hurt you very deep. I know I'm probably the last person you want to hear from, but please hear me out. I don't know where to start so I'll start with this; I'm really upset that our friendship is gone and it's made me miserable for the past years. I hate fighting, especially with you. My mistake ruined our friendship and I don't know how to make things right between us. Knowing that I did this to my best friend kills me. I don't know what I was thinking and I hate myself for it. Our friendship is too valuable to me to end over this. To find another friend like you would be impossible, Please Forgive me Jorkallun, let's put the past behind us and start over again." Jason said in sincerity as he stared at his best friend, hoping his apologies were accepted.

"Why did you do it in the first place?" Jorkallun voice asked, he was only doing this for the sake of Rae.

Instead of coming up with a flimsy excuse, he decided to tell the truth. "It was my mother, she was dying."

Jorkallun was very surprised and shocked when he heard that, even Sarah wasn't left out.

"Queen Rosa was dying? What happened and why doesn't everyone knows so that we can pray for her to recover?" Jorkallun asked as he forgets the anger he had for Jason at the moment.

"We woke up one morning and my father and I find out she couldn't move any part of her body nor talk. Tamara was called and she asked us not to reveal her illness to the whole Supernaturals. We did as we were instructed, but her illness became worse. So one day, after Tamara had given her herbs, she came out of my mother's chamber with a written note which states I have to get married to Lolly." Jason said. "And I have to do as she said because it was stated in the written note that was her last wish for me. I couldn't ignore the note and so was my father, I had no choice than to do as she asked, that was when my engagement party with Lolly was carried out. I should have told you but Tamara says I shouldn't, telling anyone apart from the royal family and servants, my mother illness would increase, I am sorry I hurt you Jorkallun."

Hitting a desk in her front like a drum, all eyes turned to Rae.

"Well this is when the drums starts playing as we all await Jorkallun answers."

Jorkallun laughed out and Jason looked at him.

"Listen, Jorkallun," Jason started nervously as the laughter died down. "Do you think we could start over? Or make a truce? Please."

Jorkallun raised his eyebrows. "A truce, between us?"

Jason nodded his head. "I am sorry if I hurt you." He said and stretch forth his hand with the yellow rose flower. "This is a sign for Friendship and a new beginning for us. If you accept it, it means you have forgiven me wholeheartedly, if you do not, it means I am not forgiven."

Jorkallun thought about it, it wasn't Jason's fault. If the reverse was the case he would do anything to keep his mother's last wish. So it wasn't really Jason's fault.

Smiling, he collected the flower and he stood up from his seat. "Thank you. I have forgiven you Jason."

They hug themselves. "I am sorry buddy."

"Shhh it's okay, I completely understand. I missed my best friend so much." Jorkallun said in all smiles.

The entire school were now at the window, staring with wide open eyes as they saw Jason and Jorkallun hugging.

Jason and Jorkallun back together once again?

They couldn't believe their eyes.

Jack was speechless by what he saw, what he and the teachers couldn't achieve to bring back the friends together was done by a stubborn tomboy girl? King Roen has to hear it.

The boys smiled at themselves as they put some distance away from each other. "How is your mother health now." Jorkallun asked in concern.

"She is now better than before." Jason responded smiling and looked at Sarah, he was still angry at her. "Don't tell anyone about my mother illness, only the four of us know." Jason warned, he trusted Jorkallun and know he wouldn't say a word, but for Sarah, he couldn't tell.

"Yes I promise." Sarah promised.

"I am happy both friends are back together."

Rae said happily and went over to hug Jorkallun.

Jason couldn't help but curl his upper lip to keep himself from speaking when he saw Rae hugging Jorkallun. Why Jorkallun and not him? His mind whirling with thoughts that only made him assume the worst. The feeling of jealousy was slowly growing into his skin, filling his blood.

"Thank you Jorkallun for accepting my friendship back, Rae isn't hugging enough or do you want a group hug from pest and I?" Jason asked in sarcasm.

Leaving Jorkallun holds, she turned to face Jason with a smile.

"I hope you will bring flowers for my friend who I want you to fall in love with, bring the red roses, she will love it." Rae said still smiling. "And it is not you Sarah."

"For your friend?" Jason asked with a raised eyebrow as he crossed his arms on his chest. Rae nodded her head doing the same, crossing her arms under her breast. "I just realized that there are no more flowers in the garden, the one I gave to you and Jorkallun are the last ones."

"Oh, something tells me you're lying."

"Well tell that 'something' to mind its business."

"You promised Jason, and you are bringing her the roses, simple."

"I won't as long as it's not you, there are no more flowers bonehead." Jason said walking towards her in a predator look and stopped in her front.

"I know there are still flowers in your garden brainless." Rae said giving him that same look.

Their lips almost touched.

## Chapter 26

'People were created to be loved. Things were created to be used. The reason why the world is in chaos, is because things are being loved and people are being used. The best love is the kind that awakens the soul; that makes us reach for more, that plants the fire in our hearts and brings peace to our minds. That's what I hope to give you forever. At the beach, life is different... Time doesn't move hour to hour but mood to moment... We live by the currents, plan by the tides and follow the sun....'

### ♥♥♥♥ BROKEN ENGAGEMENT AND CONFESSIONS ♥♥♥♥

Her scent was alluring to him. He wanted to taste that lips taunting him so badly.

"Do you know our lips are almost touching and I always have fantasies of kissing you." Jason didn't know when he said that aloud, he had meant to say that in his thoughts.

Jason quickly recovered from his shock and embarrassment, he left the classroom saying things under his breath which Rae couldn't catch.

The white lines that was around the class disperse immediately Jason's body touched it.

No one dares to come inside until Jorkallun says so.

"What was that?" Sarah asked with her eyes wide open as she stared at the door Jason left few seconds ago. "Did you hear what he said Rae?"

Rae was shocked to her bones when she heard those words.

Jason has fantasies of kissing her, like her?

Her face was with the brightest smile as she turned to Sarah. "Of course I heard that, and I thought I was the only one having fantasies of him."

"I wasn't expecting tha-" Sarah cut mid way as what Rae said process in her head. "You also have fantasies of him?" She asked, eyes widen.

"Yes, I do like-no- love Jason and don't give me that pretend look of you not knowing." Rae said rolling her eyeballs at Sarah. "I also happen to know you have a crush on a certain pretty red haired boy who goes to the same school with us and whose name starts with J and ends in U." Rae added with a pointed look at Sarah. "And you know there is only one pretty red haired boy with that name in the whole school."

"I-I don't know what you are saying." Sarah stuttered and sat down on her sit avoiding a certain eyes that were looking at her.

Rae went to her seat and sat down, a few minutes later, Jorkallun sat beside her. He made a gesture with his hand, telling the students in history class to come in.

Serena soon came in and started her history teaching.

For the first time, Jorkallun didn't place his head on the desk, his eyes were on Sarah the entire time and he couldn't take off his eyes from her.

Rae was all smiles looking between Jorkallun and Sarah.

When Serena left the class, Sarah quickly stood up and left the class fast in embarrassment without waiting for Rae as usual.

Rae smiled in triumphant as she waited until everyone has left the class to their next class, she stood up to go for her next class but was stopped by Jorkallun.

"Is it true?" Jorkallun demanded.

"That Sarah has a crush on you? Yes it's true." Rae answered. "And if I were you, I would grab this chance and profess my love for her, cause I know you love her, I see it in your eyes."

Jorkallun smiled. "I plan on doing that Rae, what about you, do you see yourself together with him?" He asked in a brotherly way and swung his hand on her shoulder as Rae also swung her hand on his shoulders, together they left the class.

"I like him a lot, at first I thought I liked you, but now I see I was just infatuated by you. I am glad I now see you as my big brother."

Jorkallun smiled at that.

Stopping in her next class, he removed his hands from her shoulders and waited until she had entered the class, he saw Sarah looking everywhere but him.

He will see her tonight. He waved at Rae and left.

---

Jason hurriedly went into his class faster than his shadows.

He had just said that loud without thinking, what if Rae saw him as a pervert now and starts avoiding him. He would die if such a thing happens.

He need to go home and clear his head, then explain to Rae why he had said that.

He vanished into thin air.

\*\*\*\*

It was closing time and Rae went over to meet Sarah in a class where she plans to wait until Jorkallun had left.

"Are you that shy Sarah?" Rae asked. "You should be happy that I cleared somethings for you."

"You shouldn't have told him Rae, I don't think he loves me back." Sarah said sadly.

Snorting out, "Says who? Jorkallun loves you, he confided in me." Rae said in a singing voice. "You should see it my way, j made it more easier for you."

Sarah nodded her head. "Okay, I am just scared, he hasn't looked at my direction ever since I know him, he started noticing me after that day in the cafeteria."

"Why don't you explain to him about your feelings, tomorrow when I see Jason, I will let him know how I feel, I can feel he felt the same way I did. The four of us have chemistry together, You and Jorkallun, I and Jason, probably the gods are telling us something we don't know yet."

Yawning out tiredly, "You are right."

"Sarah, go home and rest your sleepy head, you should know that whatever will be will be and no one can change it." Rae said and touched her bracelet, a portal opened. "See you tomorrow Sarah."

With that, she entered the portal which closes leaving Sarah all alone.

Sarah thought about what Rae said, tomorrow she will open her heart to Jorkallun, it is now left for him to decide.

She could have teleported herself home, but she couldn't take such risk. A centaur never teleport before.

She left the school and went straight home.

\*\*\*

Jason appeared in his room, he quickly took his bath and have a change of clothes before he went over to the throne room.

Entering he was surprised to see his mother and father with Lolly.

"Thank goodness, he is here my King." Lolly said.

"Son, Lolly came here telling us how you took a girl inside your private class, and you both stayed in there for close to two hours, is she saying the truth?" King Roen asked.

"Absolutely father, she didn't tell you the name of the said girl with me, did she?"

"No son, she didn't."

"It's Rae father, the girl with me is Rae." Jason said. "We were discussing something very important between ourself."

"That's a lie." Lolly cut in. "Discussing or you both were doing something behind that closed door." Lolly said in seething anger.

"Like what Lolly? If I am having anything with Rae, it is none of your business." Jason said staring at Lolly calmly.

"It is my very business Jason because we are engaged and going to get married once we are through with school." Lolly said. "So you shouldn't be around any lady let alone with Rae because I know you have feelings for her, I can see that in your eyes whenever her name is being mentioned." She added.

"You know what, I am tired of your nagging, how is it your business if I love Rae, I have always told you, you don't own me, I am not your soulmate."

"Yes you are whether you believe it or not, you are. And there is nothing stopping us from getting married."

They had forgotten they were in the presence of the King and Queen.

"I am tired Lolly, I am think-no- I am breaking off our engagement."

"What!? You can't do that to me Jason!" Lolly yelled.

"Yes I can do that. My mother gave me her consent if I still wish to continue with you, well I can't continue with you Lolly, so yes, I am calling off our engagement." Jason said.

"You wouldn't dare!"

"I hereby cut off my engagement I had with Lolly in the presence of the throne. I and Lolly are no longer bound together." Jason said and smirked at the shocked face of Lolly.

"You cut off our engagement?"

"Yes I did Lolly." Jason answered and went over to meet her until he was standing close to her. "You're very beautiful Lolly but we are not meant to be, there is someone, your real soulmate out there waiting for you, I am not the one Lolly, I am in love with Rae."

"This isn't the last of me Jason, you will marry me at all cost, you just mark my words." Lolly said and left their presence angrily.

"Son, are you sure of what you just did?" King Roen asked his son.

"Sure father, I am very sure and I am truly in love with Rae, mother gave me her blessings."

King Roen faces his wife, "You did?"

Smiling at her son, who did the right thing. "Yes dear, I told our son to follow his heart and I think he did that."

"Yes mother I did, I am going to confess my feelings for Rae tomorrow." Jason said and smiled as he saw the image of Rae's lips.

"Well, that's good to hear, I am glad you are following your own path son."

—

Lolly who was walking angrily out of the palace met Queen Flora.

"What is it my child, why the angry look on your sun beautiful face?" Queen Flora asked the angry girl.

"Jason broke off my engagement I had with him all because he has fallen in love with Rae."

Rae again?

"I came to see the king, I will try to talk sense into Jason."

"Thank you my Queen." Lolly said and left her.

Wow, she really needs to meet this Rae and truly see if she is as stubborn as the rumors are.

\*\*\*

Rae stepped out of the portal and met her grandmother.



Greeting her grandmother, she rushed into her room and quickly take a quick bath and has a change of clothes, going down the stairs, she met her food and quickly drove in.

After she had clear and cleaned the plate and where she sat to est.

"Grandmother, something happened today."

"Is that why you have a rose flower in your hair?"

Rae has forgotten about that.

"No, it was given to me by someone special which I am not telling you who the person is." Rae said. "So do you know what happened today?"

"Tell me?"

"Remember Sarah assigned to me by Mr Jack who would take me around the school, you remember right?" Rae asked and Lillian nodded her head, Jack had once told her about the girl. "She is in love with Jorkallun, in fact they are both in love with each other." Rae said happily.

Lillian was surprised. "Jorkallun in love? Sarah is very lucky. I haven't meant this friend of yours, feel free to invite her over after school anytime." Lillian said, she wants to see the girl who Jorkallun is in love with.

Nodding her head. "I will invite her over mother, I need to take my afternoon nap."

\*\*\*\*

It was already night as the moon was shining brightly, Sarah was sleeping when she felt the presence of someone entering her room.

She quickly opened her eyes, raising her hand to cast a spell on the intruder when she realized it was Jorkallun, his red hair glowing in the moon was what caught her attention.

Getting up from her bed as she saw Jorkallun standing in front of the window he had sneaked in.

Her breathing ceased when she saw how the moon made him look more yummy.

"What are you doing here?" She managed to ask.

"I came to see you Sarah, to talk to you."

"Okay, I am all ears."

"I will go straight to the point, I want you as mine only." Jorkallun said.

Sarah eyes widen.

"What do you mean?"

"You know what I mean Sarah, I want you to become my woman and when the time comes, my mate, I can't resist you anymore, you're driving me crazy."

"I like you too Jorkallun, for a long time, I just thought that, maybe you-"

Interrupting her. "I didn't even think I would fall in love with someone after what Lolly did, but you changed that the day I saw your face in the school cafeteria, I only know there is a girl named Sarah in my class so that was my first time seeing your face and I fell for it. That night I met you to warn you against hurting my sister, apart from that, I was dying to see your face again to confirm my feelings. I love you Sarah, please accept to be mine forever, my dragon choose you for reasons best known to him, he wasn't like this to Lolly." Jorkallun finally confessed.

"I love you too Jorkallun, ever since the day I saw your dragon when I was swimmi- i mean running." She nearly said swimming under water. She will tell Jorkallun who she truly is, but not now, "I want to be yours forever."

Pulling her into his body finally, lifting up her face to face his.

"I am very possessive Sarah, now that you said you are mine, you're only MINE." Jorkallun growl out and crashed his lips on her, kissing her with so much passion.

\*\*\*

Early the next morning.

The portal opened and Rae stepped out, she was happy, her ponytail hair held in a hair clip. She made her way inside the school, ignoring the looks as usual. She was stopped when two fairy guards stopped her.

She saw a fairy woman, queen, as her attire shows she is a Queen.

"Are you Rae?" The queen asked not too nicely.

"I am, what's popping old fairy?"

That shock Queen Flora. "Are you blind, don't you know how to address me properly? Do you know who is standing before you?" How can this girl asked her 'what's popping' without putting my queen.

Snorting out, "Knowing who you are, how does that help me?"

The sudden hand that raise to slap her was unexpected, but before the feminine hands would hit it's target, it was stopped by another hand, a male hand.

Queen Flora turned to look at the fool who held her hands to punish him, but her eyes widen when she saw Jason.

Going to stand beside Rae, he released the hand he was holding and turn to face Rae. Removing the clip from her hair.

"Haven't I told you how you look more beautiful with your hair down?" Jason asked forgotten everything around him as he stared at her.

## Chapter 27

'You can give without loving, but you can never love without giving. The great acts of love are done by those who are habitually performing small acts of kindness. We pardon to the extent that we love. Love is knowing that even when you are alone, you will never be lonely again. & great happiness of life is the conviction that we are loved. Loved for ourselves. & even loved in spite of ourselves. Love has no middle term; either it destroys, or it saves. All human destiny is this dilemma. This dilemma, destruction or salvation, no fate proposes more inexorably than love. Love is life, if it is not death. Cradle; coffin, too. The same sentiment says yes and no in the human heart. Of all the things God has made, the human heart is the one that sheds most light, and alas! most night.'

### ♥♥♥♥ CONFESIONS (JASON AND RAE) ♥♥♥♥

Rae blush as she heard those words. How could she tell her handsome Jason that she did it on purpose. She could still feel Jason's hand on her hair, as he used his fingers as comb to straighten her hair.

Feeling it was now okay, he removed his hand from her hair and gave her the hair clip back. "There now, you look so beautiful right now." Jason said in smiles as he and Rae both stared at themselves, his eyes diverted to her lips as he stares lustful at them. He wanted to feel those red lips badly on his, he wants to feel the softness of her lips, to have a taste.

If not for the clearing of throat from a particular someone, Jason would have kissed Rae right there.

Turning his head to glare at the Queen Flora who had cleared her throat. He remembered what she had wanted to do to his Rae.

"Why did you want to slap her?" Jason asked as his white eyeballs changes a little bit red.

"Your majesty, this girl you're with, insulted me badly, that was why I raised my hand to slap her." Queen Flora said glaring at Rae.

"Insulted you?" Jason growled out. MY Rae doesn't go about insulting anyone, she is the most humblest person I have ever come across, she is kind and doesn't look for trouble, right Rae?" Jason faces his love as Rae went along with his line, he was hoping she didn't hear the 'My' word he had used.

"Yes of course, why would I insult her, she is trying to paint me black." Rae said.

"That's a lie your majesty, this girl is lying, there are a lot of witnesses here." Queen Flora said in anger, she pointed at an elf girl, who had witnessed everything. "You come here right now!" She

bellowed as the elf girl rushed to meet her. "You saw what happened, explain to Jason how she insulted me, Now." Queen Flora ordered.

The elf girl nodded her head. "I don't know what happened, b-b-but my queen lied against Rae." The elf girl lied, if she had said the queen was telling the truth, Jason will deal with her.

Queen Flora was shocked when she heard her response. "Go away you nincompoop." She said sending the elf girl away. Looking at all the students around her. "Isn't anyone going to say something!"

No students spoke out for fear of Jason.

"You see Jason, I wasn't lying." Rae said, "I don't know why people take my kind words for greeting as insult." She added.

"She is lyin-" Queen Flora was trying to say but was cut off.

"Enough of using that excuses, I know who is lying and who is telling the truth." Jason said. "By the way, what are you doing in this school so early in the morning?"

"It has been long I visited the school, so I decided to come here today, only to receive the insult of my life." Queen Flora said glaring at Rae who was secretly smiling at her.

"Okay then, I shouldn't waste much time so that you can have the whole time for your school tour." Jason said and grab hold of Rae's hand. He started walking away from the fairy queen together with Rae when her next words stopped him.

"So because of this disrespectful girl that you broke your engagement you had with Lolly yesterday."

The loud gasped that echo round the school were filled with shock and surprised.

"And how is that your business Flora, If I broke up with Lolly and decided to be with Rae, how does it relate to you?" Jason asked and was at Queen Flora face at once with lightning speed, holding her neck in much anger as his eyeballs turned completely red. "Do you want me to strip you off your position as the queen of fairy?" Jason added and growl so loudly that the ground beneath his feet and the Queens guards, cracked open.

Choking for air, Queen Flora managed to shake her head, no.

"Good Flora, next time, mind the way you talk, especially when it comes to Rae, do I make myself clear?" The hand he had use in holding Queen Flora neck began to change into sharp longer claws.

She nodded with great difficulty.

He release his hold on her. "Go back to your kingdom before I changed my mind."

"Thank you your majesty." Queen Flora managed to speak out and flew out of the school with speed as her guards followed suit.

The gentle hand that touched his shoulder blade removed the anger in him as his eyeballs return back to normal. His claws change back to his normal hands.

Turning to face Rae with a smile on his lips, Queen Flora scene forgotten, as his gaze landed on her. The crack ground forgotten as Jack will see to that, he grab hold of her hands in his once again. "Where were we?" He asked his beautiful one but didn't wait for her to reply. "Oh I remember, I was taking you to my class when we got interrupted, I want to tell you something."

"Sure Jason, I also want to tell you something." Rae said with a smile.

They walk together towards his class as they both ignored the stares they we're gaining.

Opening the door for Rae to enter first, he closed the door behind him.

"Wow, that's a lot of red roses flowers you got." Rae said as she saw a lot of roses on Jason desk. "Is it for that my friend?"

"The flowers isn't for that friend of yours, I bought the flowers for only you and not her. You will have to take me to meet her so that I can tell her myself that I am not interested in her." Jason said.

"Okay, I will talk to my friend."

"Good, better talk to her."

No one talks as they stared at each other again.

"You can sit you know, while we still talk." Jason said breaking off the sudden silence around them.

"No, I am perfectly okay standing."

Falling into silence once again.

"You know Rae, I am always mesmerized by your eyes whenever I look at you." Jason said finally, he needed to say something so that he could pour out his feelings for her and then

kissed her. "What I said yesterday, about having fantasies of kissing you, I mean it Rae, you don't know how badly I am restraining myself from kissing you right here." Jason said at last.

He couldn't pretend anymore.

"When I first saw you, I won't lie, I hated your guts so much that I have planned different ways of killing you, because you were the only one apart from Jorkallun who had challenged me without any hint of fear, but all that changes and I begin to see you in a new light the night my father invited you and you helped my mother. I like that you are not scared of me Rae, I don't want someone who will be scared of me, you have the type of fire in you that I love. I can't stop having wild dreams of you and me, I can't stop thinking of you, I want you to become mine Rae."

Rae couldn't reply as she finds herself studying her boots with much interest.

Going to meet her, using his palm to lift up her face to his. "I am sure you know the color of your boots, please say something, your silence is killing me Rae." Jason said softly.

"I like you too Jason, so much. I did all that just to get your attention to me." Rae finally said. "I too do have fantasies of you and I want them to become reality."

"It will Rae, I promise you, it will, just be mine."

"What about Lolly, aren't you engaged to her?" Rae asked pretending as if she did not hear what Queen Flora said that got Jason angry. She wanted to be very sure she heard right.

"I broke off our engagement yesterday and my parents are in support of it, and even if they weren't, I will never leave you, so what do you say to my proposal?"

"Okay Jason, I will become yours if you promise me never to talk to any girl apart from me."

"Of course sweetheart, and the same goes to you, I don't like sharing what belongs to me."

"Of course Jason, you have all my attention to your handsome self." Rae said and smile. "So when is this kiss coming, because I want you to kiss me."

"Someone once said A kiss on the cheek means we are friends." Jason said and kissed Rae on her two cheeks, Rae smiled.

"Someone also said that A kiss on the hand means I adore you." Jason said and grabbed her two hands and kissed it making Rae blushed.

"Then someone said that holding hands means we definitely belongs together." Jason said and hold her hands tightly, though making sure it wasn't hurting her.

"Jason." Rae started to say but he shush her up.

"Someone also told me that Holding on tight means I don't want to let you go." Jason said and wrapped his arms around her waist, drawing her close to him and making sure their bodies touched.

Their face few inches away from each other.

"So the next thing someone said to me was that.." Jason was slowly leaning in to her face as their eyes couldn't tear away from each other. Rae couldn't look away, if he keeps on talking she will end it up by kissing him. "A kiss on the lips means I LOVE YOU." Jason said as Rae's eyes widen in shock.

"I love you too Jason." Rae didn't know when she said that. "So what else did this somebody tells you?" Rae asked wrapping her arms round his neck.

"A kiss on the shoulder means." Jason said and kissed her shoulder. "I want you." He whispered the last part in her ears making Rae shudder a bit.

"A kiss on the ear means." Jason said and kissed her ears, making sure he whispered. "You are my everything."

"A kiss on the forehead means, I hope we are together forever." Jason said and kissed her on her forehead making Rae closes her eyes.

"And now, I am going to Kiss you." Jason said that with a deep growl as his lips mashed against her roughly, as if trying to flatten and destroy her mouth. She hungrily pushed back, her mouth opened, tongue pushing past his teeth to the moist within. Their tongues battling back and forth like wrestlers, each trying to pin each other.

So engrossed in their kissing that they did not noticed the bright light coming out from Rae's chest.

\*\*\*

Michael was pacing around as his thoughts were on that night something had woken him up.

Gabriel came to meet him again.

"What's troubles you my friend?"

"Something on Earth is drawing me to it. I can't really explained, but when I woke up, that feeling was gone."



"Something calls on you on Earth?" Gabriel asked.

"Yes, but I don't know why it did so." Michael said. "I think I am going to visit the Earth once again to get answers."

"What will King Aaron says when he is aware?"

"I don't care what he thinks, whether he agrees or not, I will visit the Earth." Michael said.

"Okay, but you have to wait and see if truly that feeling might come again."

"I know that, I will be very alert next time so that it won't surprise me like before."

\*\*\*\*\*

Tamara appeared and saw her angry daughter In her secret cave.

"What is it Lolly, what happened?" Tamara asked with care.

"I want him mother, I need him."

"You need who Lolly?"

"Jason."

"What happened to Jason?" Tamara asked slightly confused.

"He broke off our engagement yesterday all because of that stupid girl Rae."

"Impossible."

"As I am speaking with you, everyone now knows I am no longer with Jason, you have to do something something mother, I am slowly losing it." Lolly said in anger, her face changing to a beast. "You have to be fast mother, I am losing my patience on you." Lolly added, her voice now deep and thick. Lolly wasn't speaking anymore, it is the beast.

"Don't worry, I will deal with Rae personally."

"That was the same thing you said and King Roen didn't do anything to Rae." The beast said.

"Be calm Lolly, Jason shall be yours and only yours, once I get Rae out of the picture, Jason will be yours and everything will be as it was before." Tamara said with an evil smirk. "I have a plan Lolly."

"What plan?"

"A perfect plan. Lillian is hiding something and I am going to find out what she is hiding. I saw a strong magical bracelet on Rae's arms the day I visited, I will have to ask Rae to give me the bracelet."

Her face going back to normal.

"And how do you hope to achieve that mother?" Lolly demanded.

"I will disguise myself as Lillian herself."

## Chapter 28

'I'm here for you, to stand by you and be with you, no matter the daunting stacks of challenges. We are stronger together, one for each other. My desire, my love, shield not your shades of hassles from me. For I'm here for you, to spur to your greatest potentials. Your eyes send thrilling shivers of passion down my spine, making me blush at your very sight. Your hands encapsulate my fragilities, making me cosy in your warm cuddle. Hearts are easily torn but can also be sewn together by someone who cares. Though the scars won't fade, the stitches will always be there to remind you that someone loves you enough to keep you whole again.'

♥♥♥♥ THE PLAN AND THAROLLIN ♥♥♥♥

"You sure it will work?" Lolly asked her mother.

"Why not, it will surely work, wait until I get my hands on that magical bracelet she wore and Rae, she will regret ever crossing your part and mine, I will make sure of that." Tamara said with determination. "Are you giving your father the potion from that bag I gave to you last?" She added.

"Yes mother." Lolly reply.

"Good, he is a very strong King of the Amazon's, and I will want him to obey my every word without questioning when the time is ripe." Tamara said.

"As long as I put that spell potion in his food everyday, he will always obey you when it's time." Lolly said and laugh as if it is funny.

"Good to know you are on my side Lolly." Tamara said smiling at her daughter.

"Yes, but I don't have the patience mother, I am going to give you a little longer, Jason has to be mine and Rae has to die."

"Don't worry Lolly, you will be glad you waited and when you have Jason all to yourself, you will realize it's worth the wait." Tamara responded.

"Okay I have heard you. What about that water man that calls himself Tharollin father, does he know our plan yet?" Lolly demanded.

"No my daughter, he doesn't know yet. He is waiting for the bones his son went in search for in the Gates of Darkness." Tamara said and smirked. "What he didn't know is that, we," pointing at she and Lolly. "Also want the bones and Tharollo is just the instrument we have to use to get it."

The both of them laughed evilly.

"When Tharollin comes back, you have to do everything to get the bones from him, he can be very stubborn." Lolly said.

"Trust me on that, I will collect the bones before the other one."

"What about Rosa? She was Hale and hearty when I saw her with Roen, and I control by surprise very well. You do know she is the cause why Jason broke the engagement with me." Lolly said. "Hope she won't tell the king anything?"

"Don't worry about her, she won't tell him anything. I once made Jason yours, then I will do it again once I remove Rae from this earth, something in me tells me it all started with her." Tamara said.

"Whatever you want to do, be fast about it mother. I will take my leave, see you soon." Lolly said and disappeared.

Tamara smiled and started preparing the magic potion that will transform her to Lillian. She whispered some words and she was shown Lillian, leaving the house for the Witches shop as Rae wasn't back from school.

Now would be a very good time to disguise herself like Lillian. For her to achieve that, she will have to keep the real Lillian busy until she carries out her plan.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jason has to dispatch his lips from Rae as he noticed that bright light coming out from Rae's whole body. He gasped out in shock when his eyes finally landed on Rae's face. She looked so different and more beautiful.

His loud gasped prompted Rae, who didn't know when she closed her eyes, to open it.

"What is it Jason?" Rae asked with fear, hoping that Jason hasn't changed his mind towards her.

"Rae, look at your hair." Jason said lifting up some layers of her hair and showed it to her.

Looking at it, Rae eyes widen in wide shock as she saw the different shade of colors in her hair, just like a rainbow.

What is going on? Why is her hair colored?

"What about my face, is it the same?" Rae suddenly ask.

Cupping her face with his hands. "Rae, you look so different from before and more beautiful now." Jason answered. "Either ways, you are beautiful."

"I wish I could see it." Rae whispered lowly to herself and Jason heard it.

He raised his hand and his phoenix fire came out from one of his fingers. It went around and form a circle, making it look like a fire magical mirror. With it, Jason gave it to Rae.

"The fire won't hurt you my Rae." Jason said softly.

Rae took it and saw her own reflection. She was shocked to her bone marrow. Her face has totally change and her black eyeballs were in the colors of the rainbow, same with her hair.

"Why am I like this?" Rae asked completely confused. "Will I be like this from now henceforth?"

And like magic, the rainbow hair and eyes faded, leaving Rae in the skin she was used too.

It was as if nothing happened.

"It has gone." Rae said in surprise. "But how did it happen?"

"I think it was when we kissed." Jason voice out his thoughts as he moved closer to her.

"Are you sure it's the kis-"

Rae was silence by Jason's lips. The bright light shone again.

Dispatching her lips from Jason, Rae look at her rainbow hair in color. It is back again.

She then hesitantly looked up at Jason. The swirls of emotion she saw there made her gasp. Love and desire. However, before she could ponder about it further, he yanked her to him and covered her mouth with his in a hungry kiss. As their lips crushed together, she felt like she was walking on air. It was magic, the way his lips connected with hers as the light from her got brighter. His mouth was so warm, the caress of his lips softer than she could have imagined and Rae opened her mouth with a low moan.

That stopped Jason immediately before the kiss will deepen.

"Maybe you should ask your grandmother why your hair is like this." Jason said as he caress the hair softly.

Like before, it faded to Rae's black hair.

Kissing her forehead.

"Let's get you to class my love." Jason said, and hand in hand, they left for her class.

All eyes were fixed on them as they made their way to the history class with smiles on their faces, some of the students have to look through their class window in pure shock.

Entering her class, her classmates eyes were on them. Rae noticed that Sarah's seat was empty.

Rae walk to her seat and sat down and was expecting Jason to leave, but instead of leaving, he went to sit on the desk Rae was sitting on comfortable.

Now every student eyes were already popping out of their sockets if possible.

At that moment Jorkallun and Sarah walked into the class, she was smiling at whatever Jorkallun was whispering in her ear lowly. This time around, her classmates mouth hung open. Some of the students left their classes to the history class as they wouldn't believe their eyes. First was Jason and Rae and now Jorkallun and Sarah.

How did it happen?

Some of the females students started regretting why they weren't friends with Rae when she came to the school. If they had been friends with her instead of Sarah, maybe Jorkallun would have noticed them.

"You're not sitting down there, you are sitting with me." Jorkallun announced as Sarah wanted to sit in her empty chair.

Going to his sit with Sarah, he sent a smile to Jason who return it with one of his own.

"Hello brother." Jason said in greeting.

"Hello to you too brother." Jorkallun respond.

All the students watching nearly fainted when they heard them greeting and talking to each other with anger or fight.

"I can see you told him your feelings?" Rae asked as soon as Sarah sat with them, she was smiling.

"Yes Rae, you were right, he did love me as you said." Sarah said and smiled when Jorkallun kissed her cheeks. "And I could ask you the same question Rae."

"Yes we surely did, he brought me a lot of red roses flowers today." Rae said remembering the kiss and flowers.

"Yeah, the flowers are only for you and not that your stupid friend you are trying to set me with." Jason chip in.

"About that, I lied, actually I am that stupid girl, so are you now calling me a stupid girl?" Rae asked pretending to get angry.

"It's good you said the truth if not, stupid won't only be the name I will start calling her." Jason said smiling.

At that moment, Miss Serena (the fairy history teacher) flew into the class window since all the students has blocked the door entrance.

Kissing Rae on her forehead and not in her lips to avoid people seeing what he saw, he left the class, the students making way for him.

"The show is off, you can go back to your classes." Jason said and for the very first time, he didn't shout or snarled at them when he told them, rather he was smiling as he walks towards his class.

"You heard him, the show is over." Jorkallun bellowed angrily since they weren't showing any sign that they were leaving.

Serena started teaching the class.

Jorkallun watches Sarah all through the class.

Rae keeps thinking about a certain white haired boy who is few meters away from her.

\*\*\*\*

Lillian was surprised to see Mrs Ash again in the Witches shop.

"Hello Ash, how you doing?" Lillian asked with smiles

"Hey hello my queen, am good and you?" Mrs Ash greeted with great enthusiasm.

"Great, I came here to buy some magic potions for someone's work I am doing and you?" Lillian asked.

"Came to buy my usual magic potions." Mrs Ash answered. "How is my beautiful daughter Rae?"

"Still in school and will be coming back any moment from now. She told me how she made your daughter and Prince Dean to come to you."

"Yes, Kate told me how she fought with the Prince. I must say your daughter stubbornness came with her strong muscles, at least, whatever situation she finds herself in she can fight her way out." Mrs Ash reply and laugh a little.

Whatever Lillian wanted to say was cut off by the scream of a young witch girl who shouted and the collapse.

Both women ran to where the lady was as the rest Witches in the shop gathered around them.

Touching her neck, Lillian breathed a sigh of relief.

The girl is still breathing a little, there is still life in her. She knows the right spell to use on the girl.

Though it might take much time, she hoped Rae wouldn't mind much if she comes home and find the house empty.

\*\*\*\*\*

Tharollin, picking up and using the dry bones of Lucifer, fought with the thousands skeletons heading his way.

It took him many, so many days to successfully take all of them down.

The skeletons scattered and couldn't raise to join themselves as they did before, he had used the bones of Lucifer on them, weakening them.

At last, he has the bones in his hands. He started going back to the way he had come before. He couldn't wait to see Avonmora and ask for her forgiveness.

His huge black wings came out from his back and he flew upwards, since he now has the bones of Lucifer with him, going out of the Gate of Darkness will be easier. Unlike when he was coming to look for the bones which took him a thousand years before he landed.

He came out and turned into a dark smoke which enables him to pass through the mouth of the Gate of Darkness which hasn't been closed yet, going back to his human form.

He turned to look at gate and smiled.

Finally he was outside.



Looking around him a lot has changed since the thousand years, that was when he saw a statue, a female statue frozen in ice in front of the gate.

He remembered that clothes as if it were yesterday, no, it couldn't be.

He went over to where the frozen woman is and faces her. His mouth open wide and he started coughing out.

"Avonmora." Tharollin whispered as he stared at the frozen woman, his mate.

"What happened to you, why are you frozen?" Tharollin asked no one in particular as he stared at Avonmora in pain.

This can't be happening, his father betrayed him and couldn't keep to his words.

Making the bones disappeared, he turned into a smoke and went towards the mermaid Kingdom.

Changing back to his human body, Tharollin looked around him in shock as he took him the isolated place where Bush's has overgrown.

They were gone? All the Mermaids were gone.

He roared out in anger and disappeared.

\*\*\*\*

Tamara wasn't surprised when the water man appeared next to her.

"What are you doing?" The water man asked as he saw her mixing some potion in a pot in fire.

"Making a disguise potion my Lord, there is someone I need to teach a lesson." Tamara answered.

"Well that someone can wait until the both of you tell me why you had killed the mermaid Kingdom all wiped out." Tharollin voice chip in as the smoke form he was changed into him.

"Tharollin you are back." The water said in happiness as it could be heard.

"Yes father, and I saw a disturbing sight, Avonmora was frozen and her clan was wiped out. And you made a promise to me father, you made a promise." Tharollin said in anger.

"I did try to keep to my words son, but Roen whom the gods have chosen the king of the whole supernaturals couldn't allow me, he couldn't hear the Priestess words. He killed them all because you opened the gate of Darkness. He massacre them right in front of that gate to close you in there forever. He had killed them and frozen Avonmora." The water man lied.

"So Roen is now the king and he had Avonmora and her people killed all because I open the Gate of Darkness?" Tharollin asked in anger.

"Yes Tharollin, we did everything within our powers to save them, but since he was ordained as the king and you know his past relationship with Avonmora, he his hurt she chooses you over him, so he refused to listen to me." Tamara said in support of the lie the water man had said.

"Roen will pay dearly." Tharollin said as his face nearly changed to his demon beast.

"Don't worry son, we have a plan we are already working on, just be patient and you will see how Roen and his family will fall on your feet and beg you for forgiveness." The water man said.

"It has better be so father."

"So what about the bones of Lucifer?" Tamara and the water man both asked Tharollin at the same time eagerly.

"I kept it safely with me somewhere no one except me can find it. Until Roen and his family is dead, I won't bring out the bones were I hid it."

The story has just begun.

## Chapter 29

'The best way to succeed in life is to act on the advice we give to others. To look is one thing, to see what you look at is another, to understand what you see is a third, to learn from what you understand is still something else, but to act on what you learn is all that really matters. The truth is, we have all done things in our lives that we may not be proud of. This quote reminds me that people have the ability to grow and learn from their mistakes. I am definitely not the same person I was in my past. I'm not even the same person I was yesterday. The road of life can only reveal itself as it is traveled; each turn in the road reveals a surprise. Man's future is hidden.'

### ♥♥♥♥ THE DISGUISE (Part 1) ♥♥♥♥

"Tharollin, we need the bones." Tamara said softly. "You have to give it to us, your father really needs it."

"I know my father needs it, if Roen did killed the Mermaids as you told me, why is he still breathing and not dead for those years I have been down the Gate of Darkness?" Tharollin demanded. "Why is he still alive?"

"We have been working on that, that is why your father said you should give us a little time." Tamara lied.

"Okay, time you say and time you shall have, until I see what you planned on doing to Roen and see it successfully carried out, the bones remain with me, and no way, will I use the bones for evil, you know me too well father." Tharollin said and turned his back to them to leave, his hands changing into the dark smoke.

"Why won't you give me my bones so that I can use that as an advantage against Roen and his family?" The water man demanded right away.

Stopping in his transformation, he turned to look at Tamara.

"You have the Priestess right? She can help you in whatever plan you want to carry out, in case you have forgotten father SHE IS A SORCERESS!" Tharollin yelled the last four sentences out. "Or are you no longer a sorceress?"

"True, I am a sorceress, but have you met Roen's son? He is very powerful that our spells couldn't penetrate him. That is why we need the bones, then your father will be strong to defeat that stupid son of his." Tamara told Tharollin.

"She is saying the truth, Tharollin, Roen's son is a Tribid and can't be killed easily, the only way we can get Roen is if his son is dead, and to achieve that aim, I will need my bones and be human once again." The water man said convincingly.

"Father, do not take me for a fool, I am not a fool. Let me ask you a question, and if any of you answer it right, I will give you your bones father." Tharollin said.

"Go on and ask your question." Tamara said, thinking of different ways to collect the bones or rather find the bones wherever Tharollin had hid it.

"If I was still inside the Gate of Darkness, won't you and the sorceress still find other means to destroy the man who had killed My Avonmora and her people? Or is there a secret motive you want to use your bones for, that you are not telling me?" Tharollin asked the two people in front of him

"How can you say that Tharollin, we are telling you the truth, I need my bones son. You promised me that once you get it, you will give it to me." The water man said.

"And you also promised me that nothing will happen to Avonmora and her people. Did you also keep your promise father?" Tharollin asked and answer for his father. "No, you didn't, you failed me and I will fail you if Roen and his family is not dead." Tharollin added.

"Okay son, keep my bones and once Roen is dead, you will give me back my bones." The water man finally said.

"Deal father, and Tamara don't even bother yourself looking for the bones, I can assure you that you will fail woefully if you search for it. I know you too well Tamara, don't forget that."

"So won't you help us son?" The water man asked.

"Help you? When I was fighting the thousands of skeletons inside the Gate of Darkness, did you help me?" Tharollin asked pointing at the water man and then to Tamara. "Or you?" None of them answered him. "No, I did it myself and so you both will do it on your own." Tharollin concluded.

"If you are not helping us, what then are you going to do?" Tamara asked.

"Well you mentioned that Roen has a Tribid son, I have to see that son of his and also find out where Roen kept the rest of my demons."

Tharollin changed into his smoke and left the cave.

"We have to look for where he kept the bones master, we can't do anything without it." Tamara said more likely referring to herself. Her plans to use the bones will be fruitless without it. She has to do something fast.

"Don't waste your time Tamara, as far he is the one who hid it, it will be very hard for us to locate it. We just have to kill Roen and once the King is dead, before they will crown his son, we might have gotten my bones from him." The water said.

"Of course master." Tamara said. "Won't he find out we lied to him?"

"I am hoping he doesn't find out yet. All through the years I haven't thought of the demons held captive by Roen. What happened to them?"

"I too don't know master, it escaped my mind. If Tharollin hasn't made mention of the demons, I have totally forgotten the last supernaturals we have."

"Find out what happened to them and report back to me." The water man said and Tamara nodded her head. "I will take my leave now Tamara and leave you to whatever you were doing." He added and dispersed.

Once alone, Tamara screamed out in rage. She was going to find out where he hid the bones at all cost.

Going back to the pot on fire, she put the last ingredients and began to stir it. Once the liquid has thickened enough, she scoop some of it with a spoon and drank it.

Doing that three more times, she held her head and started groaning in pains as her hair started falling off to be replaced by a sandy color hair.

Her face started melting as she dropped to the ground covering her face.

It took 10 minutes for her groaning to stop and her transformation to take place.

Getting up to her feet, she took the mirror near the pot and stared at it. A smile curve in her lips appeared as she looked at her features.

She was Lillian, she looked exactly like Lillian. Rae won't suspect a thing.

Snapping her hand, her attire changed into one of Lillian's clothes.

Time to collect some bracelet. With that thought, she disappeared and appear inside the house of Lillian.

An orb of blue became visible as soon as Lillian disappeared, it vanished afterwards.

The real Lillian will be very busy trying to save the life of a young girl in the Witches shop.

That will definitely keep her there until my mission has been accomplished. Tamara thought as she went into the kitchen and start preparing lunch.

\*\*\*\*

Across the reef, inside the deep Sea of Nile.

King Nile sat down on his throne chair and was thinking about his daughter Selena.

Lydia swam towards him.

"I greet you father." Lydia greeted bringing King Nile out from his thoughts.

"My dear Lydia, what brings you here? I thought you might be with your husband and daughter, why are you here?" King Nile asked softly when he saw his daughter.

"Father, my sisters are telling me how sad you have been. I came here to know why you are sad, so please tell me what troubles you."

"Your sisters are correct, so many things troubles me my daughter." King Nile said.

"And what can it be?"

"One is, I have been thinking of your sister, Selena, as she might be out there alone. I shouldn't have banished her forever, I should have sent her away for two years and allowed her to come back." King Nile finally revealed his main sadness.

"I know how you feel about Selena's banishment. My sisters and I are sad too. It's been 50,000 (Fifty thousand years) since Selena left." Lydia said.

"I didn't know when the years had gone by." King Nile said sadly, so many years has long passed.

"Father, you have been underwater ever since the day Selena left so you wouldn't know how the years went by. I completely understand, but you can't undo what you did. That is why I sent my daughter across the reef to meet with the rest of the Centaurs and others super-creatures. I heard Selena helped strays mermaids and merman and build her own kingdom there." Lydia said.

"Really? She is doing well over there?" King Nile asked with hope. "Then I might visit her and ask for her forgiveness."

"That's the problem father, when she left she was pregnant with Michael's child. She gave birth to a beautiful mermaid and handed her the kingdom and disappeared. No one has ever seen or heard of her, except her child." Lydia explained.

"Then, I will visit my grandchild and explain things to her, she will understand and make me see my daughter." King Nile said with a smile adoring his face.

"There is a bigger problem father." Lydia said.

"And what can it be?" King Nile demanded immediately the smile gone.

"Avonmora, Selena's daughter, has been frozen and her people killed by a selfish and greedy Tamara." Lydia said in anger as she mentioned Tamara's name.

"Who is Tamara and what has she done to my grandchild?"

"Tamara is the priestess over there, across the reef." Lydia said. "She did a lot of things to Avonmora, but before she was Frozen, she has a child which no one knows."

"That means I have two more daughters from Selena, right?" King Nile asked.

"Yes father. I sent Sarai to look for Selena and she saw her granddaughter instead. I asked her to keep an eye on her." Lydia said, she didn't want to tell her father yet that Rae is not that safe.

"Good, let no harm come to my great grandchild." King Nile said and a thought came to him. "If Avonmora, my granddaughter, is frozen, then I can unfreeze her. The water used in freezing her will obey me."

"It is not easy father, her soul has been taken by Tamara." Lydia said.

"Then let's kill this Tamara then and retrieve Avonmora's soul back." King Nile said. This lady called Tamara is really getting him angry.

"There is someone she has given the soul to, I don't know who it is, but I will get to know soon."

"Fine, we should hope that Sarai finds where Selena is fast." King Nile said. "If you need help, don't fail to come to me."

"I hope that my daughter do find Selena and father, the time for you to rise isn't now." Lydia said.

"Thank you Lydia, for making me know I have two extra daughters, at least I am more relaxed that Selena is safe but doesn't want to be found." King Nile said with a smile.

\*\*\*\*

IN THE REALM OF THE GODS:

The gods all sat down.

"Something is wrong." Zeus, the king of the gods said.

"Why do you say so my king?" Apollo, the god of Music and Medicine asked.

"Don't you find it strange? Tamara doesn't give us feedback on our people again." Zeus said.  
"It's as if someone or something is blocking us."

"You are right my king, it has been long she consulted us." Ares, the god of war said.

"Then we should pay earth a visit." Eros, the god of love suggested.

"Great idea, it has been long we've seen our friend, Poseidon (Nile), so we should also use that opportunity to see him." Zeus said.

"True, but before coming down to earth, we have to send a message across to Tamara, so she could tell our people about our coming." Apollo said.

"Hermes!" Zeus shouted once and a tall man appeared right in front of them.

"You called me my king." Hermes, messenger of the gods said.

"Yes I did Hermes, you will have to go down to earth and inform Tamara we shall soon be paying all the supernaturals a visit." Zeus instructed.

Hermes nodded his head. "I will do as you have said my king."

"Very well then, you can go."

Hermes disappeared. He appeared in his chamber only for the water man to appear next to him.

"They want to visit the Earth soon." Hermes said to the water man when he saw him.

\*\*\*\*

It was closing time and everyone was going home in groups or with their friends or siblings.

Sarah and Rae together with Jorkallun and Jason all made their way out of the school compound.



Her hands held all the rose flowers Jason had brought for her.

"I have to start going now." Rae said as she touched her bracelet and a portal opened.

"Are you sure you want to use the portal Rae? Remember you now have a boyfriend who can teleport you anywhere." Jason said smiling at her.

"Your offer is tempting, but thank you my handsome." Rae said and winked at him. "Besides my flesh is willing but my head is telling me no, so I am following my head."

"It's not going to hurt you if I take you to your granny house instead of the usual portal you normally take."

"Thank you for your offer but I prefer my portal, I don't have much energy to answer my grandmother questions." Rae said and closed the gap between them and kissed him, she quickly entered the portal. "See you tomorrow in school Jason and those two lover birds with us."

The portal closes leaving the three.

"Now I am feeling bored as my trouble maker is gone, see you tomorrow Jorkallun and Sarah." Jason said and disappeared.

"Now that leaves the both of us." Jorkallun said as he placed his hand on her waist and they start walking together towards Sarah's home. "Why don't you tell me more about yourself beautiful."

Sarah blushes when she heard beautiful. She cleared her throat to tell Jorkallun a little bit about herself.

\*\*\*\*\*

The portal opened behind Lillian (Tamara) and Rae stepped out of it, she went and hugged her and place a kiss on her forehead. Rae saw the grimace look her grandmother when she had kissed her forehead.

She was also expecting lot of questions from her granny to ask her where she got the roses from, but none was coming.

Strange....

Why did she do her face like that? Rae thought as she ran to her room to bath and change her clothes.

First she didn't ask her how her day was in school and now she grimace her face when she pecked her forehead.

She can't tell her what happened in school yet, until later to be sure something isn't wrong.

She bath and quickly wore one of her house clothes before heading downstairs to see her granny still in the kitchen.

"Here you go Rae." Lillian (Tamara) said lovely as she gave Rae a plate of food.

Collecting it. "Thank you granny." Rae said with a smile and carried it to her favorite chair and sat down and started eating

Lillian (Tamara) sat next to her with a smile on her face as she watches Rae.

"Granny your staring is creepy me out." Rae said once she noticed the stares.

"Sorry my dear." Lillian (Tamara) said. "Before I forget, I created a beautiful bracelet for you, more beautiful than the one you're wearing now."

"Really?" Rae asked with sudden interest.

"Yeah, beautiful one with different shades of color. You will like it."

"So where is it?"

"You will have to first of all give me that bracelet you wore and then I will give you the new one with colors."

"Okay granny." Rae said and started to remove her bracelet but pauses as she tries to remember something her granny had told her before, at that moment a knock was heard.

"Granny are you expecting anyone?" Rae asked as she stood up and went towards the door not waiting for an answer.

Tamara heart beats faster than usual, Lillian supposed not be here by now. She knows it wasn't Tamara, so who then could it be?

"I am coming." Rae said as the knock came a second time. She opened the door and was surprised to see Jason.

"Hi, I don't know if this is the residence of Lillian Fey. You see I am looking for a beautiful girl called Rae, but I think I am lost."

Tamara was shocked when she heard Jason's voice.

What is he doing here?

## Chapter 30

'Accept yourself, love yourself, and keep moving forward. If you want to fly, you have to give up what weighs you down. You are not an option, a choice or a soft place to land after a long battle. You were meant to be the one. If you can wrap yourself around the idea that you are something incredible, then you will stop excusing behavior that rapes your very soul. You were never meant to teach someone to love you. You were meant to be loved. We are each gifted in a unique and important way. It is our privilege and our adventure to discover our own special light.'

### ♥♥♥♥♥ THE DISGUISE (Part 2) ♥♥♥♥♥

Tamara was terrified hearing the voice of Jason. She hopes he doesn't see right through her.

She placed her right index finger to her forehead to tighten the disguise spell even more.

"You are in the wrong house Jason." Rae said with a smile.

"Really? If I am in the wrong house how then do you know my name?" Jason asked playfully returning her smile with one of his own.

"Seriously Jason, what are you doing here?" Rae demanded. "Shouldn't you be at home, sleeping, training with warriors or whatever a Prince do at his palace?"

"I came to see you ...point of correction ...I came to see my girlfriend, it's been like forever since I saw you last." Jason replied.

"But we saw few minutes ago?" Rae asked with a pointed look.

"Well to me is like forever, so are you going to argue why I am here or you invite me into your home."

"My grandmother is around."

"So?" Jason shrugs his shoulders as he asks.

"She is not your fan, she doesn't like you that much Jason."

"People don't like me, but who cares, at least you are among the few who likes me and you are special to me." Jason said and gently pushed Rae out of the way as he entered the house inviting himself in. He waited for Rae to lock the door.

"Your house is so tiny Ra-" Jason pauses as he saw the muder look Rae sent in his way. "I mean to say your house is tiny compared to mine. So where is your grandmother?"

"She is in the sitting room." Rae responded. "Let me take you to see her."

Rae walked towards the sitting room with Jason behind her. She entered and sat down on her favorite chair and waited for Jason to enter and sit next to her, but she didn't hear any footsteps. She has to turn her head to see if Jason followed her. He stood by the door of the sitting room, looking at her grandmother strangely.

She looked at her grandmother and saw her staring at Jason, her hands shaking in fear even though she was trying to hide it in her dress. Why is her hands shaking with so much fear?

That's odd.

"Granny, why are your hands shaking all of a sudden, don't you know Jason again?" Rae asked her granny.

Her grandmother couldn't reply her. Her eyes were on Jason as Jason's eyes were on her. He has a thoughtful expression showing in his handsome features.

"Jason, why are you staring at my grandmother like she stole a diamond from you?" Rae asked Jason.

"This is not your grandmother Rae, she can fool you but not me." Jason replied without taking his eyes off the fake Lillian.

Tamara heart began to accelerate when she heard those words from Jason. If she had known that Jason was coming here today, she wouldn't have come. Now she has to find a way before Jason knows it's her.

But what other way? She is trapped because even though she disappeared, Jason will track her down. He is good at everything. Rae voice brought her out from her thoughts.

"How do you mean?" Rae demanded in surprise. "She is my grandmother Jason, you are just making this up." Rae added.

"I am not making it up Rae and your fake grandmother knows it." Jason responded and went to sit with Rae still looking at the fake Lillian. "Didn't you notice anything strange when you came home? Her character towards you or words? She Is Not Lillian." Jason added with a smile.

"Impossible Jason, why would someone try to disguise himself or herself, as my grandmother? I don't get it because my grandmother doesn't look for trouble, and she cooked and I ate her food just now, am still alive, isn't it?" Rae ask trying not to believe the words of Jason.

Truly her grandmother behaved in an odd way today but that doesn't mean she is a different person.

Rubbing the middle of his forehead with a finger, Jason nodded to himself. "I know you won't believe me when I say she is not Lillian, but I am going to prove to you what I am saying is true, and if it is true you owe me."

"Do whatever you want, but don't get sad if she forbids you from coming to see me here again." Rae said looking at her grandmother.

Odd, she isn't talking or rebuking what Jason had just spit out.

Jason rubbed his palms together and opened it, a phoenix bird made of fire appeared on his palm. He stroke the fire bird head in a lovely way.

Tamara wondered what Jason was doing, her fears increases the more.

"You know what to do." Jason said and the phoenix left his hands, disappearing into thin air.

"What was that for?" This time around, it was the fake Lillian (Tamara) who spoke.

"Oh, she give speaks." Jason said smiling and gesture with his right hand as he did circle in the air.

A fire rope circled the fake Lillian. "What are you doing!?" Tamara shrieked in fear and faces her granddaughter. "Rae won't you do something, he tied me with fire and it's burning my skin." She lying, the fire wasn't burning any of her skin.

"I don't know whoever you are which I am going to find out soon, but just know you lie too much." Jason said before Rae would speak. "The fire doesn't burn anyone unless I ask them too, since Rae is still saying that you are her real grandmother, the fire won't burn you." He added. "And you can't escape from it Lillian."

"So what about the bird you sent a few minutes ago, what will it do?" Rae asks.

"Well, to search for the real Lillian and bring her home right away." Jason answered.

"And how do you intend on doing that? If truly there is another Lillian out there which your bird went to find, do you think she will follow your bird?" Rae asked.

"It's not a normal bird Rae, it's a phoenix bird, and don't worry yourself about that, I will speak to her myself once I see her." Jason replied.

\*\*\*\*

THE REALM OF THE GODS:

"What!" The water man shouted. "How did you get to know?"

Hermes nodded his head. "I was sent to inform the Priestess of the supernatural about their coming to earth soon." Hermes answered.

"Did they tell you the day they will be coming?"

"No, I wasn't given the day of their coming, but they will come." Hermes said.

"My son has come back from the Gate of Darkness with my bones." The water said.

"That's good news, we have been waiting for that since, so when is the ritual taking place to join your bones and you together?" Hermes asked.

"I wish I could give a positive reply but I can't, Tharollin has refused to give it back to me and that is our main problem." The water man said.

"If he doesn't want to give you back your bones, then we should steal it from him." Hermes suggested.

"Tamara also made this suggestion, but you don't know my son like I do, if he hides anything you can't find what he hid no matter how hard you try too."

"Then what are we going to do?" Hermes demanded.

"I lied it was the Wolf King who had murdered Avonmora and her people, so for me to get back my bones I will have to kill Roen and his family." The water said.

"But you know Avonmora is truly your son's mate, even though you lied to the Priestess who believe and cast a spell on both of them into believing they were mates. He won't give you your bones if you didn't do as he asked." Hermes said.

"I know, that is why I am here, you have to keep blocking the gods eyes from knowing what is happening down there. I will hurry up my plans."

"Okay, farewell." Hermes said and the water man disappeared.

\*\*\*\*

Closing her eyes, Lillian started chanting as soon as her hand touches the forehead of the girl who slumped. Tiny sawdust started coming out from her palms down to the face of the young girl. This went on for close to an hour.

None of the witches in the shop disturb her as they know what Lillian was doing. This spell needs concentration.

She was finally reaching the final stage of the spell that will remove whatever evil spell that was cast on the young witch when she heard a loud gasps round her and the whisperings.

She ignored them and focus more on the girl, when she finally removed the evil spell from her, Lillian opened her eyes and touches the girl nose, she was satisfied when the girl started breathing normal.

"She is now okay and will wake up in five minutes time." Lillaian said as she then looked up to see the cause of the loud gasps she heard.

It was a phoenix bird which landed near her once she made eye contact with it. There was only one person who has a phoenix fire bird in the whole supernaturals. Why would he be here?

Once the bird landed, it transformed into Jason who smiled at Lillian.

"What are you doing here my prince, I mean your father would have sent one of the palace messengers if he needs my attention." Lillian said trying to be polite to him.

"Well I visited your house to see Rae and I saw someone who disguises him or herself to be you. I don't know why he or she did that so I am here to inform you." Jason told the witch.

"You came to my house to see my granddaugh-" Lillian pauses in her statements mid way as what Jason had said processes in her head. "What did you just say?" She demanded straight away.

"I said I visited your house to see Rae and I saw someone who disguises to be you, I don't know what the person is trying to achieve by faking to you. The fake person trying to be you is still in your house, in the sitting room with Rae and as I speak to you." Jason replied.

Getting up to her feet with lighting speed, she teleport herself to her home without waiting for Jason.

"She will get a cold if she's not taken from the ground, at least she saved her life and we wouldn't want a cold to catch her." Jason said to the rest of the witches who were staring at him. He transformed back to the Phoenix bird and vanished.

\*\*\*\*

Tharollin appeared inside the palace and hypothesized a guard who was guarding one of the gates of the eastern path of the palace.



"Tell me where the Prince is?" Tharollin demanded.

"He went out of the palace, going to see a friend of his." The guard reply.

"What about the demons being kept captives, where did your king keep them?"

"I don't know, no one knows where the king kept them."

"You are just a waste of time, but I won't kill you so it won't cause any suspicious." Tharollin said and began to move away from the guard, then stop. "But then again, I lied."

He closes his mouth a little bit and started sucking the air around them, the soul of the guard left his body and entered Tharollin mouth, swallowing it.

The guard fell with a thud, turning into charcoal, he was dead.

Shaking his head sadly. "What a waste of soul." Tharollin said and then looked around him. Where can Roen hid his demons?

He disappeared.

\*\*\*\*\*

Lillian teleport herself home, to her sitting room.

She wasn't surprised when she saw Jason sited with Rae because she knows how he carries out his message.

What shocked her that left her mouth wide open was when she saw a look alike of her sitting down with a fire rope around her.

Rae eyes widen when she saw another woman appearing beside them. She was confused, who is her real grandmother amongst them?

"She is your real grandmother, she went to the witch's shop to get some potion." Jason said to Rae breaking off the silence that has suddenly engulfed them as he pointed at Lillian who had just appeared. "So you owe me Rae."

Tamara know she was in big trouble now that the real Lillian is here. She has to come up with something fast.

"I find it hard to believe that there are actually two grandmother's here with me." Rae said.

"Who are you and why do you choose to disguise yourself as me?" Lillian asked her fake look alike. "Don't you have someone else to impersonate?"

"I would ask the same question, who are you and what are you doing in my house?" Lillian (Tamara) demanded in the same tone the real Lillian had use.

"You still have the guts to ask me who I am in my own house!" Lillian shouted angrily. "We shall see who's the real one here." She added and she started speaking in a strange language which grow louder with each passing moment

The fake Lillian held her head in pain as the chants kept increasing. She started transforming back to her real self.

Tamara gave a loud shout as at the same time Lillian shouted the final words.

Rae gasp in shock as she saw Tamara sitting where the fake Lillian had sat down.

It was Tamara all along..... Jason was right.

"Tamara so it's you?" Lillian said surprised.

Getting herself as the pain went away, Tamara smiled. "Yes it is me."

"Why are you doing this? What do you hope to get from this disguise?"

"A lot of things Lillian and one of them is Rae." Tamara answered.

"Rae? What has Rae got to do with this?"

"You are hiding something Lillian, something I want to find out about Rae." Tamara reply. "You lied to me that day when I came to your house."

"I don't understand what you are saying Tamara, Rae is my granddaughter and you can't change that fact."

"Then why is she wearing that hidden spell bracelet on her wrist, I disguise as you to tell her to give me her bracelet and I will know who she really is." Tamara said in pride. "I could have succeeded if not for Jason coming here and seeing right through me."

"I will let this slide Tamara, but do not repeat this next time, for the sake of the blood we both share, I am warning you never to try this again. Just because the gods choose you as the priestess of us and I obey you, does not mean I can't defeat you." Lillian warned. "I am giving you a last warning."

"Of course I won't try it Lillian, but say the truth, you are hiding the identity of Rae for a reason and I am going to find out whatever reason it is."

"Jason release her from your hold, I don't like hearing empty pots making the loudest noises."

Jason nodded and the fire died down immediately, freeing Tamara.

Tamara stood up from her seat. "This isn't over sister." With that she disappeared.

"Wow, that was unexpected, I didn't know you were related to that ordinary lady that calls herself the priestess." Jason said.

"Yeah, no one knows we are from the same parents, she chose her path and I chose mine." Lillian said. "Thank you Jason for alerting me."

"That's no problem."

Lillian turned to look at Rae and saw a thoughtful expression on her face.

"What is going on your mind dear?" Lillian asked.

"I was thinking about what Tamara said, about the bracelet, is it true that you are hiding my real identity?"

Speaking the truth, "Yes Rae, remember that night Jorkallun came to visit and I told you I have a secret to tell you and you said I shouldn't tell you yet, you remember?"

"Yes granny I do remember that night." Rae answered.

"Jorkallun was here? What for? What was he looking for here? What did he want from Rae?" Jason asked facing Rae feeling jealous.

"He came to visit me when I didn't come to school for some days, don't feel jealous Jason, it's you I love."

The clearing of throat from Lillian brought Rae back to her.

"What is going on between the both of you? And why is Rae telling this Prince in distress she loves him?"

"Well granny, we profess our love for each other today and something happened when we kissed, it was magical." Rae said dreamy.

"You kissed! You both kissed!" Lillian shrieked out as she glared at Jason who just shrugs his shoulders as if he didn't do anything.

"Granny please lower your voice, we are not far from you." Rae said blocking her ears with her two hands. "I haven't even told you the interesting part yet and you are shouting."

"What interesting part do you want to tell me in a kiss?"

"When we kissed, her hair changes to different shades of color and her face too." Jason said before Rae would answer.

"What?"

"Yeah, she becomes a totally different person." Jason said.

Lillian didn't believe a word.

"She wouldn't believe it until we show her." Rae said. "Kiss me Jason."

"Yeah I would love to kiss you but not in front of an old woma-" he was cut off by Rae's lips.

Lillian eyes grew wide in shock when she saw the transformation happening right in front of her.

She glanced at Rae's wrist and saw the bracelet still there.

Rae dispatch her lips from Jason and faces her grandmother who looked shocked.

"Believe us now grandma?" Rae asked holding her new colored hair in her fingers as it began to fade.

"Rae, there is something you must know about yourself, I think it's time for you to know who you truly are." Lillian said finally.

Now it's the time to tell Rae the truth.

## Chapter 31

'A smooth sea never made a skillful mariner, neither do uninterrupted prosperity and success qualify for usefulness and happiness. The storms of adversity, like those of the ocean, rouse the faculties, and excite the invention, prudence, skill and fortitude of the voyager. The martyrs of ancient times, in bracing their minds to outward calamities, acquired a loftiness of purpose and a moral heroism worth a lifetime of softness and security. Love is a symbol of eternity. It wipes out all sense of time, destroying all memory of a beginning and all fear of an end. Courage is always greatest when blended with meekness; intellectual ability is most admired when it sparkles in the setting of modest self-distrust; and never does the human soul appear so strong as when it foregoes revenge and dares to forgive any injury.

♥♥♥♥ REVEALING THE TRUTH ♥♥♥♥

"Does it relate to the secret I asked you not to tell me yet?" Rae asked not getting her grandmother.

Lillian nodded her head in answer.

"Then I am still not ready to hear it granny." Rae said.

"No my child, it is better I tell you the secret than to allow someone else find out and hurt you." Lillian said, now that Tamara is hell bent on finding out Rae's secret, it is better for her to tell Rae everything about herself right now to avoid things in the future.

"Okay granny, you can tell me the secret." Rae said finally.

Jason stood up from his seat and stretch out his arms dramatically. "I better be going." Jason announced loudly.

"And where do you think you are going?" Lillian and Rae asked at the same time.

Lillian turned to glare at Rae who raised up her hands in the air.

"I wasn't trying to mimic you grandma." Rae said with a little smile.

"Better." Lillian said and return her gaze back to the white haired boy. "Again I ask, where do you think you are going?"

"Home, you want to tell Rae a secret so I figured it out that I am not needed here." Jason answered with a shrug. "I will come again when there will be no secret to tell."

"I hope I won't regret this." Lillian whispered more to herself. "Seat down Jason, you helped me by telling me about the disguise of Tamara, so you are not going anywhere." Lillian ordered and Jason sat back without arguing.

"What I am about to say must not be said anywhere, only the three of us would know about this secret." Lillian said and look at Jason. "And Jason I trust you won't reveal whatever I am about to say to anyone, not even your mother or father, unless you don't value the life of Rae like I do." Lillian said with a serious warning.

"I won't tell." Jason said, as far it's Rae he would do anything not to hurt her.

"Swear by the thing you value most Jason." Lillian said expecting Jason to swear by his life, but he did the opposite.

Using his right hand to hold his white hair. "I swear on my hair I won't tell anyone."

Lillian rolled her eyeballs at him. "Is it your hair you value most or your life?"

"I value my hair more than my life, I am a phoenix remember, we die and come back to life."

Lillian snorted loudly.

"I am serious old woman, I value my hair the same way I value Rae so don't snort at me, you are not the only one who could do that." Jason said with a raised eyebrows.

"Granny he has given out his word and if he goes back on it, I will personally barb his hair like I did to Antonio, the witch school librarian whose long hair is bald and wouldn't grow again." Rae giving Jason a smiling warningly.

"Okay." Lillian finally said. "I would love to start the conversation here but like I said to my friend a thousand years ago, the walls have ears, I don't trust Tamara, she might still be lingering around here to listen to the secret." Lillian added.

She spoke a word and a door opened right there in front of them. Standing up her feet she gestures to Rae and Jason to enter the door.

Getting up to their feet, Jason entered first followed by Rae and finally Lillian who closes the door behind her.

\*\*\*\*

Darin saw the large grin on his son's face when he walked into the room, he was nicely dressed and was combing his hair.

"What's making you grin so much son that a maid isn't combing your hair?" King Darin ask alerting his son about his presence. "You have been happy since the past few days, what's the secret son?"

"Haven't I told you anything father about what happened recently?" Dean ask his father as he went towards his bed and sat down, Darin doing the same.

"No you haven't told me. All you did these days is grin and smile to yourself so today I couldn't bear it anymore, that is why I am here." King Darin said.

"It's about the girl I told you, Rae." Prince Dean said with a smile.

Nodding his head. "Yes, what about her?" King Darin demanded.

"I collected her house address from Kate and went to her house, I lied to her that I needed her to teach me some of her skills in fighting which she agrees." Prince Darin answered his father. "Isn't it great father?"

"It is great son, but how could training with Rae makes her fall in love with you? I still maintain what I said before, tell me who are parents are and I will visit her myself and ask her parents for her hand in marriage to you." King Darin said as if it was the easiest thing to do.

"Not yet father, I need to win her heart first when we train, but if it does not work out, then I will use your suggestions." Prince Dean said.

"Okay, do whatever you wish to do, but at least tell me the names of her parents." King Darin said.

"She is living with her grandmother, I think her parents are dead and I won't tell you her grandmother's name, you will go behind my back to her house." Prince Dean said.

"Okay son, do let me know whenever you want me in." King Darin said. "So it is her house you are going to dress like this?"

Dean nodded his head and answered him with a charming smile. "Yes father, I can't wait to see her beautiful face once again."

"Oh." King Darin said getting up to his feet. "Then if that be the case, let me leave you to what you are doing."

"Thanks father, oh and please tell one of the maids to get me some flowers." Dean said.

"No problem son." With that he left his son chamber.

\*\*\*\*

Tamara appeared in her cave, livid with anger as she started destroying things around her.

She has been disgraced by Jason and Lillian in front of that little girl.

"With the look on your face and the way things are here, I see your mission to the girl house proved abortive." The water man said behind Tamara making her still.

She turns around and greeted him.

"It didn't go as I expected my Lord, I would have been successful if not that Jason chooses that moment to come and he and Lillian saw right through me. I was disgraced in the mere presence of that little girl." Tamara said.

"This little girl you speak of, seems like a special one, right?" The water man asked suddenly interested.

"I am suspecting her to be my Lord, all I know is Lillian is hiding the identity of the little girl." Tamara said in anger as she remembers her humiliation.

"Well that is not why I am here, Hermes sent me a message to tell you." The water man said pushing off the little girls thought to the back of his mind.

"And what did he tell you my Lord?" Tamara asked.

"The gods are preparing to come down to earth soon." The water man finally revealed.

"But they can't come now, we haven't even gotten your bones nor the powers yet." Tamara said in shock.

"I know, that is why we are going to hasten our plans, we have to kill Roen and collect my bones from Tharollin."

"But did Hermes said when they will be coming?" Tamara asked.

"No, they didn't tell him, I guess they want to pay earth a surprise visit but before they do that, we shall be the one to surprise them."

"So the plan now is to kill Roen, right?" Tamara demanded.

"Yes, but I know it won't be that easy since Jason will be involved." The water said after a thought.



"But we shouldn't be afraid of Jason."

"I am not afraid of him, if I were to be human with my bones, I will push him out of the way since." The water man said, "But hope is not lost yet, I will come up with something like I always do. See again soon Tamara" The water man added and disappeared, leaving Tamara alone who return back to her anger.

She carried the pot she had used to make the potion and threw it on the wall of the cave, it crashes to pieces when it made impact with the wall. She had taken hours to prepare the potion for her disguise and it took Lillian few minutes to break her spell.

That is why she hates her sister with passion, she wants to kill Lillian for this disgrace but couldn't.

Tamara knows she isn't that strong like her sister Lillian that is why she and her daughter needs Lucifer bones.

As for Jason, one day, just one day he will meet his match who will defeat him, and when that day comes, she shall have the last laugh as he breathes his last.

\*\*\*\*

The door opened to another hidden room, the same room she had taken Avonmora too 1,000 years ago.

"Sit." Lillian ordered and made three chairs appeared in the middle of the room, she sat on one and gesture with her hand on the other empty chairs.

Jason and Rae sat down, they were looking around them in awe.

"Rae you are not a witch." Lillian said finally and that snap Rae eyes to her quickly in disbelief.

Jason was staring at Lillian as if she had grown two heads.

"What did you mean by that, I am a witch grandmother." Rae said and snap her hand making fire appeared at the tip of her fingers. "You see, I am a witch." Rae added with a disbelief voice.

"No you are not, let me rephrase my words back, You are not born a witch and I am not your grandmother, we are not related." Lillian revealed the more.

The sudden laughter heard in the room was coming from Rae.

"Granny, are you okay? Did you hit your head elsewhere?" Rae asked staring at her Grandmother. "Please do not say anymore."

"It's true Rae, your mother, your real mother pleaded with me to protect you before she was killed." Lillian said.

"I know about that Story grandma, how my parents came to visit you and on their way here, they died but I managed to survive in the gashly accident as you tore my mother's stomach to get to me, you saved me granny or rather like you always say, the gods saved me." Rae pointed out.

"I know I told you that, but they are lies to cover up your real identity Rae. Your mother told me to call you Rae." Lillian said. "Remove that bracelet from your wrist."

Rae did as she was ordered, she removed the bracelet from her wrist entirely and waited for any change to come but none did. "It is removed granny, why am I still the same?" Rae asked.

"Removing it won't make you change, it makes you not have witches powers." Lillian replied. "Now, re do the fire spell again and see for yourself."

Rae did and was shocked when nothing came out. She tried all the spells she knows but nothing came out.

"What is going on granny, why can't I do magic?" Rae asked Lillian.

"Now put on your bracelet and do a spell with your fingers." Lillian said slowly. All these while, Jason was quite observing what was going on in front of him.

Rae did as she was instructed. Her eyes widen in shock when her fingers tip went on fire at the snap of her hand.

"What is going on?"

"I told you, you are not a witch neither are you born as one. That bracelet prevents strong powerful people from knowing your aura and also to make you perform magic. I gave you that because the old bracelet magic has faded, that was what Jorkallun told me that night he was here." Lillian explained.

"I don't understand." Rae said holding her head with her hands as Jason gently place his arm across her shoulder, trying to comfort her in his way.

"I guess you should start from the beginning, for Rae to understand you better, I understand what you are saying but not Rae." Jason told Lillian.

"Okay, I once had a friend who was betrayed by her soulmate and that betrayer caused her life. It was her soulmate who had opened the Gate of Darkness." Lillian said.

"But what has that got to do with 'starting from the beginning'?" Rae asked.

"A lot Rae, because this friend of mine that died is your mother." Lillian finally revealed.

"Hold on, are you trying to say, the man who had open the Gate of Darkness and betrayed Avonmora, is Rae's mother?" Jason asked in surprise.

That name sounds familiar to Rae but she couldn't place where she had heard that name before.

"Yes Jason, I take it you read the books you were supposed not to read, right?" Lillian asked looking at Jason.

"Yes, that is how I got to know about Avonmora." Jason replied.

"Who is this Avonmora? I think I have heard that name before." Rae asked looking at her grandmother and then Jason, waiting for one of them to speak.

"Remember that day you told me Sarah took you to the back of the school, where you met a frozen woman there, in front of the Gate that was opened a little bit, remember?" Lillian asked.

Remembering the frozen lady, "Yes I remember now." Rae said before her eyes widen as she gasps loudly. "Hold on a minute, you mean to say the Avonmora Jason just spoke about, who is my mother, is the frozen lady I met in the front Gate of Darkness?" Rae suddenly demanded.

"Yes Rae, for once in your life, you are correct on this one. Avonmora is truly your mother, before she was killed, she came to meet and confided in me about her pregnancy, which your father refused to believe her. I removed you from her womb with my magic and placed you in here." Lillian said and a finger of hers made the gesture of come. A ball which looks to have burst and looks more like nylon appeared in their presence. "I put you in there and waited until it's time for you to burst since you have his blood running through your veins, though, it didn't take a thousand years for it to burst open and you were born."

"Why would my father not believe my mother when she told him about her pregnancy?" Rae asked.

"Because, his side hardly bares children. I wouldn't blame him child, he did that because of what they believe." Lillian said.

"I need to understand something, if the man that opens the Gate of Darkness is Avonmora's mate, then he is Rae's father?" Jason asked Lillian.

"Yes Jason."

Jason placed his hands on his forehead.

"What is it Jason?" Lillian asked.

"If truly she is their child, then she is the last mermaid that I will sacrifice to close down the Gate of Darkness forever."

Lillian eyes widen, she had totally forgotten about that.

"Remember your promise Jason, you won't tell anyone about Rae." Lillian said with her teeth closed.

"I know, just because I now know who really Rae is doesn't mean I will go back to my words, I won't allow any harm to come to Rae." Jason said with seriousness. "And for the record, I don't believe what Tamara says."

Breathing a sigh of relief, Lillian nodded her head. "Thank you Jason."

"I don't understand what you both are talking about? Who is my father and my mother and why will I be used as a sacrifice by Jason?" Rae said bringing her Granny's attention back to her.

"Your mother is the Queen of the Mer-folk kingdom before she was killed alongside with her people by Tamara to close down the Gate of Darkness. The Gate didn't close as expected and she said before the gate will close completely, we will have to sacrifice the last mermaid." Lillian said. "And your father, is the Demon King which makes you a hybrid. The gods then made a prophecy which fall on Roen, that was why he was made the king of all Supernaturals." Lillian explained further.

"And I was the prophecy, I was born to sacrifice the last mermaid, which is you." Jason concluded for Lillian.

"So am a mermaid and a demon, half and half?" Rae asked looking at her legs expecting to see a tail and then looked at Jason. She hits him on the head, though not hard. "The day you will try to sacrifice me, I will cut you into tiny pieces, do you hear me?" Rae warned.

"Ouch, your hand hurts." Jason said. "Trust me Rae, I will never sacrifice you because I Love You, I will protect you." Jason said promising himself to do that.

"I am counting on those words Jason." Rae said with a smile and lean to kiss Jason on the lips before staring at her grandmother. "Even though we are not related, you are still my grandmother." Rae added.

"Thank you Rae, thank you." Lillian smiled.

"So how can I see my mermaid form." Rae asked brightly imagining herself in her mermaid form.

"When you both kissed, that was half of your transformation." Lillian said and stood up from her chair and went to meet Rae, touching her throat, a white tiny ball came out of Rae's throat into Lillian's hand. "This is the main hidden spell that hides your mermaid side."

Lillian hardly finished what she was saying when a bright light surrounded Rae.

When the light faded, Rae saw herself falling to the ground but before she could touch the ground, Jason was holding her in her waist.

"Fascinating." Jason whispers in wonder as he stares at the rainbow tail before looking at Rae to tell her how beautiful she looks when he stops once he made eye contact with Rae. He couldn't move as he stares at Rae, his soulmate, he has imprinted on her.

(I explained this before in chapter 2

When a shape-shifter, a Wolf, imprints on a specific girl or woman, he becomes unconditionally bound to her for the rest of his life. When it happens, the experience is described as being gravitationally pulled toward that person while a glowing heat fills him, and everyone and everything else in his life becomes secondary, and only the imprintee is left to matter, leaving the shape-shifter with a deep need to do anything to please and protect his soulmate. It's not like love at first sight, really. It's more like... gravity moves... suddenly. It's not the earth holding you here anymore, she does... You become whatever she needs you to be, whether that's a protector, or a lover, or a friend.)

Rae eyes locked with his and she couldn't tear her eyes from him. "My soulmate." Her rainbow eyeballs shiny brightly as she muttered those words..

"My Mate." He growled out the words possessively as his wolf takes over, his white eyeballs changing to midnight black.

Lillian mouth hung open in shock, she wasn't expecting that.

## Chapter 32

'When you start doubting yourself, remember how far you have come. Remember everything that you have faced, all the battles you have won, and all the fears you have overcome. Spend the day appreciating every little thing that comes your way, and you'll end the day feeling deeply grateful for your life. You have to take the good with the bad, smile when you're sad, love what you've got, and remember what you had. Always forgive but never forget, learn from your mistakes, but never regret. People change, things go wrong, just remember, life goes on.'

♥♥♥♥ THE MILLENNIUM WOLF ♥♥♥♥

Sarah opened the front door of her house with the spare key that was with her. Her grandmother wasn't around.

"Come in Jorkallun." Sarah said sweetly as she gesture with her hand for Jorkallun to follow her.

Jorkallun followed her in looking around him. "Your house is nice Sarah."

"Thank you." Sarah said blushing a little bit. "My room is up the stairs, if my grandmother comes home now and see you, her questions will fill a whole book, so I am avoiding that. Unless you have other things you're doing at home."

"I am not doing anything at home, you still haven't told me about yourself Sarah." Jorkallun said as Sarah lead the way to her room and he followed her.

"I know, there are a lot of things you don't know about me, that is why I am thinking either to tell you the truth or not." Sarah said opening the door to her room.

Jorkallun has to blink his eyes as he entered her room, everything around the room was in blue. He wasn't paying attention the night he had come to her room. The color of her room, wall, bed, wardrobe, table and even the floor, everything was the color blue.

"I see you like blue a lot." Jorkallun commented as he glanced around the room, his eyes fell on a blue rose that was on the table totally ignoring the blue mirror with it. "Wow, where do you get this blue rose?" He asked going towards the blue table.

"From the depths of the sea." Sarah said and her mouth hung open. She used her hand to cover her mouth. Why did she say the sea and not something else?

Jorkallun turned to look at her in confusion as he picked up the blue rose from the table. "From the sea Sarah?"

"I mean to say from a garden...not...a....sea." Sarah stammered the last part.

Jorkallun nodded his head and smile. "Okay." He said and went to sit on her bed, he sniff the blue rose smiling widely. "This blue rose has reminded me of a story. Let me tell you a story about the 'Blue Garden'. He added excitedly.

"Blue garden?" Sarah asked with a raised brow. "There is a garden that is blue?" She asked.

"No, a blue garden is the name of a man " Jorkallun reply. "Listen to the story first before you conclude."

"Of course my Lord, speak for thy servant is hearing." Sarah said smiling as she went to sit beside him.

Jorkallun cleared his throat and begin the story.

"My Mother once told me this story. In a distant land lived a king, whose daughter did not want to marry. Though she didn't tell me what kind of Supernatural he was. The king urged his daughter, but she persistently refused. Probably because no one was able to conquer her heart. In order to be left alone, she set an unattainable condition: the marriage applicant must bring her a blue rose. She got a blue rose of gemstone, a colored rose and a painted one. But of course no one was able to bring her a real, living blue rose. She was not unhappy about that.

Then a traveling singer came to the kingdom and the two fell in love. Now the princess wanted to marry too. She was sad because her own condition had now become an obstacle. The lover was not deterred and promised to come to the palace next with a blue rose. There he stood in front of the king, holding a white rose in his hand and begging for the princess's hand. "But the rose is white," said the king. "No, the rose is blue," the princess objected.

The king drew in, after all, he finally wanted to see his daughter married. He gave the couple a huge house and many white roses were planted in the garden. The traveling singer was the only person in the entire kingdom to be called the "blue garden." Jorkallun concluded his story. "So ever since then, I have fallen in love with the color blue."

Clapping her hands at his amazing story. "That was a very nice story Jorkallun, I too love the color of blue."

"Hmmm, then I am glad I and my Dragon chose you as the one, we both love the blue color." Jorkallun said.

Sarah smiled at that and stood up, she walked towards the wardrobe and opened it, taking one of her house clothes, she shut it and walk towards the bathroom door conjoined with her room. "Excuse me for a moment, I want to take a bath and change my clothes in the bathroom."

"Take your time and don't forget I am still waiting for you to tell me about yourself." Jorkallun said with a wave of his hand as he lay comfortably on the bed making himself home.

Sarah quickly entered the bathroom, locking it behind her as she began to undress herself.

Jorkallun was looking at her ceiling which was painted blue and in different designs when he heard a buzzing sound. He ignored it and continued staring at the beautiful designs, the buzzing sound continue without stopping.

He got up from the bed and looked around the room to find out where the 'buzzing sound' was coming out from. With the sound of water splashing in the bathroom, Jorkallun knew Sarah was still taking her bath.

Where could the buzzing sound coming from?

Jorkallun thought as his eyes begin to go around the room before settling on the large blue mirror shaking. Strangely even more as the mirror has a cover covering the glass.

He moved towards it with caution as the buzzing sound kept coming from it.

Why is the mirror shaking without being touched? Jorkallun thought.

Reaching the table, he held the mirror in his hands and opened the cover carefully.

"Sarai what's keeping you from updating me since two days now?" A lady's voice was heard.

Jorkallun eyes widen in shock when he saw a mermaid who looks a little bit like Sarah. Jorkallun has to blink his eyes a multiple times for him to be sure he wasn't dreaming when he saw a tail conjoined with the woman's waist.

The mermaid too eyes widen in surprise when she saw it wasn't Sarai she was talking too.

"Who are you and what do you do to Sarai?" The mermaid in the blue mirror demanded.

"Who is Sarai?" Jorkallun asked confusedly.

"Don't play pretence here, where is Sarai?"

"Jorkallun, what are you doing ther-" whatever Sarah wanted to say was cut off as Jorkallun turned to reveal the blue mirror in his hands and her mother in it.

Why would her mother choose now to contact her?

"Sarai, thank the gods you are okay." The lady said breaking the silence that had engulfed between her daughter and the red haired boy.



"Why is she calling you Sarai instead of Sarah?" Jorkallun asked.

"Mum, I will contact you soon, I need to explain some things to him." Sarah said as she made the blue mirror lift itself up from Jorkallun hands to hers.

"But I can help Sarai with whatev-." Lydia started to say but got interrupted by her daughter.

"No mother, I don't need your help, I can do this on my own." Sarah said and closed the mirror, telekinesis the mirror back to the table.

"Who are you Sarah or Sarai? And why did you call that mermaid your mother?" Jorkallun asked folding his arms across his chest.

"The mermaid you saw is my mother and my mermaid name is Sarai." Sarah finally revealed with a deep breath.

"How?" Jorkallun demanded. "Where you sent here to monitor everyone in school? Or are you here to hurt Rae?" He asked.

"No, like I told you that first night you saw me, I am on the good side."

"Okay, if you are on the good side, why then is your mother asking about update, who are you updating her with?" Jorkallun asked.

"Rae." Sarah answered.

"Rae?" Jorkallun narrowed his eyes to Sarah. "Why are you updating Rae to your mother? What do both of you planned on doing to Rae? Kill her?"

"Why will I kill my own cousin!" Sarah yelled out a little bit. "I am a mermaid, I was sent down here by my mother to find Selena, but instead of finding her, I found her granddaughter, Rae." Sarah explained. "My mother and Rae's grandmother are sisters, so why would I kill her? I am here to protect Rae, that's all." Sarah explained.

"I guess you are not the last mermaid that will be used for sacrifice since you and your mother are mermaids?" Jorkallun asked calmly.

"Yes, I am not sure of Tamara's saying about the ultimate sacrifice being used to close down the gate of Darkness is true." Sarah answered and look at Jorkallun strangely. "Why aren't you afraid? You are just calm about the whole conversation?"

"It's a dragon instincts, he trusts you and I trust you." Jorkallun said as he moved closer to Sarah. "Do Rae knows about this?"

"No, she doesn't know I am here to protect her from harm, something in me tells me Tamara isn't saying the whole truth and that's what I am going to find out because I sent something to monitor all her movement." Sarah said.

"You are looking for Selena, the mermaid goddess, right?" Jorkallun asked which Sarah nodded her head. "I will ask my father if he knows anything about her whereabouts, he worked together with Selena and the first Kings and Queens of the supernaturals, before she disappeared."

"Thank you so much Jorkallun." Sarah said. She had thought Jorkallun would leave her when the truth about her has surface. "You must promise me not to reveal to anyone that I am a mermaid."

"I promise you Sarah and I won't even tell Rae anything." Jorkallun said. "The secret is just between the both of us."

"Thank you Jorkallun." Sarah said with a smile.

"So the old lady, is she truly your grandmother?" Jorkallun ask.

"Not really, but since she has no children or relatives living, she was the only person who we can use and it worked, people believed I am her granddaughter." Sarah said.

"So Sarai, have been dying to ask you if I could see you in your mermaid form, please." The almighty Jorkallun pleaded.

"Of course you don't need to ask." Sarah reply and went to her bed to sit, she opened her mouth, the blue ball that had entered her mouth came out of her mouth and was still flying mid-air.

Sarah transformation began as she was covered with light, as soon as the bright light faded, she was no longer the Sarah Jorkallun or anyone know, she was Sarai, a beautiful mermaid.

"Wow." Jorkallun whispered to himself falling in love with Sarah deeply.

"This is my mermaid form that you nearly scented that night." Sarah said as she touches her blue hair.

Jorkallun moved closer to her and touched her blue hair. "This is beautiful Sarah, this will be my first time in my whole Dragon years to see such bright blue hair like yours." Jorkallun said and to think blue is his favorite color.

"So does that mean you still like me regardless of me being a mermaid?" Sarah asked as she stared at Jorkallun afraid of calling love.

"If I don't love you would I still be here? If I don't love you I wouldn't have waited to hear your explanation." Jorkallun said and started caressing her face. "I love you Sarah with all my heart and there is nothing that will change that."

"The first time I met you in school," Sarah said her heart swell with love for Jorkallun, "I thought you were an ass."

Jorkallun straighten his head, chuckling with his chin pressed against her hair.

"Then the more I got to know you, the more I started to imagine us together like this." Sarah pulled Jorkallun's arms around her. "Lying in each other's arms, looking into each other's eyes. And it was a dream. A wonderful, romantic, hot, sexy dream. But then I ... I fell in love with you."

Jorkallun stared at Sarah at her confession. "You fell in love with me?"

"I have been for a while." Sarah's eyes flicked over Jorkallun's face - to his lips, his cheeks, his forehead, then back to his eyes. "I think I fell in love with you the day I saw your red dragon flying across the Nile Sea. I love you Jorkallun."

"I love you, too, Sarah and I am glad you are Mine," Jorkallun growl out the words,

"I am glad you love me Jorkallun and I am glad you are finally Mine." Sarah said with the tone.

"I am sorry Sarah." Jorkallun said with sadness covering his handsome features.

"You are sorry for what?" Sarah asked with fear. Has he changed his mind?

"I wish I had waited." Jorkallun's voice sounded distant, sad.

"Waited for what?"

Jorkallun looked back down at Sarah, making sure to catch her gaze and hold it.

"For true love ..."

Jorkallun kiss Sarah on the forehead.

"For perfection ..."

Kiss on the nose.

"For you."

Jorkallun ran a hand up behind Sarah's neck, drawing her in. He tilted her head slightly, and kissed Sarah deeply.

\*\*\*\*

"My Mate." He growled out the words possessively as his wolf takes over, his white eyeballs changing to midnight black. "We are mates after all." His wolf said in a deep baritone voice, it wasn't Jason speaking anymore, it was his wolf.

He bend his head and capture her mouth in a rough deep kiss. As her lips met his, the world melted away.

The fragrance of spring and the taste of warm honey was intoxicating. With her eyes clenched shut, her warm breath felt like a summer breeze. Jason couldn't close his eyes, he was staring at her angelic face, savoury her look. Her delicious lips melted like chocolate in his mouth. Rae uttered a delightful moan as Jason tongue played with hers.

The kissing intensified with scintillating touches and stimulating gestures. He plunged his tongue deeper and deeper savoring the taste.

If it wasn't for the clearing of a throat behind them alerting them of someone's presence, Jason and Rae would have kissed forever.

"Seriously, I am right behind you and you want to devour my granddaughter." Lillian said after she had gotten over her shock state.

Jason turns angrily to face the intruder who had interrupted them, probably to tear off her head with his now emerging talons claws. As soon as he set his eyes on Lillian, Jason took over his body again as his eyeballs went back to white, trying to smooth his wolf from attacking Lillian that she was important to their mate.

"Must you always interrupt me old woman?" Jason asked Lillian.

Rae hits Jason on the head and glare at him when he turned to face her with a confused look.

"Don't ever look at my granny in such way again." Rae warned and hits him on the head again.

"What was that for? I heard you loud and clear." Jason asked with wide eyes.

"That is for reminding you about that stupid sacrifice they said you have to make, if it ever cross your mind or you think about it, I will kill you." Rae threatened.

"Get that thought off your mind Rae, I will Never think about that, and to top it all, you are mate so there is no way I am going to sacrifice you or allow them to do that." Jason said, his voice filled with love. He bent down to kiss Rae once again when Lillian smack his head.

"Is it because I said I value my hair is that way the both of you take turns in hitting my head?" Jason asked turning his head to look Lillian, though not angry, but he faked being angry. He straighten up his full height and carried Rae in his arms, like a bride.

"You are in my house Jason and about to kiss my granddaughter in my presence, you should know that there are five rules you have to obey here." Lillian replied with a huff as she crosses her arms underneath her breast. "And for the record I enjoy hitting your head now since it's your hair you value the most." Lillian added with a smirk.

"Okay, what five rules will I have to follow old woman?" Jason asked as he holds Rae in one of his hands as if she doesn't have weight, and use his other free hand to caress her rainbow tail.

"Rule one don't come to my house." Lillian said.

That still Jason's hand on my tail as he stares at Lillian in disbelief. "What!" Jason realize the shout was coming from him.

"Rule number two, never come to my house."

"Eh?"

"Rule number three, don't smell my house."

"But you know that is impossi-"

"Rule number four, don't even near my house."

"Old woman I know you are doing this on purposo-"

"Rule number five, ignore the whole four rules and you will never see Rae again." Lillian said trying to hold her laugh at Jason's face.

"You are practically banning me from coming to your house!" Jason yelled out almost dropping Rae to the ground who was equally surprised by her grandmother new rules.

Lillian laughed out as she couldn't hold it anymore. "I got you Jason, you need to see the way your face was when I said the rules."

Breathing a sigh of relief. "Thank the gods, I have been thinking of different ways to dig my way into your house." Jason said. "I have a friend who has a rabbit who can dig from my house down to Rae's room, I am glad you are joking."

"But on a more serious note, do not kiss in my presence." Lillian said.

"No problem granny." Rae reply. "I would have loved to stay in Jason's arms all through my life, but granny I need my pretty legs back." Rae added.

"Okay my dear." Lillian reply and place back the white tiny ball into Rae's throat. Soon, her mermaids tail were replaced by her legs.

Jason gently put Rae on the ground, looking at Rae.

"But I have been wondering, I thought Tamara told the council of Kings and Queens that Tribid doesn't have a-" Lillian began to say but got interrupted by a knock on the front door outside.

"Are you expecting anyone Rae?" Lillian asked, she didn't ask anyone to come.

"No granny." Rae answer. "Let me go and see who it is."

Lillian made the magical door open and they stepped out of the room.

Rae quickly went to open the door and was surprised to see a smiling Dean with flowers in his hands.

"Hello Rae, I came to see as you promised me to teach me how to fight." Dean said still smiling.

"And I brought you flowers." He added stretching out his hands for Rae to collect it.

But instead of Rae collecting it, it was Jason who collected it.

"That's very thoughtful of you Dean, bringing flowers for my beautiful mate isn't something I want to see next time." Jason said standing next to Rae and placing his hands on her waist possessively, drawing her closer to him.

The smile on Dean's face faded and was replaced with a frown.

"What are you doing here Prince Jason, I thought you will be in your palace running the affairs of the whole kingdoms and not here." Dean demanded as he glared at the hand holding Rae's waist.

"I will ask you the same Prince Dean, I thought a Prince like you will be in the Palace checking to see the type of blood being stored in your palace." Jason answered. "You know you survive on blood to live."

"I came here to see Rae, me and her had agreed on something, and that is why I am here." Dean said with clenched teeth.

"Whatever business you have with my Mate will end here." Jason said.

"Your mate? Rae is your mate? That can't happen." Dean said with disgust.

"Yes Prince Dean, my Jason and I are mate, we are soulmates." Rae said this time around as she placed her hand on Jason's waist and peck his cheeks.

"That is why I said, whatever business it is you have with my Rae has been cancelled forever. Go home Now Dean." Jason ordered with a smile.

"Just because your father rules over everyone doesn't give you the right to order me, I am Prince like you so you can't order me around, and Rae is mine." Dean said whispering the last three sentences lowly for Jason to hear. He smirked at Jason.

"I am not ordering you to go home as Prince Jason." Jason said with anger as he heard what Dean said, his eyeballs changing, one red and the other one midnight black. "I am ordering you as the Millennium Wolf."

## Chapter 33

'Happiness is holding someone in your arms and knowing you hold the whole world. Life is very interesting. In the end, some of your greatest pains become your greatest strengths, Romance is the icing, but love is the cake. About all you can do in life is be who you are. Some people will love you for you. Most will love you for what you can do for them, and some won't like you at all. Three life rules: 1. If you don't go after what you want, you'll never have it. 2. If you don't ask, the answer will always be no. 3 If you don't step forward, you will always be in the same place. When you walk to the edge of all the light you have and take that first step into the darkness of the unknown, you must believe that one of two things will happen. There will be something solid for you to stand upon or you will be taught to fly.

♥♥♥♥ MEETING THAROLLIN ♥♥♥♥♥

Dean became scared when he saw Jason's eyeballs changing, he didn't know when he moved back, putting enough space between them, Dean looked at Jason and nodded his head. He knew he wasn't a match for Jason, so not to anger him further now that he was in his millennium wolf state, he agreed to do as he had ordered.

"Because you are the Millennium Wolf I will do as you have ordered." Dean said slowly as his eyes rested on Rae's.

Jason covered Rae with his body, standing right in her front. "You are talking to me not her, your eyes shouldn't be on my mate understood." Jason said with anger.

"Of course my Prince." Dean said and smiled diverting his eyes from Jason. "But that doesn't mean I will not come again."

"Are you daring me Dean?" Jason asked with venom as his large fangs in his mouth showed.

"No my Prince." Dean responded a little bit afraid.

"Good, now stay away from this house and my mate." Jason said.

"Just one question before I leave my Prince." Dean said.

"Which is?" Jason asked in clenched teeth.

"How can Rae be your mate when the priestess of the gods said you can't have a mate." Dean asked the question bugging him.

"It is none of your business Dean." Rae answered stepping out from Jason back and going to meet Dean. She stopped in front of him, "He is my mate Dean, and even if he wasn't destined to have a mate, then too bad because this wolf guy behind me, is who I have imprinted on." Rae



said and patted Dean's head gently like a dog. "Go home now before what happened the last time happened again." She added with a smile.

"Does it mean I came too late? Why didn't you imprint on me instead of Jason?" Dean asked in pain.

"It's who the gods chooses we imprint, beside you have Kate." Rae said.

"I have Kate yes, but I like you a lot." Dean confessed.

"But I don't even like you at all, I am only allowing this conversation because you are a Prince, now do what my soulmate told you to do, leave here at once." Rae said.

"I will be back for you Rae." With that Dean left in anger.

"Don't forget to greet your girlfriend for me when you see her." Rae shouted after the retreating back of Dean.

She turns to look at Jason. "And that's how you chase someone out of your house without a fight." She said going to meet him.

"He wants you Rae, I can see the desire in his eyes." Jason said still looking at the direction Dean had taken.

"And I want you Jason, and no one else." Rae said and pecked his kiss.

"Will I be insane if I say I want you only to myself." Jason said placing his two hands round Rae's waist and drawing her to him. "Though I don't get what you mean by 'what happened the last time to happen again', care to explain to me what you mean by that?" Jason asked.

"Well, I was coming back from a place and I met him kissing his girlfriend, and you know me, I poke my nose where it is none of my business. I asked him to follow me gently so that I can introduce him to his girlfriend's mother, he refused and I fought with him." Rae explained as she placed her hands at the neck of Jason.

"You fought with Dean?" Jason asked with wide eyes. "And you beat him?"

Dean of all people was beaten up by a girl, not just a girl, his mate. Jason was smiling.

"Well, not exactly in that way you put it because he wasn't down, he only stopped when he realized I wouldn't give up, so I guess you could call that fight a tie." Rae explained.

Nodding his head. "I understand, so can you beat up Jorkallun if I ask you too, please?" Jason asked hopefully. He can't wait to see if Rae could actually fight with Jorkallun as she did with Dean, although Dean own was very surprising.

"Not even a chance, why would you ask me to fight with Jorkallun? In case you don't know, he is my brother from another parents." Rae answered with a raised eyebrows.

"I was only joking." Jason said kissing her forehead and leaned down to kiss her lips when he heard a clearing throat behind them.

"We know what you want to say old woman." Jason said turning to face Lillian. The flower in his hands that Dean bought for his mate caught fire, burning, he threw it away without a second thought.

They entered the house before Lillian will say a word. He sat down on Rae's favorite seat and made Rae sits in his lap which she did without arguing.

"I can't believe a tribrid will have a mate." Lillian said still surprised. "Unless, Tamara is hiding something from us."

"I think so grandmother, something is fishy here." Rae said after her, agreeing with her.

"And what about you Jason, what do you think about what Tamara had said?" Lillian asked him.

"Right from the onset, I don't believe a word from that priestess, my wolf doesn't trust her neither do I, plus, I hate everything about her and wish her dead a thousand times." Jason said and quickly added when he saw the look Lillian had thrown at him. "Sorry for saying that, I forgot she is your sister, you asked for my opinion though."

"Grandma, I want to know why the rest of the Mer-folks were killed and Avonmora was frozen?" Rae asked.

"I don't know that answer child, only the gods can answer that."

"So Rae." Jason began stroking her black hair, "What business did you have with Dean?" He asked changing the topic.

"Jealousy will not kill you for me." Rae said laughing out. "First it was Jorkallun and now Dean?"

"Well you wouldn't blame when i have such a beautiful mate, I understand Jorkallun is now your brother, but Dean, what does he want from you anyway?" Jason asked.

"He want Rae to teach him how to fight." Lillian supplied the answer.

"What?" Jason was shocked.

"I was as shocked as you when I heard it from his mouth." Lillian said. "Now I know why he wants Rae to teach him how to fight."

"But, how can be asked you to teach him how to fight when we all were trained by one person, Jorkallun, Dean and I were trained specially, it still sounds strange." Jason said with thoughts.

"Let's forget about him and discuss about us." Rae said.

"Okay Rae, just wanna let you know that you have a nice ass." Jason said and dodged the fireball spell Lillian sent in his direction. "Hey old woman, won't I appreciate my mate ass again."

"That is it, get out of my house, right now." Lillian shouted and used her magic to levitate Rae out from the lap of Jason.

"You are just doing this because I do not have magic." Jason said and stood up to go, he quickly kissed Rae on her lips before dodging another fireball sent to his hair. "See you in school tomorrow Love." Jason said winking at his mate before he vanished.

"Granny, you can put me down now." Rae said and Lillian nodded her head and removed the spell holding Rae in the air. Rae fell down with a loud thud, not expecting it. "What was that for oh great and mighty grandmother? Do you want to break my waist?"

"That was for kissing Jason in my presence after my warnings." Lillian answered.

Getting up to her feet she sat down on the sit Jason had sat a few moments ago.

"So tell me how you and Jason became... whatever thing you both are, tell me." Lillian said with all her interest.

"Well it all started when I healed Queen Rosa, she was very sick and I healed her that night the King invited me to come." Rae said.

"Rosa was sick and none of us know? How? Why?" Lillian asked very surprised, this was the first time she is hearing it. "And you healed her?"

"The Priestess Aka your sister told the King not to reveal it to anyone." Rae answer. "Yes I healed the queen."

"Tamara asked Roen not to tell anyone even the Witches, this is totally unbelievable." Lillian said still not believing it.

"I couldn't believe my eyes when I saw the queen laying helplessly on the bed, I saw myself healing her." Rae said.

"And Jason was there?"

"Yeah, he saw everything, he promised never to tell anyone, that was why I had fainted and he lied we were playing hide and seek game." Rae explained.

"I see, so how do you know you have the power of healing? I mean only mermaids are true healers back then before they were killed." Lillian said. "Any way, your mother was the strongest healer who took after her mother Selena." Lillian added.

Rae suddenly remembered that mermaid she met in the cave, the one who had told her with a sweet voice her name.

"Granny, please, I really need to go somewhere right now, I promise I will be more careful and will return before the sun sets." Rae said getting up to her feet going towards the front door..

"Where are you going?" Lillian asked surprised.

"Going to meet someone, the person who had told me to heal Queen Rosa, I will explain when I get back." With that Rae opened the front door and stepped out, closing the door behind her. She ran towards the direction of the mermaid Kingdom.

Hoping to see Selena, she has some questions that needs answers.

\*\*\*\*\*

Lolly appeared and met the cave scattered, she saw her mother's face and knew all was not well.

"Mother, what happened?" Lolly asked softly.

"Jason ruined my plan, I would have gotten the answers I needed about Rae and used it against her if Jason hasn't turned up." Tamara explained.

"What about the bones, any hope yet?"

"Not really, I haven't set my eyes on Tharollin since he came here last. My master was here, he told me the gods are coming down to earth soon."

"Then we must do something quickly before they come." Lolly said.

"Yes, I am thinking very hard right now." Tamara said. "My master said he will have to kill Jason's father so that Tharollin can give him back his bones." She added.

"You know it's not possible, I don't want Roen to die, he is my beloved father, and killing him would make Jason hate you more and it will affect me a lot." Lolly said. "So I won't allow that to happen."

"I am in the middle of the sea now, I don't know which one of you I will follow."

"You will follow your daughter." Lolly said, her voice changing into a deep growl.

"Of course I will Lolly, I was just saying." Tamara said somehow afraid.

"We need to find that bones as soon as possible, and as for Killing Roen, tell your master, it is a no go area." Lolly said knowing fully well her mother won't say a word.

Tamara nodded her head. "I will try my best to convince him."

"Good mother." Lolly said smiling her voice coming back to normal. "Any way I came here for you to give me potion I put in my father's food, the one you gave me last, has finished." Lolly added.

Saying a spell, a tiny bag appeared in Tamara's palm which she gave to her daughter.

"I will think of a plan mother, and it will involves Rae." Lolly said collecting the tiny bag from her mother.

"What kind of plan?" Tamara demanded.

"I don't know yet, but I am going to make Rae hate Jason first, before anything." Lolly said and disappeared.

\*\*\*\*\*

The buzzing of sound interrupted the hot kissing session of Jorkallun and Sarah.

Jorkallun got up and walked over to the table to collect the mirror as at the same time, Sarah levitate the mirror to her.

"Oops, I have forgotten you can do that." Jorkallun said with a smile.

Returning his smile, she opened the cover, Sarah saw her mother.

"What happened, did you tell him or not?" Lydia demanded once she saw her daughter. She had thought something had happened.

"I told him everything mother and he is very okay with it, right Jorkallun." Sarah said as she swallowed the tiny ball which transformed her back to her human centaur self.

Jorkallun went over to meet her, you sat beside her and brought his face close to the mirror. "Your daughter is safe and her secret safe with me."

Lydia nodded her head and studied the red haired boy with her daughter. "That is very good of you son, so what kind of creature are you?" Lydia asked.

"He is a dragon mother, my Dragon." Sarah answered for Jorkallun.

"A dragon?" Lydia asked surprised. "I never picture a mermaid and a dragon together, it is very rare to see your kind and our kind together but if you dare break my daughter heart, I wouldn't mind you are a dragon, I will hunt you wherever you are and kill you, hope I am clear?" Lydia added with seriousness.

"Don't worry ma'am, I promise not to break your daughter heart, I love her with every fiber in my body and will want to be with her forever." Jorkallun said with the same seriousness.

"Good to hear that." Lydia said. "Your red color of hair means you are either a Prince or you are related to one."

"You are right mother, he is the Prince of the dragons." Sarah said smiling.

"No wonder." Lydia said studying the red hair before turning her gaze back to Sarah. "What's today news, you haven't updated me in two days now." Lydia asked.

"Forgive me mother, I haven't given you any news yet. I am always with Rae, I don't see any harm coming to her yet, and even if it does come, her boyfriend will protect her, including I and Jorkallun."

"Okay, keep an eye on Rae, so any news about my sister yet?" Lydia asked.

"No news about her mother, but I am trying to search for her and Jorkallun has promised me to ask his father since they both work together once before." Sarah said.

"Okay my dear, update once you have a news or something about Rae, take care." Lydia said and the mirror Sarah was holding turn back to a normal mirror.

"How would you know if Rae is in harm's way?" Jorkallun asked.

"I don't know, but I don't trust that priestess that is why I made this to follow her and hear her conversation." Sarah said and her eyes shone blue, the blue ball which had appeared after Tamara had disappeared to carry out her disguise plan, appear in her palm. "I will know what she is planning with this." Sarah added and hit the blue ball with force on the ground. It broke into two and a blue light shone from within and pointed on the wall where it showed Tamara, the water man and a man whose face wasn't capture.

Jorkallun and Sarah were silent as they listen to the entire conversation the three people seemed to be having.

The blue light on the wall faded when Tamara disappeared.

Jorkallun and Sarah both turned at the same time staring into each other's eyes.

"Who is Tharollin?" They both themselves asked at the same time.

\*\*\*\*\*

Entering the main palace where the palace library was, Tharollin hid in a corner and took the form of a 10 year old little boy and quickly ran inside the building. He started going through the books, checking out the names and dates of each book section in the library.

He had hoped that Roen had written down in any of the books about where he had kept the rest of his demons.

He was so engrossed with searching for that particular kind of book that he didn't notice one of the wolves who was the librarian, coming in and saw a little child going through all the books in the library, scattering them. The wolf went out and came back with four guards.

"That's the street rat in the palace library." The librarian said pointing at the child.

His voice brought Tharollin back to his surroundings.

"How did you get in street rat?" One of the guards asked as he held the little boy in his ears.

Tharollin wanted to kill the guards especially that one holding his ear tightly, but couldn't, who knows how many werewolves are already out there. So he decided to go along and came up with some stupid lies.

"I jumped through the fence." He said hoping his little voice was filled with fear.

The one holding him in his ear pulled in off the ground as if he weighs nothing, still holding the ear.

"You're lying street brat."

He turned and came out of the library, he flings the little boy on the ground. The three guards followed him outside, the librarian started rearranging the books back.

Before his body would touch the ground, Jason caught him preventing the boy's head from hitting the cemented floor. He stood the boy up right as he bent down to his height.

"Are you okay?" Jason asked gently.

The boy nodded his head. "I am fine now." He answers and turn to look at the wolf who had thrown him to the ground and turned his gaze back to Jason.

"Paul, this is not how you treat people you meet, especially when they are children, this should not repeat itself again." Jason warned.

"But my pri-" the guard started to say but Jason cut him off.

"Leave before I do something drastic to you." He ordered.

The guard left quickly, Jason turned to look at the remaining three guards.

"And you three are here looking at the way he is treating the young child, get out of my sight this minute." Jason said narrowed eyes and the three guards ran away. "Three idiots."

"Thank you for saving my neck." The boy little voice brought back his attention and he glanced down to look at him.

Jason smiled at him. "You are welcome, so tell me how you entered the palace and what you are looking for in the library?" Jason asked.

"I jumped through the fence, I am looking for a book and since no Kingdom has it, I decided to trek down here to look for the book." The lies rolled out easily from Tharollin, the white haired boy seemed to have a strange aura surrounding him.

"What kind of book are you looking for?" Jason asked and starting walking towards the gate of the palace, the little boy following him.

"A book about demons." Tharollin said hopefully casting his luck of net.

"Demons, I don't really know anything about demons, but I will ask my father." Jason reply.

"You think he will answer you?"



"Why not." Jason said with a shrug shoulder. "Come tomorrow by this time and I will give you an answer." He added

"Okay I will come, can you try and ask him what happened to the demons that remained, I read in a book they went for war and the story ended there." Tharollin said hoping he wasn't pushing his luck so far.

"I will try to find out for you." Jason said as they reached the palace gate. He gestured with his head to the guards stationed there to open the gate for them.

"Thank you, can I be your friend?" Tharollin asked, if he agrees, he will have free access to the palace, it seemed the guards feared him. His father might be an important person in the Wolf Kingdom.

Bending to his level and looking at the black eyes staring back at him with interest. "We are friends already, don't forget to come tomorrow." Jason said softly.

"I won't forget." The little boy said with a smile and turned to leave, he was already outside the gate before Jason's voice stopped.

"I never get to catch your name my little friend."

"I am Tharo." Tharollin said. "And what about you, what's your name?"

"My name is Jason, see you tomorrow, my little friend." Jason said and waved his palm before vanishing.

He didn't see the stunned look on the little boy face.

So, he has been talking to Roen son all these while?

Tharollin thought leaving the palace ground, once he was alone, he changed back to his real form and turned into his smoke going to the one place he would do anything to change the past, the Mermaid Kingdom.

## Chapter 34

'It's almost an impossible task to separate fathers from their daughters, that bond is something mysteriously awesome and it can only be made from heaven. When you know the knower within, you don't need to know further. When you know the meditator within, you don't need to meditate further. When you truly know the worshiper in you, you are to be worshiped. Don't let the expectations and opinions of other people affect your decisions. It's your life, not theirs. Do what matters most to you; do what makes you feel alive and happy. Don't let the expectations and ideas of others limit who you are. If you let others tell you who you are, you are living their reality — not yours. There is more to life than pleasing people. There is much more to life than following others' prescribed path. There is so much more to life than what you experience right now. You need to decide who you are for yourself. Become a whole being. Adventure.'

♥♥♥♥ TRIBRID AND THE WITCH SOUL CONNECTION ♥♥♥♥

Jason appeared in front of the two guards guarding the throne room.

"Is my father in there?" Jason asked.

"No your highness, he is with your mother in the garden." One of the guards answer.

"Thanks." Jason said and disappeared like the way he came.

He appeared in his mother's garden and saw his father holding his mother in her waist, as she was almost naked in his father hands and they were about to kiss.

"Sorry for interrupting you love birds, but father I need to speak to you." Jason said with a smile.

"Can't whatever you want to tell me wait, as you can see am with my mate and extremely busy." King Roen said.

"Nope." Jason reply. "But seeing you and mum makes me have a change of heart, so I will say what I want to say here, I don't need a baby brother or sister, I love being an only child." Jason added still smiling.

Setting her dress in the right order, Rosa went to meet her son and kissed his forehead tenderly. "How was your day in school dear?" She asked gently.

"Good mother, I was home some hours back before I went to see my girlfriend." Jason answered.

"Are you and Lolly back together?" Rosa asked surprised.

"Nope, why will I go back to Lolly." Jason said and Rosa breathed a sigh of relief.

"Son, I thought you said you wanted to tell me something." King Roen said before his wife will go further with her questions.

Turning his gaze to meet his father, Jason sent him a smile.

"Guess what happened to me today." Jason with happiness.

"I am not a good guesser son, just speak whatever you want to say and get out of here." King Roen said not so gently.

"Roen, he is allowed to stay here and will go whenever he wants too." Queen Rosa said going to meet Roen, hitting his shoulders gently to mark her words.

"Okay Jason, what is it?"

"I met my mate today." Jason finally said what brought him.

"Your mate!" Both Rosa and Roen exclaimed together in shock.

"Son do you know what you are saying?" King Roen asked getting over his shock.

"Yes father, I know what I am saying, I imprinted on her, I am pulled to her like gravity, I can't see myself living without her." Jason said with a dreamy look as he explained more and more about how he feels when he is around his imprint. "So with this few points of mine, I believe that is what we called an imprint, because I know that is what you felt for mother the day you first saw her, isn't it father?" Jason asked staring at his father.

"Yes, but what you just said about imprinting on someone is unbelievable, the priestess said your rare type can't have a mate unless you choose whoever you want to spend the rest of your life with." King Roen said not believing a word his son said.

"Okay, how will I put it to you so that you will believe me." Jason said aloud in thoughts looking at the sky before turning his gaze back to his father. "I feel the urge to be with her, if she is sad, then I am sad, if she is happy, then I am happy, whatever she wants to me to be, I will be. If she ask me to be her friend, brother or lover, I will obey her because that's what an imprint does, she is my other half that completes me."

"Okay son, I believe you, so who is she?" King Roen asked. "I mean the girl who made you explained all about the word 'imprint', so who is she?" He added.

"You know her father, she is Rae." Jason responded, smiling when he made mention of Rae.

"Rae? The one who I invited two days ago to the palace?" King Roen asked to be very sure he heard well.

"Yes father, the very one." Jason replied.

"Sorry I think I am lost here, who is Rae you imprinted on?" Queen Rosa asked wondering who the girl was.

"Oh mother, she is Lillian grandchild." Jason said.

"Lillian, the queen of the witches? You imprinted on her granddaughter?" Queen Rosa asked in surprised.

"Yes mother, but she already knows I imprinted on her granddaughter and she is very cool with it." Jason said.

"Wow, I never expected a Tribid can imprint talk about having his own destined mate." King Roen said. "Are you sure of what you are saying son?"

"Yes father, I am 100% sure, my wolf won't lie to me." Jason answered. "And her witch soul connected with me." He added, he couldn't tell them she is a mermaid.

"Then congratulation my son." King Roen said and hugged his son and released his hold quickly. "If it is true, why her, I mean your wolf would imprint on anybody, why her?"

"Why her father? I don't understand your point."

"What I am saying is why will your wolf imprint on Rae who is just as stubborn as you are." King Roen said. "I wondered who will listen to who."

"Don't worry about that father, we listen to ourselves, if I tell her to do something she does it, likewise she. You won't understand anyways because you and mother are not stubborn like us." Jason said with a wave of one of his hands

"Okay, though I am still surprised about your imprinting though." King Roen said.

"Don't be, it happens father."

"Okay, if that is all son, you can leave now."

"Sure father." Jason said and disappeared immediately.

Turning to face his wife, "Thanks be to the gods he actually listen to me without arguing." Roen said and pull Rosa to his body. "Now where were we?" He leaned down to kiss her on her lips when Jason reappeared right next to them.

"What is it again son?" King Roen asked trying to contain the growl wanting to come out from his throat. He knew his son was doing this on purpose.

"Sorry for interrupting you again father, but I forget to ask you a question I promise my new little friend I would ask you." Jason replied with a smirk. "And I told you, I don't want a sibling." He added.

"Whatever, hurry up with your question again." King Roen responded.

"Well I want to know what happened to the remaining demons that weren't killed in the last war." Jason said. "What happened to them father, where do you keep them?" He asked.

King Roen suddenly held his head with his two hands as if he was fighting with something invisible on his head.

"What is it Roen?" Rosa asked in alarm as she watches her husband.

As quickly as it started, Roen removed his hand from his head, breathing heavily.

"Demons, the demons....I remember Tamara telling me to give her the remaining demons which I did, after that, I couldn't remember them, it was as if they didn't even exist." King Roen finally said remembering how he had ordered the guards to take the remaining demons down to the mountain Tamara appears from, after that day, he had forgotten about the demons, it was as if someone had erased his memories about the Demons. If not for his son mentioning about the demons, he won't even remember.

"So you gave the demons to Tamara and you didn't even bother to ask about their welfare, is that how you rule your subjects?" Jason demanded.

"Not like that son, if it wasn't you who made mention of the demons, I wouldn't have remembered." King Roen said. "I will invite Tamara and asked her where and what has she been doing to the demons she collected from me years ago."

"That is better father, ask that stupid lying priestess the whereabouts of the demons and we shall pay them a visit." Jason said in anger. "At least I have the answer I will tell my little friend now when he comes." Jason added.

"Your little friend? Who is he and why is he interested in knowing what happened to the demons?" Rosa asked her son.

"He is someone I met a few minutes ago, probably 10 or 12 year old boy, he sounds intelligent, but I didn't ask him why he wanted to know what happened to the demons, when he comes tomorrow, I will ask him." Jason replied his mother. "I will take my leave now, the real leave and you can continue where you stopped." He added.

"Before you vanished into thin air, my brother and his children will be coming tomorrow for the Werewolf festival coming up in a few days. You know all the wolf Kingdoms will attend, so you better be of your best behavior since my brother is coming earlier than before."

Groaning. "Why can't they come on the day of the festival? Tell them all the whole rooms are occupied father." Jason said, he doesn't like his cousins one bit, they are loud noise makers.

"Sorry I can't, already told him we have a lot of vacant rooms available for him and his family." King Roen said with a sorry glance towards his son. "I know you dislike his children but"

"Hate father, I hate them, especially that boy called Eric." Jason said interrupting his father from proceeding.

"Just bear with them, they're staying for a whole week before they will leave for their father's Kingdom." King Roen said. "And you can invite Rae to come to the Wolf festival." He added with a smile.

"Thanks father." Jason said and disappeared.

"I hate it when he does that." King Roen said staring at the empty place his son were.

"You are just jealous you don't have such power." Rosa said laughing out.

Turning to face his wife putting his hands on her waist. "And who said I am jealous?" Reon ask. "He should always give a sign that he wants to disappear."

"If you say so, don't forget to ask Tamara about the demons." Rosa said.

"I won't." Roen promise.

"So why were you holding your head when Jason asked you about the demons?" Rosa demanded.

"I don't know, I felt as if my head was tearing apart at the mention of the demons, though I don't know why it happened, but after that pain, I could suddenly remember the demons." Roen replied his wife, he couldn't answer himself the reason why he had forgotten the demons in the first place.

Nodding her head. "Good to know you remembered them." Rosa said with a bright smile.

Roen kissed Rosa gently on her forehead as Rosa briefly closed her eyes.

What Jason had said still lingers in her mind. If truly Jason had imprinted on Rae and Lillian isn't angry, then she will try to create a chance and pay the Witch Queen a visit.

She has to open up to someone about she and Tamara and what they are up too, and that person will be Lillian.

As she looked at Roen with love in her eyes which her husband return without hesitating, She made up her mind to tell Lillian everything.

"So where were we?" Rosa asked this time around.

\*\*\*\*\*

KINGDOM OF ANGELS:

Micheal who couldn't wait anymore, sneaked out of the Kingdom in heaven and came down to earth to meet the person he had been meeting for some time. His wings going back into his body, as he made his way towards the cave Selena had healed him a long time ago.

He saw Lydia and greeted her.

"Save your greetings Micheal, I don't need it." Lydia said.

"Sorry, any news about Selena?" Michael asked.

"No news yet, my daughter is searching hard for her." Lydia answered.

50,000 years ago after Micheal went to heaven with his angels, he came back at night to apologize to Selena, but he didn't see her, rather he saw Lydia and some of the warriors cleaning the blood from the battle.

"You came too late Micheal, Selena is gone." Lydia had told him after he told her his reasons for coming back.

After much pleading to Lydia, she agreed to search for her sister when everything has settled down. They kept in touch throughout the years unknown to King Nile and the rest of her sisters.

"I believe that Selena will be seen soon." Michael said. "I also felt a connection as if something or someone needs my protection. It happened a few days ago at night when I awoke with the need to protect someone, I think I protected the person but the feelings were gone before I would wake up fully." Michael added. "It was as if I protected the person close to me."

Lydia stared at him and decided to tell him about Avonmora and her daughter, Rae. Maybe he would do something once he knows about his daughter being frozen by that evil priestess.

"Actually there is a reason you felt that connection, I have been hiding a secret from you." Lydia said.

"A secret? What secret? Is Selena found and you are hiding it away from me?" Michael asked with his hope high.

"No, she isn't found yet, but what I am about to tell you is more than that." Lydia said. "That day she was banished by our father, she was pregnant with your child Michael." Lydia told him finally.

\*\*\*\*\*

VAMPIRE KINGDOM:

Dean entered the palace with anger clearly showed in his handsome face that no servants or guards dare stood in his way.

He entered the meeting room he knows his father will be at the moment with the council of the six (6) Vampires elders. Opening the door without knocking, he ignored the elders and the various looks sent on his way and focus on his father.

"I need to talk to you ungently father." Dean said to his father without a care of others in his presence.

"Please excuse I and my son." King Darin said to the council of elders who nodded their heads and stood up without arguing, they left the room quietly.

Once they were alone, king Darin stood up from his seat to meet his son.

"What sounded so ungently?" King Darin asked his son.

"It is about the girl I told you I was going to see." Dean said.

"Okay, so I guess your visit didn't go as planned, right?" King Darin asked.

"It didn't go as I planned because of him." Dean said his voice filled with so much anger.

"Because of who son?" King Darin asked confusedly.

"Jason." Dean said spitting out his name as if it burns his mouth.



"Jason? What happened to Jason?" King Darin asked with raised eyebrows.

"He said he was Rae's mate." Dean said what was angering him the most.

"What?" King Darin asked and then burst out laughing. "Jason told you what?"

"He said he was Rae's mate." Dean repeated himself again as Darin laughed out the more. "It is not funny father." Dean added when he couldn't take the laughter anymore.

"Sorry, you wouldn't blame me son, it is so funny to me, how can Jason say Rae's is his mate. How is that even possible when he is a Tribrid and last I remember, Tribrid don't have mates unless they choose." King Darin explained his reasons for laughing out.

"I also was thinking the same father not until Rae used her mouth and told me she and Jason are soulmate, that her witch soul connected with Jason and you know what the means father." Dean said.

"If she feels the witch soul connection with Jason, then I am afraid you have lost her for good. She is Jason's mate, she is taken." King Darin said.

"That is the problem I have a father, I want to be the one taken by her and not Jason." Dean said to his father.

"That is impossible son and you know it, no one has ever fought against mates and it won't start with me." King Darin said.

"But I will have her father, she is the one I want, you have to do something." Dean told his father. "Please do something for me."

"Do what Dean, fight against Jason or Reon? Listen son, let go of her, you can't fight a lost battle." King Darin said.

"So you won't do this one favour for me, your only son?" Dean asked with surprise. This was the first time his father would not be in support of him.

"Son, under any other circumstances, I would have supported you, but as far as they are soulmates, that is a no go area." King Darin said. "Even though I hate Roen, I won't go against fate son and I will advise you not to."

"So won't give me your support, father?" Dean asked. "Even as your only son I ask that of you?"

"I am sorry son, but I don't fight imprints or separate them." King Darin said apology.

Dean faced changed to full fury as he stared at his father with wide eyes.

"Fine, I don't need your help father, I will have Rae all to myself without your support. Rae is mine and I don't care what stupid millennium wolf she has her witch soul connection with, I will break that connection father." Dean said angrily.

"Son, I won't deceive you but I am telling you the truth to stay away from her, don't allow history to repeat itself." King Darin said.

"I can't believe you are saying this father to my face also, you normally support me in everything I do father, why now, why this sudden change of heart?" Dean asked almost shouting.

"Sit my son, let me tell a story, which only the Kings, Queens and Tamara knows, we swore never to reveal it to anyone and the story died within us. But I am breaking that oath to tell you so you won't make such a mistake as he did many thousand years ago. After I tell you the story and you still want to have Rae to yourself, whatever you see, you take it like that." King Darin said and went back to his seat.

Dean went to sit on one of the empty chairs the elders of council were sitting on before.

"I am seated father, so tell me the story, I don't have much time." Dean said.

"Did you know Jason wasn't the only Tribid we have?" King Darin started.

"What!" Dean exclaimed with surprised as he couldn't believe what he heard. "Jason isn't the only Tribid we have? How do you mean by that father?"

"Have you ever thought why he is respected by everyone? Have you ever thought why the Kings and Queens and not to mention Tamara, are scared of Jason, have you ever thought about it?" King Darin asked and answer for his son. "No you didn't know, because we covered that history and no one knows about it. There was a Tribid who existed before Jason."

"Was? What happened to him?" Dean asked suddenly interested, maybe he would use some information from the story to get Jason.

"A Vampire and a Tribid from the Hellhounds side were soulmate, and someone like you tried to break the Vampire soul connection she had with her Tribid mate." King Darin said.

## Chapter 35

'But there's a story behind everything. How a picture got on a wall. How a scar got on your face. Sometimes the stories are simple, and sometimes they are hard and heartbreaking. But behind all your stories is always your mother's story, because hers is where yours begin. Stories are light. Light is precious in a world so dark. Begin at the beginning. Tell someone a story. Make some light. Stories you read when you're the right age never quite leave you. You may forget who wrote them or what the story was called. Sometimes you'll forget precisely what happened, but if a story touches you it will stay with you, haunting the places in your mind that you rarely ever visit. When we read a story, we inhabit it. The covers of the book are like a roof and four walls. What is to happen next will take place within the four walls of the story. And this is possible because the story's voice makes everything its own. There is no greater agony than bearing an untold story inside you.'

### ♥♥♥♥ THE STORY OF THE TRIBIRD AND HIS SOULMATE ♥♥♥♥

"Someone like me tried to break the vampire soul connection she had with her mate?" Dean queried and King Darin nodded his head. "Did the person succeed?" He asked wanting to know.

"Well if you listen to the story I am about to say, you will know if he succeeded or not." King Darin said and then continued. "Thousand years ago when the gods live on Earth with us, the gods gave us a prophecy that a Tribird would be born into one of the Royal's family. A tribrid is regarded as a saviour and is more powerful than any other supernaturals and god's put together. Every Royal family, wolves, Vampires, fairies etc, in fact every super creatures began to anxiously hoping and praying to the gods that the child should come to them. Hellhounds are like a demon, but in a dog form and their Queen gave birth to the Tribird. He was well respected and feared because of his three side creatures he has. He was a Hellhound, Fairy and finally an elve. When you are a Tribird, you don't have a mate unless you have the mercy of the gods. I think the gods decided to favour the hellhound and gave him a vampire mate who had her soul connection with him. Then a Davea creature by name, Paul, fell in love with the vampire (A Davea is a creature of shadow, a special type of demon)." King Darin paused and saw his son listening with rapt attention he continued his tale. "When his advances couldt be noticed by the vampire as she always ignored him, he opted for another means to break her soul connection she had with her mate. He went to seek for help from the druids kingdom, a powerful druid mad-." King Darin was cut off.

"Druids father? We have no druids, they don't exist." Dean interrupted his father.

"Actually, there was once a druid kingdom which was destroyed by the Tribird Hellhound, the druids history were closed, now let me finish the story." King Darin said. "Whoever Paul had met in the Druids kingdom broke the vampire soul connection the vampire had with her soulmate. What Paul didn't know was that, when a creature has his or her soul connection with their mates, and it got broken, they die a slow painful death, which the soul breaker didn't explain to Paul. The Tribird got to know what Paul did and that was when he destroyed the entire Druids

kingdom and killed Paul. The Hellhound tried everything he can but he couldn't save his dying mate, the vampire died and since he was a Tribird he couldn't die. In his anger he chased the gods from earth and the gods ran made the sky their abode place. He started killing anyone who has seen his or her soulmate, in other words he became a beast, a terrifying beast that was out of control. Killing soulmates wasn't enough for him, so he started killing every creatures. Everyday we all lived with fear, praying that today shouldn't be our turn for his meal.

We buried our loved ones in tears and we became scared of finding our mates. I was young then, a young king, but would remember every detail vividly. The witches did their best to hold the Savage beast but all their spells weren't working on him, we used every weapon, every creatures on him, but none was his match. He was unstoppable and grew large in size. One thing about this beast, the more he devour people, the larger he becomes. We were running out of hope and had almost given up when Tamara came and told us she has a plan on how to defeat the Tribird, we gave her a chance and truly, the beast stopped attacking us. We couldn't find the beast, It was as if it vanished into thin air and ever since then, we haven't seen or heard of the Hellhound beast. We asked Tamara what did she used to make the beast disappeared, she told us that it was her powers she used on the beast. The gods came down and thank Tamara for putting an end to the terror that was threatening the whole Supernaturals. We swore under an oath never to reveal it to anyone after that, the gods left since they had taken a liken to the sky where they reside, and later on Tamara was given the title of the priestess, that is why she is being respected till date because she dealt with the beast. We covered that history up and when Roen was given the prophecy that he would be the one to give birth to a Tribird, we promised ourselves never to allow what happened before, repeat itself again. Now Jason isn't only a Tribird but he will be the one to sacrifice the last mermaid and close the Gate of Darkness forever. Dean, do not allow what happened before happen again if you value the life of your people and yours." King Darin ended his story with warning. "I am not in support of whatever decision you want to take, the gods knows I am not supporting you." He concluded.

"This is so deep, so if I didn't tell you I want to break the witch connection Rae had with Jason, you wouldn't have bothered to tell me this story, right?" Dean asked.

Nodding his head to his question. "Yes, I told you we were under an oath never to reveal what had happened to the first Tribird or we even had a Tribird before. They are evil Dean, do not annoyed one. Since Jason has claimed Rae as his and she also has a witch connection with him, you don't stand a chance. What the Hellhound did to the Davea creature that had broken the soul connection can't be explained, and as far as it is Jason, he would do worse than that son. So for your own good, leave them alone and the gods will one day give you your own soulmate." King Darin explained to his son.

Getting up to his feet, "I have heard you father, I will think about what you told me." Dean said staring at his father. "I am taking my leave now father." With that he left his father.

"The gods knows I have tried my best, it is now left for him to decide which path to take." King Darin said to himself.

\*\*\*\*

"Who is Tharollin?" Sarah and Jorkallun both asked themselves.

"I mean I understood that this Tharollin of a person, is with the bones of Lucifer which he took from the Gate of Darkness which was open by-" Jorkallun stopped mid-way as he gasped loudly and Sarah who had been listening eyes widened up.

"Tharollin is the one who had opened the Gate of Darkness one thousand years ago." They both said together.

"He is out." Sarah said her thoughts going through different direction.

"And he has the bones with him." Jorkallun said. "Since the strange water being with them said the bones were his, I think he is Lucifer." Jorkallun added.

"This is totally unbelievable, how can Lucifer be alive when his bones was thrown into the Gate of Darkness?" Sarah asked.

"I don't have an answer to that question Sarah, but we have to find out the face behind Tharollin, how he looks like is what we are going to find out." Jorkallun replied.

"And not to mention how Tamara lied to Tharollin telling him how it was the King who had ordered for the death of all the whole mermaids and-" Sarah pauses as if she remembered something. "Tharollin was the reason why Avonmora was frozen, if my calculations are right, then He is Rae's father." Sarah said.

"What? Are you sure of what you are saying?" Jorkallun asked with wide eyes.

"I can't really say, because according to what my mother told me, Avonmora was the mate of a demon King who had opened the Gate." Sarah said then continue. "Remember I told you Rae and I are cousins, that we were related."

Jorkallun nodded his head. He remembered but it flew out of his head when Sarah had transformed into her mermaid form. "I wasn't myself then but I think I heard that line."

"Rae is a mermaid, just like us and I think Mrs Lillian knows about it and is hiding it." Sarah said.

"I think you are right Sarah, because the night I had visited the witch house, I told her the hidden spell she placed on Rae is wearing out, that whatever secret she was hiding will be revealed if she does not tighten the spell." Jorkallun said. "If Rae is a mermaid like you, does that make her the last mermaid to be sacrificed at the gate for it to close according to our beloved priestess." He added.

"Yes, but she didn't know there were still Mermaids out there where I come from. She should have thought twice about her plans she had with that water man before carrying it out. She would have made enquiries before lying that they will need the last mermaid blood to use in closing the Gate of Darkness." Sarah said touching her forehead, drawing slow circle in the middle.

Jorkallun stood up from the bed and started pacing around the room slowly, "Which means she lied to us. What I saw and heard now shows she lied to everyone of us including Tharollin. And now she and the water man want to kill my friend father." Jorkallun said. "I will have to tell Jason everything, but won't tell him about your secret until you are ready to be revealed." He added stopping in her front.

"Yes, and we have to make sure we find out whoever Tharollin is and tell him the whole truth before he does something he would regret for eternity." Sarah said, getting up to her feet and standing close to him. "We won't keep quiet over this, thank the gods who made me wise enough to send my hidden listener to Tamara's cave. I just feel they are hiding something more. And come to think of it, why was only Avonmora frozen and her people killed?" Sarah asked no one in particular.

Pulling her against his body, he placed his head on her head and started stroking her hair that is no longer blue. "I have been thinking of that too my love, why couldn't she had killed her with the rest or better still frozen the others like she did to their queen, and now she is pinning the blame on the King, so that the Tharollin of a guy would feel angry over the king and his entire family, and probably his anger would have the best of him and he would strike before Tamara and the stupid water man has formed a plan." Jorkallun said over her head.

"True, so whoever Tharollin is must be found and be told the truth. But how will Tamara and the water man kill the king?" Sarah asked.

"The Wolf festival is around the corner, they might use that to strike." Jorkallun replied.

"But you saw how she disguises herself to be Mrs Lillian, what will she succeed in trying to be the queen of the witches?" Sarah asked.

"Maybe she is trying to find out something about Rae, probably asking her directly and Rae would answer without knowing she isn't the real Lillian." Jorkallun answered.

Stretching out her neck to look at Jorkallun's face, "Then I have to pay them a visit immediately and cunningly check if she is fake or not." Sarah said.

"Good, I will head home and ask my father to tell me if he knows the whereabouts of Selena." Jorkallun said and kissed her on her lips before he let go of her and walk over to the window. "I will see you later tonight my love, leave the window open." Jorkallun added and jumped out of

the window, before his feet would touch the bare ground he had transformed into his red dragon, he made himself more smaller like a little lizard and flew away.

Sarah quickly left the house, locking the door behind her as she went towards the direction of Lillian's home.

\*\*\*\*

Michael eyes grew wide like a socket when Lydia finally revealed her secret.

"What?"

"Yes Michael, she was pregnant when she left here." Lydia said.

"And you didn't even bother to tell me all these years, why?" Michael asked still in shock. He has a child with Selena?

"What will you do if I told you? Change my father's mind? Bring her back?" Lydia taunted him.

"Yes, I will bring her back and probably try to change the King mind." Michael said. "Where is my daughter, if truly she was the one I protected, I need to see her to explain things to her myself and ask my daughter for forgiveness." Michael added.

"Michael, there is a bigger problem concerning your daughter my sister had for you." Lydia said

"What bigger problem Lydia?" Michael demanded.

"Your daughter, Avonmora, gave birth to a girl that is my daughter's age." Lydia started saying.

"Wait a minute, you mean to tell me my daughter also has a daughter, which makes me a grandfather to Avonmora's daughter, I have two daughters, right now is that what you are trying to say?"

"Exactly, but that is not the bigger problem. Avonmora and her people were killed at the Gate of Darkness."

"What!" Michael yelled. "They killed my own daughter!!?" He shouted shaking in anger.

"Don't block my ears with that shout of yours, saved it for the offenders." Lydia said. "She isn't killed Michael, it was her people who had been killed, she was frozen and has remained like that since a thousand years. Who you have felt you protected was your granddaughter Rae, probably she was in trouble and you helped her."

Micheal looked up at the sky and back to Lydia. "I still have more time before Aaron would know I am not around. Please Lydia, can you take me to where Avonmora was frozen? I will fly you there, please Lydia."

\*\*\*\*

Arriving at the mermaid Kingdom, Rae quickly entered the cave, this time she didn't use a light to guide her way, she could see clearing. Coming out in the large opening where various kinds of caves was, she went towards the large cave she had met Selena. And surprisingly enough, Selena was there, it was as if she was waiting for her.

She stopped her tail from splashing the water she was playing with and turn to smile at Rae.

"You found the right person to heal and you healed her perfectly Rae." Selena said still smiling.

"I now know who I am." Rae began as she steps closer to the beautiful mermaid "And I want to know who you are, how did you know I could heal the queen and why was I able to see you when I wanted to heal the queen?" Rae asked at once.

"I have told you who I am Rae, you healed the queen because you can, I only showed you what to do, you have the healing power hidden in you." Selena said.

"You still haven't told me who you are, I know your name but what connection do you have with me?" Rae asked curiously.

"Simple Rae, I am your grandmother, Avonmora's mother." Selena revealed finally.

"Impossible, how can you be my grandmother? This is totally unbelievable." Rae said very shocked to her bones. This beautiful mermaid is her grandmother.

"It is true Rae, I am your grandmother and that was I had appeared here the very first day you stepped your feet here. I am a myth amongst my people, I only appear to those who I wishes to see."

"If what you said is true, why didn't you free my mother from her frozen state? Why didn't you?" Rae asked staring at the mermaid waiting for her to say something before she fires back.

"I could have released my daughter, but I can't." Selena said her smile replaced by a sad one.

"And why can't you?" Rae demanded.

"I can free the body Rae, but not the soul, I leave it for the one who could do both." Selena replied and stared around them. "Someone is coming here, I can feel his presence nearby. I have to go now." Selena added, she knew who was coming.



"Who can that be?" Rae ask suddenly alarmed as she looks at her surroundings.

"I will call this fate Rae, see you soon." Selena said and entered the dark water in the cave. The water in the cave dried up quickly in front of Rae's wide eyes as she stared at the cave. Nothing showed it was wet before. Everything in the cave became bushy as others. It was as if she wasn't talking to a mermaid.

She sat down on the cave she saw Selena a minute ago to wait for the person since Selena, her newly found grandmother, didn't tell her to run like the other time.

Hardly has she sat down when Tharollin appeared right next to her.

Tharollin was surprised when he saw a girl sitting on one of the caves who was equally has surprise as he was. Who wouldn't, he appeared out of nowhere and his attire speaks more about death, all his clothes has human skulls attached to it. He wasn't in any mood for a tit tat, so he went straight to the point.

"What the hell brought a little girl like you far away from home to here?" Tharollin asked using his booming voice that makes one fear and would make one run for his or her dear life.

"I would ask you the same skull man, and besides my home isn't a 'far away home' like you foolishly put it, it's actually near." Rae answered without a hint of fear.

## Chapter 36

'I must not fear. Fear is the mind-killer. Fear is the little-death that brings total obliteration. I will face my fear. I will permit it to pass over me and through me. And when it has gone past I will turn the inner eye to see its path. Where the fear has gone there will be nothing. Only I will remain. There are two basic motivating forces: fear and love. When we are afraid, we pull back from life. When we are in love, we open to all that life has to offer with passion, excitement, and acceptance. We need to learn to love ourselves first, in all our glory and our imperfections. If we cannot love ourselves, we cannot fully open to our ability to love others or our potential to create. Evolution and all hopes for a better world rest in the fearlessness and open-hearted vision of people who embrace life.'

♥♥♥♥ FATHER AND DAUGHTER ♥♥♥♥

"What did you just say to me?" Tharollin boom voice demanded immediately, his nose twitching upwards in a funny way as he stares angrily at the little girl. How dare she calls him a 'skull' man? Who does that?

"Seriously why do people always ask me to repeat what I said when I know they heard me loud and clear, and skull man, your case is no difference, so stop pretending as if you don't hear what I said." Rae said not intimidated by him nor the angry look directed on her.

"Do you have any atom of idea who is standing right in front of you? Do you little girl?" Tharollin growled out the words as he tried to make himself look more fearful. Who is this strange little girl that is not afraid of him and talks back to him?

"I would ask you the same questions little boy, do have any idea who this 'little girl' you just called me, is? Do you little boy?" Rae said growling out the words as the same way the skull man did.

That's it, the 'little boy' part angered Tharollin and he growled out, this time in fury. The caves around them shook, as some of the walls started falling off, some started cracking. And strangely enough, Tharollin found out he couldn't hurt the girl, and that anger him the more.

"I can see you have no fear in you little girl, you better run off before you will see the other side of me which you will hate." Tharollin found himself talking instead of killing her like he planned to do, he made sure his entire face showed a little bit of blackness in it so that it can scare the little girl out of here. It had worked before and has always worked, no one who has seen the blackness on his face will still stand on his or her feet, and this time around won't be different.

Rae laughed out loud surprising Tharollin as she saw the strange blackness spreading around his light face, his dark eyeballs glowing brightly. She wasn't scared of the man standing in front of her like she was with Jason when they were at each other's throats, she actually find the man before her interesting, and something just seemed to draw her nearer to the man as if they had

a connection. Why would she feel she had a connection to the strange man? Rae thought as she continued to laugh at his face that ought to be scary. Seriously speaking, is like he doesn't know who she is.

"Seriously, you think that your 'scary little face' will scare me? Well think again skull man because I am not afraid one bit." Rae said in between laughs. "Oh I mean to say skull little boy."

"Do not call me that, I am not a little boy, I am much older, very, much older than you think little girl." Tharollin said, who had given this girl courage to talk back at him without any fear in her eyes or body. Seriously, where is the fear he normally see on people when they saw him? Why isn't she afraid of him?

"I will call you whatever I want to, be it skull man or little boy, you just have to choose one of them and tell me, that will be your new name." Rae said as if it was a normal thing. Everyone to her has a nickname. Jason handsome boy, Jorkallun pretty boy, Sarah and Lolly will soon get their own share of nicknames. Tharollin deep voice brought her out of her thoughts.

"Do you know how many people I have killed just because they disrespect me? How many souls, how many heads I had taken off? Like I said before, run off before you see the other side of me little girl." Tharollin said with a warning tone as he stares at the stubborn girl sitting in one of the caves, the cave which belongs to his mate, Avonmora.

Rae got up to her feet and approach him, she stopped right in front of him and bend low to observe the human skulls on his attire. "So because you easily cut off people's heads and add it to your gallery of skulls makes you think everyone's the same?. Wake up little boy for I am not the same with them." Rae said and moved back a little to see his reaction, she wasn't disappointed. She has never seen this man before, it was as if he appeared out of the blue.

"Do not call me a 'little boy' again!" Tharollin yelled out with a raised eyebrows. Why couldn't he kill the girl babbling about? Why? By now she would have been dead, her skull added to the rest of the 'gallery' of skulls has she put it.

"Of course little boy, I am very fond of obeying people instructions. That's my second name." Rae said with a matching raised eyebrows as well.

Tharollin breathed in for the first time he was here as he closed his eyes in anger, Demons could hold their breath as long as they want, but this girl has really pushed him. He was surprised when the scent of Rae aura entered his nose. It felt familiar to him like Avonmora's aura mixed with a little bit of HIM?

"Who the hell are you?" Tharollin found himself asking. Why does she smell like him and Avonmora. Something doesn't feel right.

"Now you are talking, I have been waiting for that question since, but from your tone of voice I see you don't know me. But don't worry, I will tell you who I am, my name is Rae, the granddaughter to Lillian Fey, the Witch Queen." Rae introduced herself.

"Why do you smell like me?" Tharollin demanded not getting it, if she is a witch, why then does she has the scent of his mate mixed with his. The scent was getting stronger now that he was breathing.

"Excuse me." Rae said smelling her clothes and looking at back Tharollin before rolling her eyeballs. "I don't smell like you skull man, go and look for someone who smells like you." Rae added sarcastically.

"Get out of here Rae or whatever you called yourself, I need to be left alone." Tharollin said in an annoying voice crossing his arms, seriously speaking, the girl is annoying him and no matter how hard he tried, he couldn't hurt her.

He has to monitor her to know the reason why her aura has his and Avonmora's mix up scent. Something doesn't feel right here.

"You met me here first skull man, you should be the one getting out of here and not me. I also need to be left alone." Rae fire at him crossing her arms too like he did. "Get out of her skull man."

"You have been nothing but rude since I met you here, all high and mighty Rae. Why don't you get down off your self-absorbed pedestal and get the hell out of here like a good gir-"

The rest of Tharollin rant was cut off by the presence of the water man who appeared three caves away from them.

Like before when he had appeared, the first time Rae had stepped her feet in the caves and had hurriedly ran back when Selena had told her too, he realized that he came late, he had felt that pull once again and know the last mermaid has arrived at the cave, so he has to be very fast to catch up with the lady. What he wasn't expecting at all was to see his son having a word of exchange with the lady or young girl that has made him come.

"What is going on here Tharollin?" The water man demanded, thinking of a way to make Tharollin disappeared and leave him alone with the girl.

Tharollin and Rae both rounded on the water man, snapping out, "Shut up!" in nearly perfect unison then blinking and looking at one another in surprise.

Wait a minute, why was his father here?

"What are you doing here father? In the Mermaid Kingdom?" Tharollin demanded as he focuses on his father, he started walking towards him and stopped a few meters away from him.

Rae, on the other hand, was surprised when she finally noticed who she had said 'shut up'. A water being in the shape of a man and the skull man had just refer to the strange being as father.

She wasn't afraid of the presence of the water being, she was rather mesmerized by it presence.

\*\*\*\*\*

Sarah arrives at Lillian frontage door and went ahead to knock on it. On the third knock, the door slid open to reveal Lillian who widened her eyes when she saw Sarah.

"Yes, who are you and how can I help you?" Lillian asked.

"Good afternoon ma'am, I am Sarah, Rae's friend and classmate at school. I am here to see if she is round, I need to talk to her ma'am." Sarah said as she introduced herself to Lillian.

Lillian felt the scent of a hidden spell when Sarah spoke. But she has a feeling the girl in her presence wasn't evil, but why is she using a hidden spell?

Sarah on the other hand, knew this was the real Lillian and not the fake one Tamara had turned into. She just know it.

"She left here for almost an hour ago to see someone. Jason was here and as soon he left, she said she was visiting someone and wouldn't waste time." Lillian said to her. "Come inside and wait for her, she will be back soon." She added as she opened the door widely for Sarah to enter.

Sending her a smile, Sarah entered the house and Lillian took her to a chair that was laced with magic. "You can sit here Sarah." Lillian said pointing at the chair and Sarah sat down.

"Thank you Mrs Lillian." Sarah said.

Lillian made a sit appeared behind her as she sits facing Sarah. "So let's not beat around the bush, who are you? Why are you looking for Rae?" Lillian asked going straight to business.

"I don't get you ma'am." Sarah said.

"I know you aren't here to see my granddaughter, you came here for something else plus, there is a hidden spell on you which is hiding the real you. So if I were you, start talking to avoid my wrath." Lillian told her.

"I can't believe you are accusing me wrongly, I came here to see Rae." Sarah said. She has forgotten how powerful the witch is. "I can see I am not longer welcome here, so I beg to take my leave now. Tell Rae, Sarah asked of her, she will be in a better position to tell you who I am." She added and tried to get up from the seat and was surprised when she couldn't. Sarah tried and tried, but she wasn't moving.

"You see why I said you are hiding under a spell. The chair only gum those who lie. So speak up girl, who are you? Where you sent here by Tamara to hurt Rae?" Lillian queried. "Speak up now or you will force me to reveal your identity."

Sarah tried to see if she could move or get up from the seat but she couldn't, she relaxed her body. She decided to tell the Lillian the truth.

"I was truly checking on Rae to see if she is okay and out of danger." Sarah said.

"And why will Rae be in danger?" Lillian demanded confusedly.

"I saw Tamara transforming to you, so I decided to quickly come and protect her." Sarah revealed.

"Well thank you for your kindness Sarah, Jason came here in time and saw through the disguise of Tamara. I wasn't around when that happened, so he informed me and I came back and saw my look alike." Lillian explained. "That is one answer to my two questions, now who are you?"

"I am Sarah, a half centaur creature and a half.... mermaid just like Rae." Sarah answered surprising Lillian.

Lillian was shocked and surprised when she heard that.

"What are you trying to say?"

"You know what you heard so stop pretending." Sarah said.

"How do you know Rae is a mermaid? Who told you that?" Lillian demanded.

"We are related, I and Rae are cousins, I was sent here by my mother who is also an aunt to Avonmora, to protect Rae." Sarah replied. "And that is why I am here to see if Rae is okay and if you are truly the priestess or the Queen.

"You are a mermaid? Does that mean there are many of you out there?" Lillian asked trying to process what she just heard.

"Yes there are many. My mother is the sister to Selena, the goddess served by the Mermaid Clan when they were still alive here. I mean how could you all have thought that there will be no more mermaids out there, outside, in the Sea." Sarah said.

Lillian was speechless by that revelation, Sarah is a mermaid, Rae is a mermaid, and she said her mother who had sent her is also a mermaid, not to talk about the 'many' she just mentioned. Does that mean her sister lied to them all about Rae being the last mermaid? What does she gets by sacrificing Rae at the gate of Darkness?

So many thoughts run through Lillian's mind.

Sarah tried again to get up and was surprised when she did. So Lillian wasn't lying when she said the chair only free one if spoken the truth.

"Well, since you have known the truth, do not tell Rae or anyone yet." Sarah said as she stood up, she doesn't feel like sitting anywhere again.

"Why shouldn't I? I feel like Tamara lied to us all after she had killed the Mermaids."

"Because I have to know the reason why she is doing all thes-" What Lillian said registered in her head. "Lied to you all? How? What do you mean by that?" Sarah demanded, she only know the Mer-folk clan were wiped out unjustly and she was sent her to look for Selena and her search landed her to Rae.

"She said the last mermaid will be born and she will be used to close down the Gate of Darkness." Lillian said

"Oh, I know that story, she even frozen my aunt, I was the one who had told Rae the story."

"But she lied to us and said the 'last mermaid' will be born, and Rae isn't the only mermaid remaining, which shows that she lied right to our faces and we believed her." Lillian said. "I doubt if the gods are even aware of the lies."

"Maybe they aren't even aware of what is going on right now." Sarah chip In "I have to know what she is up to because she isn't the only one planning something evil." Sarah said. "Tell Rae I checked on her."

"You are going now?"

"Yes ma'am, I have to be on my way home, my grandmother would have come home by now and I need to help her do something." Sarah replied.

"Okay, thanks for your information, I will tell Rae you came." Lillian said getting up to feet and leading the way back to the door. She opened it as Sarah stepped outside.

"Thank you ma'am, tell her I will see her in school tomorrow."

"Will do just that." Lillian said and with that, Sarah left the premises of Lillian.

Locking the door, Lillian went to sit in one of her chairs, pondering what Sarah had said.

What does she mean by 'she isn't the only one planning something evil'.

She has to keep an eye on her sister from now henceforth.

\*\*\*

Jorkallun transformed into his human form before he landed.

He entered the dark cave, and started walking, he could see perfectly well. Coming out of the opening, various beautiful houses of different types stood before him. Different shapes and colors of Dragons flew around him.

Jorkallun changed back into his dragon and flew towards the castle. He found his father talking to one of the guards and he descended transforming back to his human body.

Greeting his father he went straight to the point.

"Father I need to talk to you, privately please." Jorkallun said.

Vermitrax dismissed all the guards around them, once they were alone he turned to face his son.

"What is it son?"

"Do you know the whereabouts of Selena, the mermaid goddess?" Jorkallun asked.

"No one knows of her whereabouts son. She only appears to those she has a direct bloodline with." Vermitrax answered. "Why are you asking about her?"

"Nothing father, I just want to know if you know her whereabouts. So a direct bloodline related to the goddess can call out the goddess?" Jorkallun asked to be sure he heard well.

"Yes, but Avonmora was frozen so there is no direct bloodline to use in calling out Selena." Vermitrax explained.

Well, no one knows about Rae being Avonmora's daughter and Selena grandchild. Maybe, they could use Rae in calling out Selena.



"Anyway." Jorkallun started to say. "I have met someone so special to me father."

"Rae?" Vermitrax guess.

"Not her, I told you I see her like my little sister. This one is different, her name is Sarah."

\*\*\*\*\*

"I came here to see if I could gather any thing to use with my plan." The water man lied.

"Now is not a perfect time father, you can go and come back later, I want to be left alone." Tharollin said.

"Okay I will leave, but who is the girl behind you?" The water man asked looking at Rae. She was the one who he will use to close the gate forever. "Are you hurting her Tharollin?" He added with a pretended worry voice coming closer to Rae.

"And how is it your concern who the little girl is or if I hurt her? You should be leaving and not asking who she is." Tharollin said. "And stop going towards her." He added suddenly feeling protectively over Rae and he doesn't want his father to near the little girl who is as stubborn as him.

"Hey do not speak for me, I am not dumb skull man." Rae said going towards them and stopping next to Tharollin, before fixing her gaze to the water man who had stopped in his tracks. "And you watering face, why do you think he will hurt me?" Rae asked and eyed Tharollin before staring at the water man. "Between your son and I, who do you think will hurt each other, uh watering face?" Rae asked the water man whose mouth hung open.

Definitely, she is the mermaid he is searching for.

## Chapter 37

'When we honestly ask ourselves which person in our lives mean the most to us, we often find that it is those who, instead of giving advice, solutions, or cures, have chosen rather to share our pain and touch our wounds with a warm and tender hand. The friend who can be silent with us in a moment of despair or confusion, who can stay with us in an hour of grief and bereavement, who can tolerate not knowing, not curing, not healing and face with us the reality of our powerlessness, that is a friend who cares. People come, people go – they'll drift in and out of your life, almost like characters in a favorite book. When you finally close the cover, the characters have told their story and you start up again with another book, complete with new characters and adventures. Then you find yourself focusing on the new ones, not the ones from the past. Don't walk in front of me... I may not follow. Don't walk behind me... I may not lead. Walk beside me... just be my friend. A good writer possesses not only his own spirit but also the spirit of his friends.'

♥♥♥♥ LOLLY AND RAE ♥♥♥♥

"Close that mouth of yours, I can't see anything in it except water." Rae said again.

The water man closes his mouth and opened it again. He tried breathing her scent, but he couldn't, he cursed his water form which was preventing him from knowing the real aura of Rae, because normally, mermaids don't have guts and even if they did, only a few has the guts but none of them has guts like this young girl in his presence did. He has to find out who she is, and asking his son will arouse suspicious and that is what he is avoiding. He has to deal with this on his own.

"I never thought I'd see the day when Lucifer was rendered speechless," Tharollinp stated, amused. He could make out the lines of shock on his father's face, it was hard to see it, since he was in water form, but if you look hard, you will see it.

"You are very outspoken miss...?" The water stopped expecting Rae to finish off by saying her name, in that way, he would know who to search for.

"You can ask your son here, he knows my name Lucifer." Rae said and then suddenly has a thoughtful look. "Why is your name Lucifer? Didn't your parents gave you another name? Lucifer doesn't suit your appearance at all. It should have been watering face since you were made of water." Rae pointed out, she thought Lucifer was a normal name.

Asking his son is like asking a thick wall to move out of the way. He will have to find out himself. Not to create any suspicious since his son has been staring at him with the eyes that says 'go away old man what are you still waiting for'

"I will take my leave now, tharollin, I will see you soon." With that, the water man disappeared immediately without wasting time.

Tharollin turned to look at Rae, regarding her slowly. There has to be a reason why she smells like him and his lover. She wasn't even afraid that it was Lucifer she was talking too.

"I can see you are not afraid of my father." Tharollin said expecting to hear her rude reply. He wasn't disappointed.

"I can also see you aren't afraid of your father, if you are not afraid of him then why would you think I will be afraid of him? I am not even afraid of you, think well before you talk skull man, that is why I prefer your second name. You talk like a little boy." Rae said knowing she was biting the tail of a Lion when she said 'little boy'.

"What if my father and I kill you here or did something untalkable to you, we are two males, aren't you afraid of that oh high and mighty intelligent Rae?" Tharollin said, seriously the girl is pissing off, but he likes it.

"And what if I kill the both of you little boy?" Rae fired back rudely. She doesn't know why she wants to annoy him.

Tharollin didn't say a word. People, when they see him, they become afraid of him. He had seen the fear in people's eyes and was used to it, if he wasn't Avonmora's mate, he was sure his beautiful mermaid would have been scared of his presence too. He was regarded as Death and he had lived up to that name and makes sure it never went down. Even when he helped the people and the gods to defeat his father, the fear they had for him increases the more. And now the only person who could talk back at him without an inch of fear was the little girl standing in front of him, reminding him of himself when he was her age.

"You said Lillian Fey is your grandmother, right?" Tharollin found himself asking. He has to ask the witch if she knows why Rae smells like him and his beloved.

"Is the cat suddenly afraid of the rat and want to report the rat to its mother?" Rae said teasing the muscular man in front of her.

"No, I want to discuss something with her, tell her I will pay her a visit." Tharollin said. "And you should know, it's getting late and someone might get in trouble for coming late." He added with a little grin.

Rae look up at the sky and realize it was really getting late, evening was fast approaching, she returned her gaze to Tharollin. "Oh please wipe that grin of your mouth, I won't get in trouble for coming late." Rae lied, her grandmother will scream the heavens for her lateness.

"Except it isn't the Lillian I know very well." Tharollin said with a little smug.

Rae snorted, "She has changed over the years Mr knowing all." She said and crossed her arms staring at Tharollin who grin more. Nobody said a word as they keep on staring at themselves, everywhere was quite until... Rae suddenly ran off faster than a deer. Her grandmother was going to kill her if comes home late. The sound of Tharollin laughter made her turn her head and glare at him.

"This isn't over little boy!" She yelled out as she ran out of the dark cave and ran towards her house. The feeling of leaving a part of her in that cave came again, she had felt it with Avonmora and later on got to know the frozen lady is her mother. Now she is feeling the same with the strange man. Pushing that thought to the back of her head, she ran home with all her strength.

Tharollin shook his head and sat down on the cave Rae was sitting before he came. He has been finding a way to unfreeze Avonmora and find his Demons. These are the only two important things right now. Touching the cave tenderly.

"I am so sorry Avonmora." He whispered to himself looking at the lifeless surroundings around him. "If I had listen to you and didn't open the Gate, you would have been alive with your people. I should have listened to you Avonmora, I hope you will forgive the mistake I did." He said wiping off the little tears that had fallen from his eyes. Demons don't cry, ever, unless they had lost something very precious to them. His memories with Avonmora began to flood his head and he remembered the last conversation they had before he opened the Gate and his mate.

She had said she was pregnant for him. What if she wasn't joking like he had thought? Something must be wrong somewhere, Avonmora was frozen and a girl he met not too long ago, has the aura of him and his mate. How is that possible? He was going to pay Lillian a visit sooner than she expected.

\*\*\*\*

It was towards evening when Jason opened his eyes from sleep and heard some rushing feet.

Jason opened the door of his room and saw the guards hurrying going towards the East Gate.

Why are they going there? He thought and decided to find out himself. Closing the door behind him, he disappeared and reappeared at the East Gate, he nodded his head to the guards greetings. What he saw was disturbing. One of their guards, was dead and looked like he was burnt. The smell oozing out of the dead body was too much, it filled the air around them. What could have killed him?

"When did this happen?" Jason asked the guards, moving closer to the corpse and bending down to look closely at it.

"I think it was early this afternoon your highness. Though we don't know the cause of his death yet." One of the guards answered him.

"Has my father being told?" He asked again.

"Yes your highness, he will join us shortly." Another guard replied him. No sooner has he finished his sentence, King Roen was seen coming to them. They all made way for him to pass towards the corpse. He wasn't surprised when he met his son there. He bent low and look at the corpse.

"Demon." King Reon whispered staring at the dead body. Jason heard him. "It's a demon handwork." Roen said aloud to the guards. "Did anyone of you saw anything strange today? Like a man or woman you haven't seen before coming into the palace?" Roen asked.

"No my king." All guards around him chorus.

"A demon was in the palace and killed him. He or she might be back again to take another soul. Tighten the security in the east, west, north and south Gates do not move around alone, am I understood?" King Roen ordered.

"Yes sire." They said in unison.

Getting up to his feet and Jason followed suit. Roen pointed at four guards. "Four of you stay, the rest of you back to your duty post." He commanded.

"Yes sire." They hurriedly left except for the four guards.

"See to it that he is buried properly. I will make sure his family doesn't lack a thing from now onwards." King Roen said and left, Jason going with him.

"This is very strange father, I asked you about the whereabouts of the demons todah and you said it is with Tamara, and now one got inside the palace and killed one of our guards." Jason said.

"Yes, this is no ordinary Demon Jason. If it was a normal demon, they usually leave their food almost alive, and not dead and burnt. There is only one person who can do this, though he is still inside the Gate of Darkness." King Roen told his son.

"And who can that be?" Jason asked. "Don't tell me he is the one?" He added referring to Tharollin.

"Tharollin, the demon King, but that is impossible, he is still inside the gate." King Roen said and stopped, touching Jason on his shoulder. "Go to your chamber Jason, I will handle things from here."

"Be careful father." Jason said and disappeared.

Roan left for his wife Chamber.

\*\*\*\*

"Well, you have to bring Sarah and Rae to see me one of these days son." Vermitrax told his son.

"Yes father." Jorkallun, said and yawned. "I am feeling sleepy already father, please excuse me." Jorkallun added.

"Go and rest son." Vermitrax said and Jorkallun left his presence.

\*\*\*\*

Rae got home and lean heavily on the door to rest her legs and steady her breaths. It was already dark but she could still see her surroundings. She was about to knock when the door suddenly opened and Rae fell down flat, with a loud thud, she looked up and saw Lillian smirking down on her.

"That's for coming late and lying to me that you will come back early young lady." Lillian told her and left Rae still on the floor.

Groaning, she got up to her feet, entering fully into the house and closing the door behind her.

She walked towards the sitting room where her granny was and saw her eating.

"Go and take your food from the pot and eat in the kitchen, after that you come and take my plate to wash together with everything in there." Lillian said, Rae nodded her head and went towards the direction of the kitchen. "And no using of magic in that kitchen young lady, next time you will learn how to keep your words." Lillian added.

Rae entered the kitchen, and ate all the food in the pot. She washed every dirty plate in the kitchen which was much. She wondered how so many plates got so dirty when they are only two people in the house.

Lillian came and drop her plate, making sure it hits her hand, and waited until Rae has finished with her washing.

"So where did you go today?" Lillian voice stopped Rae who was hurrying to her room.

"I want to the Mermaid Kingdom." Rae answered, deciding to tell her grandmother the truth. After all she had open up to her about who her mother was.

"The Mermaid Kingdom? For what?" Lillian asked surprisedly.

"To see if truly I belong there." Rae answered and yawned loudly.

"You are tired, we are going to talk early tomorrow." Lillian said.

Rae smiled and walked past her grandmother towards the stairs, she stopped. "Oh and Granny, I met a man there, I think he said his name is Tharollin." Rae said and didn't see the shocked look on Lillian since her back was on her. "And he said he will be visiting us soon." With that Rae climbed the stairs going to her room.

Tharollin is back?

\*\*\*

Sarah felt the presence of Jorkallun as he entered her room through her opened window. It was past midnight and was almost given up on him coming back as he had promised earlier on.

"Sorry I came late love." Jorkallun said as he climbed the bed Sarah was and pulled her towards him kissing her forehead.

"I thought you weren't coming again." Sarah said as she embrace Jorkallun kissing his forehead also.

"Sorry, I was busy."

"What about what you said you will ask your dad?" Sarah asked.

"He gave me a solution, but sleep, we are going to discuss about it when morning comes." Jorkallun replied.

"Okay, good night Jorkallun." Sarah said placing her head on his chest.

"Good night my love."

Sarah slept off immediately.

\*\*\*\*

Rae who had just had her night bath was surprised when she heard a soft knock on her room window.

"Who is it?" She asked lowly wondering who on Earth can be knocking on her window by this time of the night.

"Jason."

She opened it when she recognized Jason's voice.

"Hey, fish." Jason whispered as he climbed in through the window.

"Doors are made for a reason four legged dog." Rae grumbled though there was no real heat in her voice. Jason chuckled, climbing into the bed with Rae.

"I know that Rae, I just like to climb through the window. Make it look as if this is a forbidden love affair or something." Jason said getting comfortable on her bed.

Rae chuckled. "Whatever, I want to sleep." She said and place her head on his chest. "Your chest looks so comfy." She said after a while.

"It's all yours Rae." Jason said with a grin. "I thought you said you want to sleep, what is keeping your eyes from closing?"

"You." Rae reply. Jason smiled and kissed her on her lips.

"Go to sleep Rae." Jason said.

"Yes your highness." Rae said yawning and closing her eyes.

"Good night Jason."

"Good night sweetheart."

---

Early the next morning, Rae opened her eyes and met her bed empty. Jason was gone without giving her a kiss or waking her up. He is in trouble if she sees in him school today.

She quickly took her bath and didn't wait for her breakfast, she doesn't have the strength to argue with her grandmother, she is saving it for Jason.

Touching her bracelet a portal opened and she entered it which closes behind her.

Stepping out of the portal, she entered the school compound. Every student kept glancing her way but she gave them her famous 'i don't care look'.



She was about to enter her class when a hand stopped her. Turning around to give who touched her a piece of her mind, she was surprised when she saw Jason.

"You left me without even giving me a morning kiss or at least wake me up." Rae snarled. All the whole students attention were on them.

"Sorry my love, I promise never to do that again. I have to come to school very early to discuss with Jake." Jason explained.

"And why do you want to discuss with Mr Jack?" Rae asked, her yelling at him will be later.

"About our coming wolf festival and your new class." Jason said with a smile.

"My new class?" Rae asked confusedly.

"And wolf festival." Jason added.

"Shhhh, I heard that part. What new class are you talking about?" Rae said still confused.

"You are coming to stay in my own class and not here again. Whatever they want to teach you will be taught in your new class from now henceforth." Jason said.

"Hey I have my own decision to choose where and what I want. Why will you just wake up one morning, in fact this morning and have that thought?" Rae said ignoring the sudden whisperers going on around them.

"Sorry I didn't ask you, but I know you will love to stay with me together in one class, just the two of us." Jason said with a wink.

"I am not going."

The smile on his face faded, "Yes you are."

"You can't force me."

"No I can't, but I know you will love to be with me alone." Jason said.

"I love my history class and other classes I have with my classmates, they love me." Rae said.

"Tell me the names of person who has ever talked to you." Jason said and Rae opened her mouth to reply back. "Don't include Jorkallun and Sarah." Jason added and Rae shut her mouth. He smiled. "So you see, you are coming with me."

"I am still not coming." Rae said stubbornly. "You don't get to decide where I go, I am very stubborn and you should know about that." She added.

"I know." Jason's voice was ragged. "I've always known that about you. I don't know why I had to fall in love with someone who's more stubborn than I am." He added. "Alright, please my beautiful Rae come with me to your new class. I brought some rose flowers for you."

Rae wanted to reply back when they heard someone clapping. She looked behind Jason and saw who was clapping.

Jason growled out in anger, his white eyeballs becoming red as he knew who was clapping.

"Two new love birds." Lolly voice was icy as she walked up to meet them, ignoring Rae totally as she focuses on Jason. "So you left me for her? You broke up our engagement you had with me just to be with her? A witch? How are you sure she didn't use a spell on you to make you fall in love with her. We've been together for years and just one glance at her, one glance at her after the full moon, you decided to leave me for her Jason."

"Lolly, I know it is very hard for you right now, bit it is over between us, get it into your head." Jason said.

"It isn't over until I say yes Jason." Lolly said and faces Rae, her face much closer to Rae. "And as for you witch, you think you can have him all to yourself? You had better think again, Jason is mine and mine alone, there is no one, not even the gods or you can separate him from me. He is Mine Rae, MINE!" Lolly yelled out in fury.

"First of all Lion face, your breath smells like a rotten body, you should wash more often." Rae said calmly. "And secondly, you are one of those babies that should have been swallowed."

## Chapter 38

'Angels are the guardians of hope and wonder, the keepers of magic and dreams. Wherever there is love, an angel is flying by. Your guardian angel knows you inside and out, and loves you just the way you are. Angels keep it simple and always travel light. Remember to leave space in your relationships so the angels have room to play. Your guardian angel helps you find a place when you feel there is no place to go. Whenever you feel lonely, a special angel drops in for tea. Angels are with you every step of the way and help you soar with amazing grace. After all, we are angels in training; all we have to do is spread our wings and fly! Nobody's perfect. We're all just one step up from the beasts and one step down from the angels. To see an angel, you must see another's soul. To feel an angel, you must touch another's heart. To hear an angel you must listen to both.'

♥♥♥♥ MICHEAL AND THAROLLIN ♥♥♥♥

The sudden laughter that surrounded them came from the students who were listening and heard Rae's comment. One quick look Lolly sent to them all made their remaining laughter ceased in their throats. She then turned her angry eyes on Rae.

"Your insults won't get to me Rae, you don't know who you are dealing with. Stay away from Jason like a good witch should do, if not ..." Lolly got interrupted by Rae.

"If not what Lion face, you will beat me? Have I not proven to you that I am not made of stone? Or should I remember you?" Rae cut in before Lolly would finish her threats.

"You have no idea what I can do Rae, I am just holding myself back, so if you still want to live for your grandmother, stay away from Jason." Lolly warned.

This time around, all the school teachers, including Jack has come out of their office and were listening to the hot conversation, as long as Jason is involved, Jack nor the teachers would get themselves involved.

"I have this problem of not listening Lolly. Anytime someone asked me not to do something, I find myself doing it, yours won't be any difference, in fact." Rae said and went over to where Jason had stood and was quiet all this while. She placed her arm around his waist and Jason quickly placed his arm around her waist, holding her tight possessively. "Jason and I were just discussing about staying in his class till I graduate from the Supernaturals school, which if I may add you haven't even succeed, but look at me, I did what you can't do. So think again before you start your imbecile threats." Rae added pecking Jason's cheek.

"I wouldn't be so sure Rae, I will hunt you and make sure I kil-

"Lolly, for the sake of sanity, keep quiet. I don't want you at all, don't you get it? If I see any scratch on Rae, you won't like what I will do to you." Jason said cutting off Lolly.

Lolly snorted and rolled her eyeballs turning her gaze to Jason. "You wouldn't even dare Jason." She said and her eyes turned teary all of a sudden. Her lips tremble as she speaks.

"What happened to us Jason, we were a perfect match and everyone knew how we love and cherish each other, they were all waiting for our wedding bell, what went wrong? What did I do to you? You know I love you, right?" Lolly asked suddenly looking pitiful, she looked so sad that if one see her, they would grant whatever she request for.

But Jason know her tricks very well.

"Lolly, I only agreed to engage you because of my mum. You know from the onset, I don't love you, I have told you times without number that I am not interested in you. I never loved you and you know it yourself, yet you keep on throwing yourself on me. Lolly we are not a match, we don't match and the gods knows it. Rae here, is the one for me, the one the gods have ordained for me, the one who match with me." Jason told Lolly as calmly as he could.

"You lied Jason, you are a big liar. I know you love me, you love me from the onset and nothing can change the love you have for me. We are a match Jason, it is just left for you to see it. Your kind don't have mate, remember? Let me be your mate Jason, please, you are pushing me out and I don't like it." Lolly said in anger, her face twisting, nearly changing into her beast, nearly but her face return back to normal quickly.

Jason who had been closing his eyes when Lolly had started her sermon didn't see the look. Rae on the other hand was looking at Jason all this while trying to study him, if truly he has feelings for Lolly, all she could see was nothing.

Opening his eyes, "Lolly, we can still be friends, you can still visit the palace as you want. Nobody will stop you, not even me. But you see us." Jason said pointing to himself and Lolly. "It can't happen, why can't you understand."

"That's because I love you, you are only mine and mine alone, I don't like sharing what belongs to me with someone else!" Lolly shouted possessively. "It is because of Rae isn't it? It all started with her and believe me, it will end with her. If I don't have you, then no one else will. Mark my words Jason. I will scratch out her eyes and dismembered her whole body. I will do it Jason." Lolly said.

The students started whispering as the teachers waited to see the outcome of this.

"Then try it Lolly, Rae is in your front right? Just a single scratch I want from you." Jason said and touched his heart with a pleading look. "I humbly beg you."

Lolly smiled and looked back at Rae with hardened eyes. "You won't know what hit you Rae, that I promise you." With that, Lolly walk out on them, snarling at the students who had stood and were watching the whole drama, going straight to her class.

All was quiet until Rae burst out laughing surprising Jason. "Did you see her face when you asked her to scratch me Jason? That was hilarious" She said in between laughs.

"You know you shouldn't have taken her threats lightly Rae, she might be serious." Sarah's voice was heard and that stopped Rae.

The students gathered started dispersing, going to their various classes. The teachers too. Well it has been long they had seen an actual fight, and those who normally give them what they want are now friends.

Every students started talking about what happened.

"Hey Sarah." Rae greeted and saw Jorkallun behind her friend. "Hey Jorkallun, were you here all these while?" She asked.

Jason and Jorkallun both shook their hands and hug each other in brotherly way.

"Yup, but her last threat shouldn't be taken lightly Rae, you always take everything as a joke and that will put you in trouble one day Rae." Sarah added.

"Whatever, she was only making mouth, she can't do me anything Sarah, so get that thought off your little scary mind." Rae said with a smile as she untangle her arm from Jason's waist and place it on Sarah.

"Come on, let's go to class." Rae said aloud purposely and it didn't escape Jason's wolf sharp ears.

"What? Are we still on the matter about going to your new class Rae?" Jason asked with wide eyes.

"Yes Jason, I never remember agreeing to this, so me and my friend will be going into our old history class, feel free to join us." Rae said with a smile. "That is if you care."

Jason turned to look at Jorkallun's with pleading eyes, and his friend know what to do.

"Sarah, my love." Jorkallun said, it was as if the words stopped the noise, everything became quiet, no movement was heard. "I don't think I want to go to the history class today, it's been long I went to my own private class, well what I am trying to say if you will follow me to that class. I hate loneliness." Jorkallun said.

Sarah smiled and quickly left Rae's arms and went over to where Jorkallun is. "Of course my love, what are we waiting for, let's go." Sarah said happily.

Holding her waist, they walked towards another building.

"Hey horse, thank you backstabber!" Rae yelled.

Flashing Rae a grin. "You are welcome Princess in distress!" Sarah yelled back.

Jason smiled, Jorkallun always helped him out.

"Wipe off that smile of yours, I know it's your plan with him." Rae huff out in anger.

"I don't know what you are saying Rae." Jason said pretending. "But I am not wasting time here, do you want to join me or not now that you have no one else to take to in the class?"

Sitting down on the floor and wiping off invisible sweats. "I would have loved to follow you kind sir, but my feet are painning me from standing too much." Rae said.

"That is not a problem my Princess." Jason said bending a little bit down to carry Rae off the ground in bride style. Rae place her head on his chest closing her eyes and sighing in content. "You could have told me you loved been carried this way." Jason teased as he started walking towards his own class building.

"I told you last night that your chest is so comfy." Rae said softly.

Jason laughed.

---

Once inside, Sarah couldn't wait to hear his findings. His class was made with dragon fire, no one, no matter what magic they use can ever hear what was being said in the class.

"What did your father say?" Sarah asked going to sit down on a chair, unlike Jason, who had only a sit, Jorkallun has two, one for sitting and the other one for keeping his legs. He sat on the empty seat.

"Only a direct descendant of Selena can summon the goddess." Jorkallun answered.

"Which means only Rae can summon her."

"Yes, that is what my father said. Though he doesn't know of Rae, but he said since Avonmora is frozen then there is no one who can summon the goddess." Jorkallun explain further.

"We have no other option than to tell Rae everything. I have to see my aunty and message her." Sarah said.

"Don't worry my love, you will get to see her, probably, she might be hiding herself away because of someone or something, that is why no one can summon her, my guess though." Jorkallun said.

"Whichever it is, we have to tell Rae first."

"Where you able to dictate the real and fake Lillian yesterday?" Jorkallun suddenly asked.

"No, she found what I am." Sarah confesses.

"Did she freaked out when she got to know you are a mermaid?"

"Yes, but with the look of things I don't think she told Rae anything yet."

"Yeah, but all the same my love, we have to find out the face of Tharollin and tell him the truth about what had happened." Jorkallun said.

"You are right, but where are we going to start looking for him." Sarah said then shrugs her shoulders. "First things first, we should tell Rae everything before searching for Tharollin." She added.

\*\*\*\*

Tamara sat down on the cold floor of the cave and closes her eyes in thoughts. Thinking of a way to find out what Lillian has been hiding about Rae. She didn't feel the presence of the water man until he called out her name.

"Tamara."

Opening her eyes to see him, she quickly stood up to her feet and bow down in greetings.

"I think I have found the last mermaid we have been looking for Tamara." The water man finally dropped the bombshell.

Tamara was shocked. "My Lord, you've seen the last mermaid?" She asked to be sure.

"Yes Tamara, I saw her today. She was with my son."

"What is her name so that I can track her for you."

"That I couldn't get out of the mermaid." The water man said.

"But you can describe her isn't it my Lord?" Tamara asked, going to bring a little iron pot, covered in thick dust, it hasn't been used for years, blowing out the dust, she carried it and gave it to the water man.

"Yes Tamara, I can picture her very well."

"Then place your palm and cover the tip of the pot, picture the girl and her image will appear my Lord." Tamara said.

The water man did as he was instructed. "What's next Tamara." He asked as he had picture Rae.

"Now remove your hand my Lord." Tamara said and moved closer to the water man to see the face that will happen. She was shocked when she saw the face of the girl she was thinking.

"Rae?" Tamara said aloud.

"Is her name Rae?"

"Yes my Lord, she was the one I told you I was going to teach a lesson..."

"And it didn't go as planned." The water man finished up for her.

"So she is the last mermaid that will be used as a sacrifice my Lord?" Tamara asked smiling. Lolly will be so happy for this news.

"Yes, from what I studied about her and the time I spent on her, she is the type who I really need." The water man said. "But there is a problem Tamara."

"Problem? What kind of problem are you talking about my Lord." Tamara smile faded.

"I told you I met her with my son, they were in a heated argument before I came, when I want to get close to her. He made me not too, he seems to like the little girl since he hasn't killed her before my arrival." The water man said.

"So what are we going to now my Lord?" Tamara asked, thinking of a way to get rid of Rae.

If Lillian has been hiding Rae's secret from everyone, then she knows her mother. She will find out who Rae's mother is.

"Focus on the wolf festival coming Tamara, make sure Roen and his entire family didn't escape. I on the other hand will be looking for a way to have Rae to myself and bring her here." The water man said. "Don't announced it yet that you have seen the last mermaid, if my son hasn't



arrived, then I could have told you to announce it, but he is back and announcing it will bring a lot of questions from him."

"Of course my Lord."

"Good, I am leaving Tamara." With that the water man was gone.

Giving her thanks to the water man for bringing her a very useful information, Tamara started drifting out her own plan.

\*\*\*\*

Michael groaned out in frustration as he stared at Lydia who was picking her finger nails with interest.

"Come on Lydia, I asked you if you will take me to where my daughter is frozen, instead of replying to me, you have been picking your nails since then. I have been standing here all through the night and this is day break, yet you haven't even say a word, please tell me or better still direct me to where I can find her, please." Michael said looking at the morning sun. "They might have noticed my absence." He added referring to his angels.

"Now you've seen how it was when you choose your position over my sister." Lydia said, if not for the please he had added at his last sentence, they would stand here for two more days, standing up and never getting tired was her second name amongst her sisters.

"I know Lydia, and I am sorry for doing that."

"It is not me you should be apologizing to Michael, not me." Lydia said. "Anyway, is your offer still on, about flying me to show you where your daughter, my niece, was being frozen, because I won't be able to swim today, I don't swim in the morning." Lydia said with a smile.

"Of course Lydia, I will fly us both to wherever you said Avonmora is." Michael responded. He can't wait to see his daughter he just got to know about her existence a few hours ago. Why didn't Selena told him about her pregnancy? Why did she keep it to herself?

He knew he had hurt her, and he couldn't forgive himself for hurting her. But she could have at least told him and maybe, he wouldn't have chosen his position over her.

If he knew he had a daughter, whoever or whatever that had frozen his daughter wouldn't have taken place.

Giving Michael one of her hands to hold. "Ready whenever you are." Lydia said.

Michael white huge wings came out of his back, holding Lydia's hand tightly, he flew upwards lifting himself and Lydia with ease.

"Which direction should I go Lydia?" Michael asked when they are now almost touching the clouds.

"Follow West Micheal." Lydia said pointing at the direction.

Without saying a word, Michael flew towards West.

Flying for almost two hours in the sky, Lydia pointed below them. "It's here, go down Michael." She said. She knew where Avonmora was frozen.

Going downwards, Michael gently land Lydia on the ground.

He didn't need to be told where his frozen daughter is. He saw it.

Leaving Lydia's hand he flew towards Avonmora and landed in front of her.

"I...is..th.. this....my... daughter?" Michael asked finding the words difficult to say but he said it anyway.

Coming to his side, Lydia nodded her head. "That's your daughter Selena gave birth too."

Michael looked behind her and saw the slightly open gate.

"Who opened the Gate of Darkness?" Michael asked. "Please don't tell me is my daughter."

"Let's not go there yet, but it wasn't your daughter who had opened it, I told you that before."

Michael didn't say a word, he just stares at his frozen daughter. "Move back Lydia, I am unfreezing her right now."

Lydia smiled. "That was what I have been waiting to hear from you since." She said putting some good distance away from Michael.

Michael moved around his daughter with speed, circling her faster as lightning emerged from his body, touching the frozen lady.

Lydia could only see lightning circling her niece but not Michael.

It went on for close to thirty minutes before he stopped. The ice used on Avonmora had melted away, her still body fell down to the ground but Michael was fast and grab his daughter before she could hit the ground.

Her body was so cold. His body glowed sending some warmth into her body, he waited and waited for her to open her eyes, but he wasn't getting any response. He touched her neck.

"Lydia, something is wrong."

"What do you mean something is wrong?"

"I feel no pulse in her, she has no soul."

\*\*\*

Lillian who had taken a stroll to clear her head about what Rae had told her last night, appeared in her sitting room. Maybe she heard the wrong name from her granddaughter last night and before she could ask her to repeat what she told her last night, she left for school without her knowledge.

"Good to see you once again Lillian." The deep book voice brought her out of her thoughts, scaring her a bit.

She could recognize that voice anywhere, any day. Rae wasn't lying and she heard right.

"Tharollin." Lillian swallowed thickly as she said his name.

"Yeah, still me. I came here for answers and once I get it, I will fly my way out the way I fly my way in." Tharollin said.

Trying to keep her hands from shaking. "What answers are you seeking Tharollin?"

"Very simple question Lillian." Tharollin said smiling. "Why does your granddaughter has the aura of me and my mate? A simple question Lillian."

"I don't know what you are talking about."

Getting up to his feet angrily advancing to the witch with his intimidating aura. "Do not play with me Lillian." He said as Lillian send a fire spell to him which he brush off with ease. "Have you forgotten that I am immune to everything around me? I am a full demon Lillian, get that into your skull." Tharollin said.

Lillian had forgotten that Tharollin wasn't an ordinary demon, he was Lucifer son. Her back pressed against the wall. There was no where else to go, teleporting in the presence of Tharollin is like using baskets to fetch water. Her teleport would never work in his presence, that shows how powerful he is.

Reaching her, he held her throat as she started struggling to free herself from his hands, lifting her higher.

"Just one simple answer Lillian, and you won't die. Why does your granddaughter has the aura of both me and my mate?"

"Be...because...she...is...your...daughter." Lillian managed to say out and the hand holding her neck was suddenly gone. She embraced herself to hit the ground but it didn't happen.

Opening her eyes she didn't even know she had closed, she saw she was being levitated by Tharollin who looked shocked by the new information.

Clearing her throat to steady her voice, she couldn't hide it from him. "Yes tharollin, Rae is your daughter Avonmora gave birth too."

## Chapter 39

'I must not fear. Fear is the mind-killer. Fear is the little-death that brings total obliteration. I will face my fear. I will permit it to pass over me and through me. And when it has gone past I will turn the inner eye to see its path. Where the fear has gone there will be nothing. Only I will remain. I must say a word about fear. It is life's only true opponent. Only fear can defeat life. It is a clever, treacherous adversary, how well I know. It has no decency, respects no law or convention, shows no mercy. It goes for your weakest spot, which it finds with unnerving ease. It begins in your mind, always ... so you must fight hard to express it. You must fight hard to shine the light of words upon it. Because if you don't, if your fear becomes a wordless darkness that you avoid, perhaps even manage to forget, you open yourself to further attacks of fear because you never truly fought the opponent who defeated you.'

♥♥♥♥ KNOWING THE TRUTH ♥♥♥♥

Shaking his head in a disbelieve way, "Impossible Lillian, this can't be possible." Tharollin said.

"What is not possible Tharollin? That Rae is not your child? Or that demons can't bare children like others Supernaturals?" Lillian demanded. "The reason why Rae has you and Avonmora aura is because she is your daughter, your biological daughter. You wanted to hear the truth and now you've heard it, you are saying it's not possible?" Lillian added as she regains her breath. Her feet touching the ground.

"I wasn't expecting that Lillian, my mind wasn't even there at all." Tharollin said. "But if Rae is my child as you said, then how did Avonmora gave birth to her? What I mean to say is that, was she frozen before or after Rae's birth? I am missing something here."

"Well I have a lot to talk about, but I can't say that while standing, I am not like you Tharollin, I need to sit." Lillian said.

"Sorry, you can sit, you don't have to tell me, it's your home." Tharollin said with shrugs shoulders.

Lillian sat down on Rae's favorite chair and glance at Tharollin contemplating whether to tell him the whole truth she knows or not. Telling tharollin the whole truth will cause a great havoc in the whole kingdoms, and since he is back from the Gate of Darkness, he is much stronger now. And also, Tamara is her sister.

"Well, you are sited already Lillian, start talking." Tharollin booming voice startled Lillian out of her thoughts. "I don't have all the patience in the whole world."

"Right." Lillian said forcing herself to smile and calming her nerves down. "Where should I start now?" She whispers so lowly to herself that she couldn't barely hear it herself.

"Start from the very beginning, I don't want to miss any part Lillian." Tharollin answered for her. Lillian was surprised, she has forgotten that nothing get past Tharollin ears.

"Of course Tharollin, the beginning." Lillian said.

"And don't forget, If I find out you did not tell me the whole truth, I will kill you personally." Tharollin threatened. He knows he couldn't kill the woman who had looked after Rae since she was born. He has to put fear in her in that way she will open up everything. "The beginning Lillian."

"After you entered the Gate of Darkness, Avonmora was summoned and all the Kings and Queens of supernatural were present. That was when Tamara came and told us that the gods will use all the whole Mer-clan to close the gate which you opened. We agreed and that was how the Mermaids Clan were all killed a thousand years ago." Lillian said.

Tharollin eyes went wide in fury. "What!?! Are you sure you are saying the truth Lillian?"

"Why would I lie to you? Tamara was the one who had told us what the gods want and we agreed to it without questioning the gods." Lillian reply back.

"But...but my father and Tamara told me it was Roen who had ordered the killings of the Mer-clan and my Mate." Tharollin told Lillian, he was confused. Why would his father lied to him? For what reason? He congratulated himself for not giving his father his bones he had asked for. What if he had given him his bones and got to find out the real truth later? "And I am planning on killing that man that orders the death of my Mate and her people." He added.

"WHAT!!!" Lillian shouted in surprise after hearing what Tharollin had said. Her shouts surprised Tharollin a bit. "Whoever told you that, lied to your face Tharollin, Tamara was the one who had told us what the gods required and they requested for the blood of the Mer-clan. Didn't you noticed that the Gate of Darkness is nearly close? With her hands, she froze Avonmora." Lillian explained quickly. Why would her sister lied to Tharollin, what did she hope to get from all these? What is her aim if tharollin killed Roen? And his father... did... Tharollin just mention Lucifer?

"I see." Tharollin said and nods his head. "Tell me how Avonmora managed to give birth to my daughter." Tharollin said still nodding his head.

"Well I did an ancient magic spell on her and removed her child from her womb before she was frozen. I took care of your child and weaned her until now." Lillian told him.

"I still don't get it, Avonmora should have told them she was with my child and they won't have killed her or her people, at least, until she gives birth to her." Tharollin said with anger.

"And we should flaunt away the orders of the gods? You know it is not possible, the gods would be angry if we fail to carry out their orders." Lillian said trying to reason with Tharollin to see why they had agreed in the killings in the first place. "And you know if the Gate of Darkness was still opened the way it was before, everyone will become evil, so the blood of the Mer-clan was used in closing the Gate until it remains a little bit to close completely."

"The gods you say?" Tharollin said in mused. "Fine then." He added closing that chapter of the gods. He knows what to do with them. "Then why are you putting a hidden spell on my daughter? Don't you want others to see who she truly is? Or is it because half of my blood runs in her I that why you placed a hidden spell on her?" Tharollin asked.

"No, it's not because of that Tharollin, it is because her life is in danger as we speak." Lillian said.

\*\*\*\*

#### VAMPIRE KINGDOM:

Dean was seen walking along the hallways in another section of the palace when he stopped in front of a chamber, he knocked and entered the chamber. He greeted the beautiful lady sitting on the bed, doing nothing.

"Dean you remembered to pay your lovely mother a visit today." Queen Jasmine, Dean mother said to her son as he went to meet her and peck her cheeks.

"But I was here yesterday to see you, anyway I am sorry Mother." Dean said as he sat beside his mother on the bed.

"So what brings you here and how is your father?" Queen Jasmine asked. "I haven't seen him since I returned from my trip two days ago." She added. It has been two days since she returned and didn't want to bother her mate since he was very busy with the kingdom affairs. He has been talking with the Vampire council and disturbing him might anger him. She had thought it was Darin who came but wasn't surprised when she saw her son instead.

"He is fine mother, you will get to see him probably before the end of today, I don't know how you both will meet but I am not here to speak about father." Prince Dean said.

"Okay, what do you want to speak about my son?" Queen Jasmine asked softly.

"I met a girl, Rae is her name, and I fell in love with her." Dean began. "I don't know what to do to make her fall in love with me mother." He added leaving out the part of Rae having a Mate.

"Have you talked to her? I mean have you tell her your feelings?" Queen Jasmine asked.

"That is the problem mother, I have told her my feelings, she knows or at least she saw it in my eyes, but she turned down my love." Dean said sadly.

"Hmm, then let me see if you have a future with her." Queen Jasmine said and before Dean will get out of the bed, she already touched his forehead with one of her fingers and closed her eyes.

Dean wasn't fast enough to prevent his mother from touching his forehead. Now she will see what he was hiding.

Queen Jasmine opened her eyes widely. "You have no future with her Dean, she has a mate already and she is a dangerous one." She said as she removed her finger. She has the powers to foresee the future of a particular person as long as she made contact with the person's forehead. "She has a connection with her mate, I don't know who her mate is son, but their bond is strong son and he is extremely dangerous."

"I want to break their bond mother, she is Mine only and not anyone else." Dean said possessively over Rae. "I will break their bond mother."

"You are a fool then son, from what I see about Rae of a girl, breaking their bonds will make her bad, you don't want that to happen don't you?"

"What do you mean by 'bad'?" Dean asked.

"She has a dark aura that can be triggered and opened which will turn her bad. She is like a weapon that can be used for good or for evil, though I am not sure if my visions are right, but I have to see her to confirm." Queen Jasmine said.

"Still that hasn't given me a clue on how to break their bonds mother. If she turns out to be bad as you have said, then I will love it. People will be scared to talk to us, whatever we say remains." Dean said with determination.

"Son, do not trend the part you are about to make, you are going to your own destruction. Leave Rae alone and the gods will give you your own mate when it is time." Queen Jasmine said trying to reason with her son but she knew she was already fighting a lost battle, she knew her son very well, once he made up his mind, there is no going back.

"You and father are saying the same thing, but Rae is the one I want mother, and I shall have her."

"Son, whoever her mate is won't leave you alone, the Bond I felt was very strong and even if you want to break the Bond, it is impossible because there is no one alive that can break that bond." Queen Jasmine said.



Getting up to his feet, he smiled. "There will always be someone out there, who can break the bonds mother. A Tribird mate bond was once broken before, isn't it mother?" Queen Jasmine eyes went wide in shock at her son's question. "I will repeat history again."

"I see your father has told you about the Mate bond and what it caused. Going to the part you want to choose now will only lead you to pain, defeat, sorrow and finally, your Death. Think twice son, for I see you crying and shedding out blood as tears, but no help will come to help you. You will break her bond, but she will be the one to end you." Queen Jasmine said and stood up to her feet. "Destruction awaits you at the end of it all."

\*\*\*\*

"Why isn't her soul in her body Lydia?" Michael asked staring at his daughter's face.

"I am as shocked as you are Micheal, I have no idea that there is no soul in her frozen body." Lydia said after checking Avonmora's pulse. "There is something I am missing here."

"Why was her soul taken away from her and then her body froze Lydia?" Micheal demanded. Why would a person frozen his daughter and collect her soul, for what?

"I have no answers to that Micheal. But I will get my answers soon, I didn't know she has no soul in her." Lydia responded.

"We have to find out who had taken her soul and why they did that." Michael said.

"My daughter will might give me the information but she is in the Supernaturals school which is not very far from here by now." Lydia said.

"Then let's go to the said school." Michael said and he stood up to his full height, carrying his daughter along with him in bride style.

"It doesn't work that way Micheal, my daughter is in disguise, I will contact her and ask her to look into this new discovery for us." Lydia said standing up to her full height also. "And there is no argument." She added before Michael will say a thing.

"Fine, where are we going to keep her body, I don't want it to be here."

"I will take her with me, not to the Sea, I know where to hide her well no one will ever find her." Lydia said.

"Good, I will fly you both home now, I need to go back and have a nice discussion with Aaron." Michael said, making sure he was holding Avonmora tightly with one of his hands, he used the free one to grab one of the hands of Lydia and start going higher with them. "It's time I face my responsibility."

\*\*\*\*\*

"Danger? My daughter's life is in danger? By WHO?" Tharollin demanded. "Give me their names and the problem shall be solved, she will walk freely amongst her peers with no more hidden spells on her." He added his eyeballs changing into the thickness of darkness, his face was so full of darkness and that scared Lillian. "Let me see who dares lay his or her filthy hands on my daughter."

"Everyone Tharollin, everyone will want her dead if they find out she is a mermaid." Lillian said.

"Then everyone shall die Lillian." Tharollin said getting up to his feet. "It will only take me a week for that to happen, I will only leave the younger generations, the problem is now solved." He added with an evil glint in his eyes.

"You don't get it Tharollin, Tamara said.." Lillian started to say but was interrupted by Tharollin.

"Tamara again!" Tharollin shouted in anger, thunder sound was heard above them. "What did she say this time?"

"Rae will be used for sacrifice, her blood will then close the gate of Darkness forever, since she's the last Mermaid." Lillian said. "Or perhaps she was lying to us." She added, remembering Sarah's true nature.

"Of course she was lying to you all. Has Tamara....no....your sister ever has a truth in her mouth for once? You know your sister is a liar yet you couldn't raise your voice when she said the gods order the deaths of many Mer-clan, and you all believed her? Tell me, how in your wildest dreams you believed that they are the only mermaids in here?" Tharollin asked in anger.

Lillian winced, he was saying the truth, they had believed her sister without questioning the gods and asked them why they had ordered the killings of the whole Mer-clan, were they not the ones with the help of Tharollin locked the Gate of Darkness? She was blind before but could now see the truth pointing right in her face, ever since her encounter with Sarah, which proves that mermaids still exists.

"Have you ever sit down and ask yourself where does Selena comes from? Everyone has his or her own lineage Lillian, Selena didn't puff out in the air and came here, she came out from somewhere. Just because Tamara subdue the ravaging beast and was made the priestess of the gods doesn't stop you all from questioning the gods at TIMES!" Tharollin yelled the last part before continuing. "This is Tamara and my father hidden agenda which I am going to find out why they did it, and to top it all, they both lied to my face." Tharollin said calmly to Lillian, too calmly.

"I am sorry, you are right, we should have asked to be sure before the massacre of the whole Mer-clan." Lillian said apologetic.

Tharollin nodded his head and started transforming to his dark smoke. "You have to tell Rae who her father is before I come back, make sure you tell her everything and when I am back, the hidden spell you had on her will be removed from her, if she still wants me around her after what I foolishly did to my Mate, her mother, it's fine by me, if she doesn't, it's still fine by me. All I know is that my daughter can't be hidden like a common thief because she is a mermaid who according to you, will be used to lock the Gate. It won't happen on my watch, unless the creator himself comes down and stop me." Tharollin said.

"I will tell her everything she needs to know, though I have told her about her mother and who she is, I didn't tell her about you because I wasn't expecting to see you or have you return in one piece. I am sorry I excluded you from the story Tharollin." Lillian said closing her eyes as she spoke. Tharollin would be angry with her for excluding him.

"It's fine Lillian, I understand you. But I am back now and I will try to rectify my ways and find out the truth of the killings of the Mer-clans, and even if my daughter or my Mate hates me, I will spend all my life trying to make them see me in a new light and beg them. I did wrong by not listening to my Mate and I am very sorry for not listening to her." Tharollin said softly.

Lillian breathed out a sigh of relief.

"I just have a question for you Lillian and I need an honest truth. Now I know Roen isn't the one who had ordered for the killings of my frozen Mate and her people, so I need you to tell me the truth." Tharollin said.

"And what truth tharollin?"

"What happened to my demons that was taken after I lost the war?" Tharollin asked, he couldn't tell Lillian he purposely lost the war to get close to the Mer-Queen which he later got to found out she was truly his Mate.

"I don't know the answer to that question Tharollin, the only person who could give you the answer you seek is King Roen himself." Lillian answered him.

Tharollin nodded his head, he hopes to get the answer from Jason when he pays him a visit soon. "Don't forget what I asked you to do, I will be back soon." He said as his legs and hands began to transform into his dark smoke.

"Forgive me for asking Tharollin, but where are you going too?" Lillian asked. "Are you going to see Tamara?"

"Seeing Tamara will be later." Tharollin reply as his whole body transform to the smoke remaining his head. "I am going to visit the gods and asked them why they had ordered the killings of the whole Mer-clan, and if I get no positive answer from them, I will kill some of the gods." Tharollin added and his head finally changed into smoke.

Lillian eyes widen when she heard that. Tharollin was going to visit the gods?

## Chapter 40

'When you judge someone, you are judging yourself. When you hate someone, you are hating yourself. When you love someone, you are loving yourself. Nobody will ever betray, humiliate or hurt you, if you have not first betrayed, humiliated or hurt yourself. When we recognize that our personal good coincides with the Good of everyone, our inner light is turned on: at this point, when a human being becomes a Human Angel, their light, like a beacon, shines all around. The more lights are lit, the more humanity will be enlightened in these dark times, when the world of the ego, driven to its extreme, has begun its dramatic collapse. You are never alone, your Angels always whisper to your heart.

By silencing your mind, you can be filled with their Love. My life belongs only to me. I let go of all the expectations that others have of me. My life doesn't belong to anybody, except to me and to Life itself.'

♥♥♥♥ THAROLLIN AND LOLLY (Part 1) ♥♥♥♥

Entering his class, Rae raised her head from Jason's chest a bit to look around her new classroom. Everything in it was still the same, except for the seat. Instead of one that was always there, it is now two. On top of one of the desks were flowers, red roses.

"I thought I will be expecting a grand welcome in here, you know people playing drums and singing for me as we entered my new classroom and I will be feeling like a queen." Rae said as Jason gently place her in the new seat that was made for her. "You should know I am highly disappointed." Rae added crossing her arms.

"Don't worry about that sweetheart, I promise to make it up to you. But you don't expect a grand welcome in the school just because you're going to your new class, do you?" Jason asked and Rae nodded her head

"As a matter of fact, I really do." Rae replied smirking at him.

"I never count you as those ladies you know, who like those things." Jason said surprisingly. "You dress up like a boy, in a guys clothes to be precise- and I hope you are not going to wear this your boys clothes to the Wolf festival coming soon with me?"

"Of course I will darling, if I don't annoy some certain set of people in the coming Wolf festival with my clothes, then I will fall sick." Rae answered with a smile.

"No, you won't wear any of your boys clothes to the festival. I will see what I can do about your clothes." Jason said placing his right fingers under his jaw. "I think it's high time for you to be wearing ladies clothes, wearing it will bring your nice shape out which belongs to only me." He added.

"Till then Jason, I will know who is the real boss between the both of us." Rae said.

"Really? Everyone knows that I am the boss." Jason said with a smug look.

"Don't get cocky Jason, you might even be the one who will end up wearing those 'ladies' clothes on that day." Rae said. "So where is the teacher or teachers who will be teaching us? I haven't seen Miss Serena yet." Rae added.

"Actually about that Rae, I will be the one teaching you from now henceforth." Jason dropped the bombshell.

Rae laughed out. "This is so funny, you teach me? I hope you are not serious, right?" Rae asked smiling and when she saw that Jason wasn't returning the smile, it faded as quickly as it came. "You are serious?"

"Yup, deadly serious. I am your new teacher." Jason replied. "Don't worry, you will pick up faster than the rest of your classmates. I know every single thing that is being taught in various classes, so don't worry about a thing you've got an intelligent teacher to teach you." He added.

"How can you be my teacher!" Rae yelled. "You don't expect me to accept that, do you?"

"Actually, you don't have any say in this. I have talked to Jack and he has agreed and our agreement is that he will never allowed you to any of the classes." Jason answered.

"How can my boyfriend and lover be my teacher? Where has it been heard off? I can't concentrate if you teach me, I will be looking at so many things." Rae said as her eyes roamed over her handsome boyfriend sexy body, she licked her lips slowly as she gets up to her feet and close the distance between them. "So many things Jason which are tempting me."

"Why do you think I want to become your teacher in the first place?" Jason asked as he placed his hands around her waist, bringing them much closer, Rae looked at him as her hands find their way around his neck, he leaned his head and brushed his lips against hers. "You don't expect me to be walking from here to your class to kiss you every minute in front of your goddamn classmates, you don't know what you do to me Rae, I am crazily and madly in love with you." Jason added sealing his lips with hers in a breathtaking kiss. Her lips were softly, delicately, like butterfly wings, just long enough that he could inhale her breath, feel the warmth of her skin under her clothes. The bright light shone around them but the two lovers didn't care.

They broke off from their kiss at the same time as the light begin to fade. Jason continue kissing her neck.

"I want to make you mine Rae." Jason whispered and he started licking the right side of her neck where mated wolves Marked their mates for life, carrying her up with ease. "I want to mark you as Mine."

"Then Mark me Jason, I want to be yours for life, forever." Rae said as she wrapped her legs around him, bringing him much closer in between her legs.

"Definitely I will Mark you as Mine Rae, soon, but not here, not in school or in the desk will I take you. You know, the werewolf mate season is coming soon and when it comes, I will claim you as MINE." Jason whispered slowly into Rae's ear which make her shiver in arousal. Suddenly Jason removed his hands from her waist and her legs from his waist, it was so fast. Rae fell down in a heavy thud not expecting it, ruining the sexy moment they were having.

Getting up to her feet as she rubbed her ass which was painng her from the fall. "What was that for!" She yelled out in anger.

"How can you hold your new teacher like that? Do you want Mr Jack to sack me if he sees a student and her teacher in such compromising manner?" Jason asked with much seriousness that Rae almost forgot he was Jason and not a teacher as she looks at him. "I love my new job too much young lady and I am not ready to lose it at the moment." He added smiling.

"I will get back at you Jason, mark my word." Rae said as she went back to her seat, placing her legs on the empty seat.

"I don't understand what you mean by that Miss Rae, but I think it's high time you bring out your book." Jason said ignoring Rae's hard look she was throwing at him as she made a book appeared in front of her as usual. "Good student, I will start from where Miss Serena stopped."

---

Lolly wasn't concentrating on what they were teaching her, her mind was on Rae and Jason. What could they be doing right now behind those closed school door?

Jason couldn't allow her in or breath for three minutes if she was in that class with him, he would have used those his fearful eyes to chase her away, but with Rae, it was different.

Something is wrong somewhere if not, Why would Jason suddenly break up with her and realize he has feelings for Rae and not her again all of a sudden? There is something those two are hiding which she is going to find out what.

She couldn't wait for school to close for the day to visit her mother once again. All she knows is that Rae might be blackmailing Jason into loving her.

Jason is hers and hers alone. She will kill anyone who dares to stand between them even if it means killing Rae.

\*\*\*\*\*

VAMPIRE KINGDOM:

"Stop saying destruction mother, nothing will happen to me." Dean said still adamant of his mother's warning.

"Dean, my son, I can never deceive you, stay away from that girl who I see in your vision if you truly want to live forever." Queen Jasmine said.

"Nothing can change my mind mother. Someone helped the man in breaking up the Tribrid bond he had with the Vampire, mine won't be any different. Rae must be mine mother, and I will take her from Jason by force and that is what I am going to do. I will look for someone, a powerful person who is as powerful as the Druids who had cut off the Bond in the past, once I see that person, breaking the bond between Rae and Jason will be so easy." Dean told his mother. "Anyway I don't expect you and father to understand that she is my life." He added.

"Jason? Did you just said Jason the son of King Roen? The only Millennium Wolf?" Queen Jasmine demanded.

"Yes mother the same Jason you and I know, his mate is what I need and I will have her mother." Dean said with determination.

"Jason is not your match son and you know it, do not do what you are about to do Dean, it will destroy your life." Queen Jasmine said and continue before her son will talk. "What about the other witch girl you once introduced me to, what happened to her?" Queen Jasmine asked.

"She is fine mother, the love I have for her has gone with the winds and no, Rae's love is totally different mother. I love her and want to make her mine forever." Dean said. "I see forever between us."

"The path you have now choose won't help you son. You will ask for my help, for your father's help, but we won't help you when that day comes. Think about it before very well you make the mistake which will cost you your life son." Queen Jasmine said.

"Mother you don't really know me, I won't ask for any of you help." Dean said as his mother smiled at him sadly. "I will make Rae mine, and if I succeeded in breaking the bond that binds the two together, I will bond myself with Rae. And if it doesn't work out in the end, I will find a way to kill Rae and myself, no one will then have her." Dean added and laughed.

"There is time for you to change your evil thoughts and plan son, the universe are giving you a chance." Queen Jasmine said.

"I don't need their stupid chance mother, if they can be able to to give me a chance, then they can make Rae become mine mother." Dean said.



Queen Jasmine shook her head sideways, "You have already made up your mind son, I wish you the best of luck."

"Thank you mother, I shall be on my way now." Dean said and left his mother's chamber.

If only he knows what awaits him in the end if he chooses the path he is about to take.

Queen Jasmine thought to herself. She has tried, the gods knows she did her best to convince her idiot son.

\*\*\*\*\*

#### THE REALM OF THE GODS:

Tharollin appeared right at the middle of the gods where they were all having a meeting, they were seated around the table. The gods were all shocked and surprised to see Tharollin.

"Tharollin?" Ares was the first to come out of shock as he spoke. Tharollin pushed the heavy table that was made with thick iron, which was at the gods middle, to one side of the room with one of his fingers.

"I am so glad I disrupted any kind of stupid meeting you all are having right now." Tharollin said without a hint of fear. The gods started whispering amongst themselves.

"What do you want Tharollin?" Zeus demanded immediately, ignoring the whispering going on around him. Why would the devil son come to their abode. What for? What does he want from them? Zeus thought as he awaits an answer from the devil's son.

"I need answers Zeus or whatever your name is called." Tharollin said

"You talk to the king of the gods with respect or you will face my wrath you dirty demon." Apollo said in anger.

Tharollin burst into laughter. "I will love to see you try Pollo." He said in between his laughs.

"You are in the presence of the gods Demon, show some respect." Eros said.

"I left my box of respect back on Earth, I will be very happy if you can go to earth to get it for me." Tharollin said to him with a smile.

"Tharollin, what brought you here?" Zeus asked. "Please." He added with a sigh.

"Now you are talking Zeus." Tharollin said as his face changed into a deep darkly scowl. "Who amongst you ordered the killings of the whole mermaid clan 1,000 years ago?" He asked as he

stared squarely at Zeus. "Who? Just to close the Gate of Darkness I dumbly opened, one of you ordered the killings of them all and my Mate, so I am here to find out who issue out the order so that I can kill him."

"What!? What did you just say now Tharollin?" Zeus asked.

"I don't repeat myself twice Zeus, especially when I am in front of some dumb gods. You better start talking or pointing, if not this place will be filled with blood before I leave for earth. I am not making mouth Zeus and you know what I can do."

At that moment, Hermes walked in with a cup of wine which he offered to Tharollin.

## Chapter 41

"When you judge someone, you are judging yourself. When you hate someone, you are hating yourself. When you love someone, you are loving yourself. Nobody will ever betray, humiliate or hurt you, if you have not first betrayed, humiliated or hurt yourself. When we recognize that our personal good coincides with the Good of everyone, our inner light is turned on: at this point, when a human being becomes a Human Angel, their light, like a beacon, shines all around. The more lights are lit, the more humanity will be enlightened in these dark times, when the world of the ego, driven to its extreme, has begun its dramatic collapse. You are never alone, your Angels always whisper to your heart.

By silencing your mind, you can be filled with their Love. My life belongs only to me. I let go of all the expectations that others have of me. My life doesn't belong to anybody, except to me and to Life itself.

♥♥♥♥ THAROLLIN AND LOLLY (Part 2) ♥♥♥♥

"Here is wine Tharollin, to cool your temper." Hermes said.

"Hermes my friend, now is not the time for wine, it is for answers and I am getting my answers right now." Tharollin said without looking at his directions as his gaze never left the shocked eyes of Zeus.

Hermes nodded his head and left their presence.

"Tharollin, I believe what I heard just now from you is wrong, how can I or any of the gods order the death of the whole Mer-clan? I still don't understand what you are saying." Zeus said not believing.

"How can you tell me you don't understand what I just said? Are you now deaf Zeus?" Tharollin demanded angrily.

"Do not insult the king of the gods Tharollin, you are daring me." Ares said with the same matching tone.

Tharollin briefly take a glance at him and dismissed him immediately, his focus was on Zeus. "Shhhh Ares, you will speak when you are addressed to so for now just shut that hole you call your mouth up, you are not Zeus." Tharollin said.

Ares stood up angrily from where he sat and throw a Spear, which magically appeared in his hand, at tharollin.

Tharollin didn't even removed his eyes from Zeus as he caught the spear that almost neared his face with ease. He threw it back quickly, much faster, that Ares wasn't expecting it. It could have pierced Ares heart if Tharollin hasn't stopped it by lifting up one of his fingers, and it stopped.

"Hot blood Ares, my blood was once boiling like yours. Zeus, you should warn your son from meddling in my affairs I have with you." Tharollin said with a smirk, dropping the finger he uses in controlling the spear, the sound of the spear falling to the ground was audible to everyone of the gods. "Warn him Zeus, he won't be lucky next time."

"Son, sit down." Zeus told his son, Ares, who sat down in anger, facing Tharollin once more. "Please Tharollin, can you repeat what you told me before." Zeus added pleadingly. As long as you put 'please' in your word to Tharollin, well, he will listen to you.

"Listen and listen good Zeus, I won't repeat myself again." Tharollin said. "One thousand years ago, I was at war with the whole Supernaturals, and I lost the battle and-" tharollin stopped when he saw the surprised look Zeus was giving him. "Yes I lost the battle on purpose, and that purpose was to get close with the queen of the Mer-clans. My aim was to kidnap her and rape her then before collecting her blood to use in opening the Gate of Darkness." Tharollin said and swallowed hard, he has to be honest with them so that they will be honest with him. At least he wouldn't feel guilt if he slain the offender.

"Then what happened after that Tharollin." Zeus voice brought him out of his thoughts.

"I met the queen and...I realized she was my mate, my soulmate. I couldn't do as I had planned, I got to know her with the little time I spend with her, but, the job has to be done. I mated with her and took her blood which I used in opening the Gate of Darkness, I ignored her pleading and entered the Gate. Now I just returned from the Gate of Darkness only to find out that they had all been killed. Not one of them was spared, and it was said you or one of the gods had ordered for the massacre of the whole Mer-clan." Tharollin finished his short story which sounded long to him. "And that is why I am here, to ask you Zeus why would you ordered your priestess to kill every single Mer-clan?" He asked.

"To be sincere Tharollin, I am as surprised or shock as you are. I don't know what is going on, this is my first time hearing this." Zeus said to Tharollin. "Who amongst you, told Tamara to kill all Mer-clan in the Supernaturals kingdom?" Zeus asked.

All the gods present shook their heads as no.

"Tharollin, as you can see, we have no hands in whatsoever killing you just said. It has even been long we heard from Tamara. I myself didn't ask Tamara to kill anyone, let alone a whole Mer-clan." Zeus said before pointing each and every one of the gods around them. "And I believe the rest of the gods won't do so. I see the truth in their eyes." Zeus added.

Tharollin laughed out a little. "Tamara truly lied to the people and used your names to wipe out the Mer-clan." Tharollin said and smiled. "I have heard you Zeus."

"I will get to the root of all these, we were even planning to visit the earth soon, that was what we were discussing before you came." Zeus said. "Don't worry Tharollin, I will personally get to the root of this and know why Tamara will use our names to deceive the people." Zeus added.

Tharollin only nodded absentmindedly.

"If I may ask, why did you open the Gate of Darkness in the first place?" Eros asked staring at Tharollin.

"Why did Tamara used the name of the gods to carry out her act?" Tharollin fired back. "If you can tell me the reason why, I will tell you why I foolishly opened the Gate of Darkness." He added.

"If you didn't open the Gate, none of these would have occurred Tharollin, your mate wouldn't have died, face the truth Demon, you killed all of them including your beloved mate indirectly." Ares said feeling good to use that against him.

Tharollin ignored him, it stings him to the core, but Ares was saying the truth. If he hadn't thought of opening the Gate, Avonmora wouldn't be frozen, his daughter wouldn't be hiding like a thief, they would have been a one big happy family. If only he had listened to the voice of reason when he told his father he wouldn't do as planned because the Queen was his mate, all what is happening now won't have occurred. He blamed himself.

But on second thought, if he didn't open the Gate, the rest of the people will all be obeying their stupid priestess who is a big liar. Everything happens for a reason.

"I will take my leave now Zeus, though I don't know why I am telling you that." Tharollin said. "Hope to see you on Earth sooner Zeus." He added as his body changed into his dark smoke.

"Of course my friend, we will visit the Earth soon, very soon." Zeus told him. "Hermes!" He called out.

Hermes who has been listening to their conversation, entered the room.

"Send a message across to Tamara, ask her why she had used our names to kill the Mer-clan a thousand year ago. Tell her we will be coming to interrogate her soon." Zeus told Hermes who nodded his head and left them. Though he pretended as if he was going, only for him to go back to his hidden spot to eavesdropped on them.

"The creator of the universe gave each and every one of you legs to use." Tharollin said as the smoke consume him. "Sometimes Zeus, once in a blue moon, one should carry out his own message to earth, by himself." Tharollin added and allowed the smoke to take all over his head. He was gone as he had came.

"I hate to say this father, but the Demon is right." Ares said.

\*\*\*\*\*

It was school closing hour as all the students were seen going their different ways. Some of the witches opened their various portals which will take them home, some wolves, change into their form and find their way home, some fairy made their wings appear and they all flew away in different directions. Every super-creatures find their way home.

The four friends were seen walking together.

"Rae there is something I really need to tell you but that will be much later because we have some people who have rabbit ears around us." Sarah said stopping prompting all three to stop.

"No problem Sarah." Rae reply and faces Jason. "You wouldn't mind if I choose to open my portal now, I did not eat at home today and my grandmother will be very pissed at me." Rae added.

"Sure Rae, I also have someone who will be waiting for me." Jason said remembering his little friend he will be expecting.

"Someone? Who is she Jason? Don't tell me you go behind me fucking some bitches. So who is this bitch and where is she from?" Rae asked in jealousy.

"Relax Rae, I am not seeing any other person apart from you. My friend I am seeing is a 12 year old boy, who wants to know more about some history." Jason said defending himself.

"It had better been a 12 year old boy Jason or I swear I will cut off that dick of yours and shove it hard into your ass that it would take a millennium years for you to shit it out." Rae warned dangerously which makes Jason moved to Jorkallun side quickly.

"It is a little boy I am seeing my beautiful jealous Rae." Jason said.

Touching her bracelet, the portal opened in her front entering it. "it has better been Jason, I got my eyes on you, don't forget that." Rae said as the portal closes.

"Finally she left." Sarah said with a smile as she turned her gaze to meet Jason. "My cousin is overprotective and jealous, I like that."

"I love her spirit Sarah, she is fearless, that is one of the reasons I fell in love with her." Jason said still looking at the spot Rae was a few minutes ago.

"Me too, the first day she talks back at me, I was surprised and I admire her courage." Jorkallun said proud of his new little sister.

"I am glad Mr Jack made me her school tour the day she came to school for the first time."  
Sarah chip in.

"I just love her more, she makes me feel complete and whole again. Sincerely speaking, she is the only person I've ever really respected and if any of you ever tell her I said that then shoving my dick in my ass will look like a pleasant punishment compared with what I'll do to you two."

"We won't tell her." Jorkallun and Sarah both promised, laughing though.

"I will take my leave now, take care Jorkallun and Sarah." Jason said and vanished.

"Come on love, let's go home." Jorkallun said taking hold of Sarah's hand as he walks her home.

\*\*\*\*

The portal opens in the middle of the sitting room and Rae walked out of it, it closes immediately.

She was surprised when she saw her grandmother sitting down with a distance look on her face.

"Grandma, what happened?" Rae asked.

The voice startled her and calm down a bit when she saw Rae.

"Rae you are back home." Lillian said trying to smile but failed miserable.

"Yes I am back granny, what's wrong?"

"Sit down Rae, we need to talk." Lillian said as Rae sat down beside her in another chair.

"Tell me who you met yesterday and your discussion you had with him."

"Well, I went there to see if perhaps I have a connection in there when he came out of the blue. We talked a bit and he asked me why I smelled like him and my mother. I kindly give him an answer, so he said he was going to come here soon." Rae said and her eyes widen up. "He came here isn't it granny? Is that why you are like this?" She asked.

"Yes Rae, he came here because he has found out the truth about you." Lillian said.

"Does that mean he will announce to everyone that I am the last mermaid?"

"Not that. Rae what am about to tell you is nothing but the truth. When I finally told you the truth about yourself, I didn't include your father that much because I thought he may never returned from- nevermind." Lillian said. "The man you met in the mermaid kingdom, who told you his name is, is your father. Tharollin is your father." Lillian finally revealed.

"You mean the skull man is my father?" Rae asked standing up slowly. "What is he doing here? What does he want again?"

"He said he wants to make things right and when he comes back, I will remove my hidden spell I had placed on you, in that way, you won't have to hide who you truly are anymore." Lillian explained.

"Won't that put me in trouble when they see I am a mermaid?" Rae asked keeping her anger for the man her grandmother said is coming back.

"He will protect you Rae, people fear him and if they know you are his daughter, they will think twice before they hurt you." Lillian said

"Why are they scared of him?"

"He is the King of the Demons and Lucifer's son." Lillian answered.

Lucifer again? She remembered when the skull man had called the strange water being 'Lucifer'

"Now I remember seeing a man who skull man calls father and Lucifer." Rae said out in thought.

"What did you just say Rae?" Lillian asked with wide eyes.

\*\*\*\*

Appearing some distance away from the Gate where the wolves guards stood, tharollin transformed into a little boy.

The guards quickly recognize him and opened the Gate for him.

Once inside, one lead him to meet Jason who was already at the library sitting and was going through a book.

He had already informed the guards about his little friend coming soon and order one of them to bring the boy to the library once he comes.

Jason stood up once he saw him.



"You can go Mark." He said to the guard who had brought Tharo. Once alone, he pointed at a sit beside him. "Come sit with me friend."

They sat down and Tharo sent a small smile in his way.

"Did your father told you where the rest of the Demons are kept? Or if they are alive my Prince?" Tharollin asked trying to sound calm.

"Yes, he did told me when I asked him and stop calling me Prince, you can call me friend."

"So what did he tell you friend?" Tharollin demanded immediately.

"Tamara took all the demons away and he hasn't seen or heard from them." Jason finally said.

She did what? She lied about this one too? Pinning everything on Jason's father.

"Who is Tamara?" Tharo asked trying to sound confused by that name.

"Oh, she is a priestess of the Supernaturals, and for the record, I don't believe whatever that Priestess is saying. Whoever that believe her needs to have his or her brain checked." Jason said.

Tharollin supported it. The young Prince was right.

"Why do you say so?"

"My wolf doesn't trust her one bit, some of the things she says are lies, but my parents won't believe me."

"So she took the Demons away, for what?"

"I don't know the answer, neither do my father, it was as if he was made to forget about the Demons until I asked about them."

"Okay, thank you for your information my friend."

"Hope it helped you?"

"Yes, as a matter of fact, it really did."

"The Wolf festival is coming up soon, I will like you to come so that I can introduce you to my mate who I love so much."

"Sure, I will come, thanks for your invite my good friend." Tharollin said.

They stayed together reading some of the books there until the little boy stood up.

"I beg to take my leave now."

"You can go, Don't forget to come to the wolf festival." Jason reminded him.

"I won't." Tharollin promised and left him, going out of the palace.

He made sure he was some distance away from the palace before he disappeared.

\*\*\*\*

Tamara was alone when Lolly appeared in the cave.

"What brought you here so soon my daughter?" Tamara asked.

"I want Rae dead." Lolly said immediately.

"We can't kill her yet."

"And why is that?"

"Because Lucifer just found out she is the last mermaid he will use." Tamara said and smiled at Lolly's shocked face. "Yes Lolly, Rae is a mermaid, the one who will complete the ritual."

"Good, Rae won't know what hit her." Lolly said smiling.

"How is your father?" Tamara asked.

"Don't call him my father, he is not my father. I am just using his stupid daughter body we killed which makes him think I am his daughter." Lolly said.

"Well, the Amazon warrior King will come to our use when it is time to fight." Tamara said smiling even more.

"Yes, the potion I gave to him, will help us control him when it's time mother."

"Did you just say call her mother?" Tharollin voice joined in as he appeared in front of the two ladies. "Did I hear her call you mother?" Tharollin asked Tamara.

"And even if you did, what can you do?" Lolly demanded.

"I wasn't talking to you little girl." Tharollin said and faces Tamara. "So the priestess has a daughter?"

Before Tamara would answer, Tharollin was already in her front, holding her throat and choking her hard.

"What did you do to my demons and why did you lie to the people it was the gods who had ordered the Killings of the Mer-clans?" Tharollin demanded. "Tell me why, I went to meet with the gods today and they told me everything."

"Leave my mother alone." Lolly snarled.

"And if I don't leave her, what will you do?" Tharollin asked and press Tamara's throat the more. Tamara was struggling for air.

"I said leave my mother alone." Lolly said and this time, her voice was in a deep voice. Her beast surfacing.

"And I ask you, if I don't what will you do?"

With a loud roar of a beast, Lolly transformed into her hideous beast surprising Tharollin. The beast sent a blow towards Tharollin who caught the claws with his other free hand, the other hand was holding Tamara's neck.

He bent the beast hand and there came a bone cracking sound and he pushed the beast with inhuman strength backwards, the beast back hitting the cave wall and falling with a great heavy thud, Lolly came at him again as she popped back her broke arm in place.

Throwing Tamara who was almost dying to one side of the cave. Tharollin met Lolly and dodged the blow sent to him, holding the beast two arms in his, he sent a little smile at it.

"Hey, you are not the only one who is a beast, unlike you, I can control mine." Tharollin said and his two arms holding Lolly's, changed into beast arms, his talons were much longer. His two black horns came out of his forehead. And without wasting time, he broke the two hands of the beast and the legs.

"I don't fight with weaklings daughter of Tamara." Tharollin said as he kicked the beast he was holding one finally kick, it went flying and landed on the floor. It couldn't get up. His hands returning back to normal.

"I will come back for you to give me the answers I seek Tamara." Tharollin said. "This is just a warning." He added and disappeared.

Tamara stood up with great difficulties as she went over to meet the beast. She sat down and started stroking the head with tenderness.

"I think it's time to involve your father Lolly."

## Chapter 42

'While discovering the others, we get to know ourselves, find inner peace, and, so acquire poise and self-reliance to face up to the undisclosed or anonymous, out there. You've gotta dance like there's nobody watching, Love like you'll never be hurt, Sing like there's nobody listening, And live like it's heaven on earth. The opposite of love is not hate, it's indifference. The opposite of art is not ugliness, it's indifference. The opposite of faith is not heresy, it's indifference. And the opposite of life is not death, it's indifference. When I despair, I remember that all through history the way of truth and love have always won. There have been tyrants and murderers, and for a time, they can seem invincible, but in the end, they always fall. Think of it--always. You have brains in your head. You have feet in your shoes. You can steer yourself any direction you choose. You're on your own. And you know what you know. And YOU are the one who'll decide where to go'

### ♥♥♥♥ FORGOTTEN MEMORIES ♥♥♥♥

The beast slowly carried her head up, painfully, and stretch forth it's two claws hairy hands and the bones snapped back in place. Doing the same to its hind legs, the broken bones snapped back into place. The beast stood up and walked over to where the body of Lolly which lay limp on the ground and her eyes closed in death is, picked it up, and wore the body like cloth. The body swallowed all the beast hairy body as it breathed life into the limp body. The eyes closed in death suddenly opened.

"I asked a question Lolly and you haven't given me an answer yet, should I involve your father in this?" Tamara said repeating her previous question as she slowly stood up to her feet. She placed her right hand on her neck and the pains she was feeling all over her body ceased at that moment as she used magic to heal herself.

"Not yet mother, father shouldn't be involved in this yet." Lolly answered with a tight voice as she remembers her fight she had a few minutes ago. "Who is he mother?" She asked as her eyes were transfixed at the wall of the cave.

"He is Tharollin, the one I told you who opened the Gate to bring out the bones of Lucifer." Tamara answered.

"Lucifer son? No wonder he could easily defeat me." Lolly said in anger. "Has my father and him ever fought before in the past?" She asked.

"No they haven't fought before, he wasn't around during your father's days." Tamara replied as she slowly went over to meet her daughter. "What are you thinking Lolly?"

"How to kill him or find a way by punishing him, he is very rude and arrogant mother. I am very tempted to tell Father." Lolly said as her anger faded.

"I have some information which his father told me once before." Tamara said all of a sudden.

"What kind of information mother?" Lolly demanded.

"Tharollin won't be defeated so easily, I don't know who will win between your father and him, but Lucifer once told me that the only way to get to Tharollin is through someone he cares deeply for."

"And who can that be?" Lolly demanded immediately.

"That my beloved daughter, is what we are going to find out since his Mate is still frozen." Tamara answered. "For now, I will focus on Rae."

"I am leaving now mother, somehow, I have this feeling that things will soon be in our favor." Lolly said.

"And if it doesn't end in our favor then?"

"That's when you involve my father, see you soon." Lolly said and disappeared leaving Tamara alone.

Breathing in deeply, she started arranging what was scattered around the cave and redoing the cave like it was before with her magic.

What lie would she tell Tharollin since he had threatened her he will be back? Tharollin will know when she lie.

What would she do now? She couldn't tell Lolly's father yet because her daughter had told her not to tell him yet. She doesn't want to provoke her daughter the more.

Will Tharollin tell Lucifer what he heard now?

Who had even told Tharollin about the Demons being in her possession? As far as she knows, she made sure everyone didn't remember the demons, especially Roen, so how come Tharollin knew the Demons was with her?

The remaining Demons she collected from Roen were being killed and eaten every single day by Lolly's father.

No, she has to come up with something fast before Tharollin comes back.

\*\*\*\*\*

VAMPIRE KINGDOM:

"I heard your conversation you were having with our son Jasmine." King Darin said as he appeared in front of his beautiful wife. He was there all along listening to his son and wife.

"He is so stubborn Darin, I am afraid of the consequences he is about to make." Queen Jasmine said going to sit on her bed as Darin sat on the bed beside her.

"He should have listened and be thoughtful at times. If I were to be in his shoes, I would have thought just one thing. Why would my parents who had been supporting me all my life and decision suddenly kick against this?" King Darin said.

"I won't be a part of it Darin and you know my visions always come to pass." Queen Jasmine said.

"I know that is why I am afraid Jasmine, and I will never support Dean, and like you told him, if he continues on the path he is about to embark on, then the day he will need our help, he won't get any of it." King Darin said sadly. If only there is something that can be done to change his son's heart.

"I tried reasoning to our son Darin, but he will not listen." Queen Jasmine said. "My only concern is who will help him to break the bond between Rae and her mate."

"I don't have an answer to that my dear, but let's hope and pray to the gods, whoever it is, they should blind our son from seeing such person." King Darin said and places his hand on her neck. "So darling, how was your trip?"

---

Prince Dean entered his room after having his discussion with his mother.

He swore to himself as he walked over to the balcony of his room to have Rae all to himself.

He won't give up his search of finding the person who will help him break the Mate bond.

Rae is mine and MINE alone, she will come to love me after everything.

Dean thought as he breathed the fresh air. Tomorrow, his search for the Mate Bond Breaker will begin. His parents, especially his mother had said there is no one in the whole Supernaturals who can be able to break the bond.

Dean smiled at that. He was going to prove to his mother and father that there is someone out there who can do such work. He just has this insane feelings that whoever it is, is already waiting for him, he just has to make his appearance known to the person or people.

He picture himself and Rae as a perfect couple.

He just has to find him or her to break the bond between Rae and Jason. He didn't care he was going to repeat history again, and even if Jason becomes an untamed beast who kills people, there is always someone out there who can stop him....just like Tamara.

Tamara had tamed the first Tribird and stopped his massive Killings and the Tribird disappeared forever, well that was according to what his mother told him.

What if he seeks the face of the priestess? What if she can break off the Bond that binds Jason and Rae just like one of the druids did to the first Tribird and his vampire Mate.

The vampire died after the bond was broken, right? But it won't happen to Rae. Rae seemed different and a special young lady after his own heart, he just know Rae won't die like the vampire had done, she will fight not to die.

Once the bond has been broken, he will have sex with her and make sure he breed her so that she will carry his child, their child.

He smiled to himself, nothing or nobody can stop him now.

Tomorrow, he will first of all seek the face of the priestess of the gods, if he had no positive answer, then his search for the Mate Bond Breaker will begin.

\*\*\*\*

Tharollin appeared in front of the Gate of Darkness and was surprised when he couldn't see his Mate frozen body again.

He had to clean his eye twice to confirm he was seeing right.

He was very sure it was here he saw Avonmora, who could have taken her?

He closed his eyes and breathed in deeply as an unfamiliar scents filled his nose. Opening his eyes sharply, whoever the scents belongs too, took his Mate away.

One scent reminded him of a mermaid and the other one... it reminds him of those who live up in the sky.

The only person he knows who could have sent the person who took his Mate away...is his father.

He disappeared, going to visit his father in his cave.



\*\*\*\*

Michael landed Lydia carefully on the ground once they reached the Great Sea of Nile. He gave Lydia his daughter which she carried with care.

"I need to sought things out with my King, then I will be back to look for whoever it is that took my daughter's soul." Michael said.

"You know where to find me as usual Michael." Lydia said. "I will keep her safe until you return." She added.

"Thank you Lydia." Michael said and flew upwards, disappearing into the sky.

Lydia started taking Avonmora's limp body to where she will be safe, her hideout.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jorkallun make sure he reaches Sarah's home before leaving her.

"I and my father has to go for hunt today, I will come back later in the night, don't close the window." Jorkallun had told her before he peck her forehead and kissed her on her lips a little bit, changing into his dragon, he made himself smaller and flew away.

Sarah was smiling as she watches her dragon until he was out of sight, sighing in a contented way, she brought of the spare keys that is always with her in case she didn't meet the old woman, her grandmother, in the house.

Opening the door, she entered her house and closed the door behind her. Going to her room, she quickly took her bath and have a change of clothes before going down to the kitchen to cook something for her and her grandmother to eat.

It didn't take her long to prepare the meat broth soup. Taking her own share, she left the kitchen and walked to her room.

Opening the door, she had the buzzing sound as her magical mirror which serves as a connection between her and her mother, vibrated.

Going over to the table where the mirror is, she dropped her plate of food on the table before opening the mirror cover.

"Good day mother." Sarah greeted as she levitate her bed to come closer to her, which it did, she sat down on it and look back at the mirror, she saw her mother thinking eyes. "What is it mother? What are you thinking?" Sarah asked concerned.

"I will tell you that in a moment, is there any abnormal thing that has been going on in the Supernaturals?" Lydia asked.

"Not really." Sarah said. "Mother, I spied on the Priestess recently and find out she is working with a water being. A man appeared in their midst suddenly and I heard her lying, telling the man it was King Roen who had ordered for the massacre of the whole Mer-clan. Something doesn't seem right, why would she and the water being lied to this young man's face? I don't get it." Sarah said with a sign. "I and my Jorkallun has been searching for the man to tell him the whole truth before he makes a huge mistake in killing the Royal family that are innocent." She added.

"Did you happen to catch or hear his name?" Lydia asked.

"Yes mother, the priestess called him Tharollin." Sarah said and watches as her mother's eyes grew wide like a socket. "From your facial reactions, I think you know the man, who is he? Mother you have to tell me so that I can search for him." Sarah added.

"He is back." Lydia whispered.

"Who's back mother?"

"Tharollin, the fool who had opened the Gate of Darkness which cost the life of your aunt and her people." Lydia explained.

"He is the Demon King?" Sarah asked with wide eyes open.

"Yes my child, I didn't tell you who Rae's father is, right?" Lydia asked and Sarah nodded her head.

"You only told me about my aunt and her mate who opened the Gate and who is the Demon King." Sarah said. She had always bug her mother to tell her more about her cousin's father which she refuses.

"The man you said you saw, his name is Tharollin and he is Rae's father." Lydia revealed.

"This is a lot to take in, which means Rae is a half mermaid and a half Demon, right?" Sarah asked in smiles.

"Yes, and also she is partly angel." Lydia said.

"Angel? How do you mean by that mother?" Sarah asked confusedly.

"Avonmora's father is an Angel which makes your aunt a half mermaid and a half Angel. And Rae might also be an Angel." Lydia explain to her daughter.

"Wow, surprising. If she is partly angel, it means she is three in one like her boyfriend, Jason who is a Tribrid." Sarah said. "If Rae gets to know about her true identity, I wonder between her and Jason who will win if they asked them to fight." Sarah wonder in thought.

"Jason is a Wolf, Vampire and a Phoenix Sarah, and not to mention, he is the legendary Millennium Wolf." Lydia responded. "The one who commands all super-creatures."

\*\*\*\*\*

The water man sat down on his made look throne that was made with rocks.

He raised up his water hands and looked at them. He couldn't wait to feel his bones again. He had been in this water form since he was defeated, that was a long time ago.

If his son had given him back his bones, he will powerful and unstoppable.

A brief flash of light interrupted his thoughts. He waited until another flash of light appeared before it faded.

What did Hermes wants from him now?

The brief flash of light is Hermes own way of telling him to come.

Getting up to his feet, he didn't waste time to ponder why Hermes might be calling him, he disappeared immediately.

It was at that moment, Tharollin appeared in the cave his father stayed.

"Father!!!" Tharollin shouted. "Father!!!" Be shouted again.

No answer, only his echoes was heard.

Breathing in to feel the scent of the cave, tharollin noticed he was the only one In the cave.

Where has his father gone too? Tharollin thought as he went to sit on the made look throne. Has he gone to meet those who had taken his Mate body?

Looking around him as the minutes pass by as he waited for his father to appear wherever he went too.

Few minutes pass and when Tharollin realize his father wasn't coming back any sooner, he stood up to leave.

He bent down to clean the tiny dust that was in his boots, at that moment, his eyes landed on a Crystal stone beside the made look throne.

Tharollin saw something inside it. Picking it up as the crystal transparent stone shone a little bit, he realized it wasn't just something inside it as he had thought, it was a soul inside it.

A soul? Whose soul is this? Why would his father keep a soul inside a Crystal stone?

Tharollin thought as he held the crystal with his two hands, it felt as if he was holding something very precious to him. It felt familiar to him, he wondered why he suddenly felt attached to the soul inside of.

Looking at the crystal stone carefully now, he saw the soul thrashing inside the walls of the crystal, as if it wanted to come out...to..be...set...free. Tharollin place the crystal ball on the throne rock to look at it very well, and the soul that was thrashing itself, trying to come out, stopped moving immediately.

Strange?

Tharollin lifted the crystal stone up and was surprised when the soul which had stopped started thrashing itself against the wall of the crystal again.

One thing he hated about Crystal's is that they block whatever or whoever they held their scent.

This soul inside only seemed to move when he touched and not to mention, it felt very familiar to him, he wanted to protect it.

Whose soul is inside it that makes him wants to protect it?

Tharollin thought as he carefully kept the crystal stone inside the head of one of the skulls so that he won't lose it.

His father has a lot of questions to answer.

First was his Avonmora body disappearing and now this soul in the crystal stone he is sudden attached too.

He disappeared, going to Lillian's house.

He will visit his father again.

\*\*\*\*

Queen Rosa kept tossing in her bed, as disturbing images kept flashing through her mind.

✓✓✓✓

She saw herself hiding and running away from an already destroyed kingdom. Everyone in the kingdom were massacre.

She counted herself lucky that she was able to hide herself before she is killed alongside her people, her people, yes she was running away from her people.

She ran for her dear life and entered a cave, there she met a young lady who introduced herself as Tamara.

"I am Tamara and a witch, who are you and how do you find your way to my cave?" Tamara asked.

"I am Lika, a druid, I am running away from my kingdom that was destroyed by the Tribird beast." Lika said.

"A druid? You mean to say all druids are dead?" Tamara asked with surprise.

"Yes they are dead, my kingdom, has been destroyed, I am the only surviving Druid left. If I hadn't thought of my escape earlier on, I would have been dead with the rest of my kind." Lika said. "It is all my fault, everything that's happening now is all my fault, I shouldn't have done what I did."

"What did you do?" Tamara asked.

"I am sorry, I can't say it out." Lika said.

"It's okay, you don't have to tell me if you don't want to, I understand."

"Thank you Tamara." Lika thanked.

"You can stay here and make yourself feel at home until you are set to go your way."

Lika nodded her head appreciative of Tamara's hospitality.

Few days later.....

"So, are you now ready to tell me why you said it is your fault?" Tamara asked as they both were making magic potions together.

"Not yet Tamara, I will tell you when I have made peace within myself." Lika answered.

The water man appeared at that moment and Lika suddenly became alert. She looked at the water man, she hasn't seen anything like this before.

"Who are you and what are you doing here?" Lika asked, she was afraid if the water being had followed her here. Did he know what she did?

"He is my master Lika, show some respect." Tamara said.

"I am sorry, I thought you were after me." Lika apologize.

The water man ignored Lika as he focus on Tamara. "We have to stop the beast, he is now getting out of control. If you stop the beast, you will gain respect amongst your fellow witches and everyone." He said.

"I am working on something my Lord." Tamara said.

"If I was completely whole, the beast will be easy for me to defeat, but what can my water hands and body do?"

"Perhaps I can help." Lika said bringing their attention to them.

"You can help us kill the beast?" Tamara asked.

"Not really kill the beast, I can create something that can wipe off the beast memory of why he was angry in the first place." Lika said, it is the least she could do for now.

"Who is this your friend?"

"She is the only surviving Druids my Lord." Tamara answered

"You can do as you have said, Tamara keep me informed." The water said and vanished.

"Go on and start preparing what you said." Tamara said facing her, the potion they were making forgotten.

Few Hours Later....

Lika presented a white stone to Tamara. "This is it, the magic is inside, just point it at the person you wish to have his or her memory removed." Lika said as Tamara collected the stone from her. "Take note Tamara, it works only two times, after it is being used two times, the magic is gone from the stone. The beast is powerful, it can hold him for sometime, so you have to come up with something else to hold the beast." Lika added.

Tamara smiled and suddenly pointed the stone to Lika.

"What are you doing Tamara?"

"Testing it on you to see if it works." Tamara said and before Lika could protest or protect herself, the light from the stone shone and touched her forehead.

After a while the light faded.

"What's your name?" Tamara asked anxiously.

"I don't know my name, I can't remember my name, who are you?" Lika said.

"It worked." Tamara said happily. "My name is Tamara."

"Why do I suddenly forgot who I am all of a sudden?"

"You will remember who you are with time."

"Okay, so who am I to you then?"

Tamara laughed at that. "Your name is Rosa and you are my slave."

✓✓✓✓✓✓

Queen Rosa suddenly opened her eyes sitting up straight in her bed.

She remembered everything. Her past, who she was, everything was slowly coming to her.

She is a Druid, not just a druid, but the Druid who had broken the Soul Mate Connection.

## Chapter 43

'This life is what you make it. No matter what, you're going to mess up sometimes, it's a universal truth. But the good part is you get to decide how you're going to mess it up. Girls will be your friends - they'll act like it anyway. But just remember, some come, some go. The ones that stay with you through everything - they're your true best friends. Don't let go of them. Also remember, sisters make the best friends in the world. As for lovers, well, they'll come and go too. And baby, I hate to say it, most of them - actually pretty much all of them are going to break your heart, but you can't give up because if you give up, you'll never find your soulmate. You'll never find that half who makes you whole and that goes for everything. Just because you fail once, doesn't mean you're gonna fail at everything. Keep trying, hold on, and always, always, always believe in yourself, because if you don't, then who will, sweetie? So keep your head high, keep your chin up, and most importantly, keep smiling, because life's a beautiful thing and there's so much to smile about.'

♥♥♥♥ THAROLLIN AND RAE ♥♥♥♥

Steadying her breath, Queen Rosa slowly stood up from her bed and silent tears begin to fall from her eyes which she quickly clean. It has been long.

"Tamara, you have bitten more than you can chew." Rosa said softly as she touched her forehead, carrasing it slowly. "You think I will remain like this forever, well you thought wrong my dear friend, very wrong."

Now that she has remember who she is, everything has changed. She has to meet with Lillian and explain everything to her, e everything including her past life. Then they will find a way to stop Tamara before it gets worse. As far as she knows, only Tamara knows the whereabouts of the Tribrid whom she had broken the Vampire Soul connection with a thousands years ago.

Everything was her fault. She wanted to prove to everyone that you can choose whoever you want too and not depend on the soulmate thing. How can a lady wake up one morning and met a guy, staring into each other's eyes, they realize they are soulmates.

What if you are in love with someone else and you suddenly see a guy or lady who you will spend the rest of his or her life with, What will then happen to your old lover?

That was why when he came to meet her to break the bond between the Tribrid and his vampire mate, she didn't hesitate and did it without thinking of the consequences. To her, waiting for someone you've never since before or known, will just meet you and with just one look from you, you are tied to him or her forever, it doesn't work that way. And that was why she had done it.



A decision she now regrets. She shouldn't have agreed to his request. She didn't know cutting the bond will take the life of the beautiful vampire who did nothing to her. Her hands were stained with the blood of the vampire. She is so sorry but the deed has already been done.

She has learned her mistake and promised herself never to break the bond of any mate again. The gods knows why they choose them and she shouldn't have question the gods.

Now her kingdom has fallen probably forgotten since the Tribrid killed every single druids in her kingdom except her, and Tamara..... Tamara has the guts, the impetus to wipe off her memories and turn her into her slave after she made the memory wiper. She had helped her and the thank you she was supposed to say to her was this.

Tamara has been playing games with everyone in the kingdom, and she will pay her back in her own coin.

Tamara won't know what hit her. The priestess should get prepared because she is going to have a taste of her own bitter medicine.

But before she takes a step to give Tamara her punishments, Lillian has to be informed first, after she has confessed, then Tamara would regret the very first day she had shown her hospitality when she ran into her cave.

A cold smile was seen across Rosa's lips since she had recovered all her memories. The only thing she was grateful for was that she didn't tell Tamara what she did and who she truly is.

She is not just Queen Rosa of the Supernaturals, she is Princess Lika of the Druids kingdom, the fallen and forgotten kingdom.

\*\*\*\*

THE REALM OF THE GODS:

The water man appeared in Hermes room and could see the god entering his room at the same time.

"What is it Hermes, what sound so urgent?" The water man demanded immediately before Hermes could close the door.

"Keep your voice down, you don't want to alert the whole god's of your presence here." Hermes said as lowly as he could.

"Whatever, why did you call me, I have things that I was doing before I saw your flash of light."

"Well you know the gods are preparing to visit the earth." Hermes began.

"You have told me that before?" The water man said getting annoyed. "Don't tell me it is the reason you had called me here urgently, and I didn't waste my time coming to see you."

"It's not about that, it is about your son, Tharollin." Hermes finally revealed.

"And what about him? If he has caused any trouble towards you, it is none of my business." The water man said. "Deal with the situation yourself, you both are friends."

"I wish it was that but it isn't Lucifer. Tharollin came to meet the gods for answers." Hermes told him. "And he asked them who had ordered the killings of the entire Mer-clan." He added.

"Tharollin was here?" The water man asked, he was surprised.

"Yes, and you and I already know what the gods will answer." Hermes said.

"Thank you for giving me this information Hermes." The water man thanked.

"The pleasure is mine, I told you so you will know what lie to give your son once he asked you. And also if I may add, check on the Priestess, I guess he may have visited her to demand for answers." Hermes suggested.

"I will visit her right away Hermes and do keep me informed if the gods has fixed a date to visit the Earth, thanks once again for all your help." The water man said and disappeared.

\*\*\*\*

SARAH'S HOME:

"Jason is more powerful then." Sarah said after hearing what her mother said.

"I didn't say that." Lydia said.

"So you are saying Jason is not powerful as I thought?"

"I didn't say that either."

Sarah rolled her eyeballs at her mother when she suddenly remembered her conversation she had with her boyfriend.

"I think I might have a away to summon Rae's grandmother." Sarah said with a smile.

Lydia's eyes light up with joy. "You do?" She asked.

"Yes mother, my dragon boyfriend's father has given us the perfect solution." Sarah said with pride.

"So what solution did he give?" Lydia asked, she couldn't wait to see her sister after so many years.

"The only way to summon your sister, is if only one of her bloodline summons her." Sarah told her mother. "And you know what that means?"

"Her direct bloodline, Avonmora is not in the right position to summon her mother for us, which left only Rae." Lydia said and her eyebrows raised up. "Now I understand what you mean by that Sarai. If it is the only way, then you have to tell Rae the whole truth, who you are and who she is to you and also, your mission here." Lydia added.

"I will do that mother." Sarah said happy that her mother wants her to tell Rae the truth finally.

"Good, now speaking of your dragon, is he your soulmate? I mean, do you have a Soul Mate Connection with him before you expose your secrets to him?" Lydia suddenly ask.

"No mother, but my mermaid side feel attracted to him. But I will get to know if truly he is my soulmate during the coming full moon." Sarah answered. "You know I am half mermaid and a half Centaur, that is why I have to wait till full moon." Sarah added.

"And what if he isn't the one Sarai, what if he is not your destined mate?" Lydia throw her the question.

"I feel it, I feel a connection between his dragon and my inner soul mother, I just have to wait for the full moon to come fully to be sure I am not imagining things." Sarah replied back.

"What if when the full moon comes and you find out he isn't your soulmate Sarai, what will you do then?"

"Mother, the gods who pair I and Jorkallun from the beginning, did so for a reason. And I am grateful that dragon's get to choose their own soulmate." Sarah responded. "Are we going to talk about me and my dragon all day or about Tharollin?" She asked changing the topic.

"Yes, about Tharollin, I don't know his face I only know his name. You will have to tell the guardian Rae's stay with, perhaps, she could be of help since she and Avonmora were friends." Lydia suggested. "But how do you ask the witch without drawing suspicion to yourself." She added in thought.

"Speaking of the guardian, she knows about my secret so don't worry about that." Sarah said dismissively.

"How did she get to know about your disguise Sarai?"

"Well I visited Rae and she uses her magic to find out the truth, you didn't even told me that Lillian is a powerful witch and I should stay away from her path." Sarah said crossing her arms.

"As long as she won't tell another soul, then one of our problems has been solved. Talk to her and asked her to describe or better still show you the face of Tharollin with her magic." Lydia said.

"I will do exactly that mother, and believe me she won't tell a soul, even Rae didn't know I visited her house." Sarah said.

"Good by me, keep me posted my child. Talk to you soon." Lydia said and the mirror became normal. She couldn't tell her daughter yet about the unfreezing body of Avonmora by Michael, her father, and how they find out she has no soul in her.

Sarah quickly finished eating her food, leaving the empty plate on her table, she levitate her bed which she still sat on and placed it back where it normally stay.

Stretching herself on her bed. She hoped and prayed to the gods to make Jorkallun her forever soulmate when the full moon finally arrives.

She slept off dreaming of her and Jorkallun taking their vow as they perform the mating rituals.

\*\*\*\*

KINGDOM OF ANGELS:

Michael arrived at his kingdom, and entered his building and went to his room, opening the door, he met Gabriel inside his room.

"Where have you been since Michael?" Gabriel demanded once he saw his friend. He had searched everywhere for him but he couldn't find him. He tried to fill in his place so that King Aaron wouldn't suspect anything, everything could have been successful if not for one of the angels who had discovered the disappearance of Michael and report it to their King.

"I have been out Gabriel." Michael replied.

"You have been out? Out where? I searched everywhere for you but couldn't see you. Would you mind telling me where actually you went too since." Gabriel said.

"I went to Earth Gabriel." Michael finally revealed his whereabouts.

"You went down to earth? What for? Don't tell me you went to look for Selena?" Gabriel queried.

"I won't lie to you, what you said right now is partly true, I went down to earth to asked for her whereabouts and I found out I have a daughter Gabriel. A daughter I never knew I had with Selena." Michael told his friend.

"You have a daughter?" Gabriel asked to be sure.

"Yes, and she also gave birth to another daughter, which makes me a father and a grandfather." Michael revealed.

"What?" Gabriel eyes wide with shock.

"Yes, and I met with my daughter today. You need to see my lifeless daughter in my arms Gabriel, I should have protected her." Michael said.

"Does that mean she is dead?" Gabriel asked.

"She is not dead Gabriel, but will be if her soul isn't recovered."

"Meaning? What soul are you talking about?"

"Her mate opened the Gate of Darkness and they killed all the Mer-clans then froze my daughter. I released her and find out her soul has been removed, by who, that's what I am going to find out." Michael explained. "And my granddaughter is in danger." He added saying what Lydia had told him.

"You know the King won't be happy if he hears about this....what you just told me now.....he won't be happy, he knows of your disappearance, Eric told him."

"That is why I am here, I want to meet with King Aaron and tell him my situation I am in and I am leaving the kingdom down to earth to find my daughter's soul, protect my granddaughter and find Selena." Michael said.

"So that night you had felt something, was it from your daughter or granddaughter?" Gabriel asked.

"It was from my granddaughter, I protected her from something evil." Michael replied.

"Do you know what you are about to do Michael?" Gabriel asked with concerned.

"Yes I do Gabriel." Michael said going to his wardrobe, opened it and bring out some of his clothes. He packed them in a little magic bag which looks like a purse with lifeless wings on it. Once he was satisfied with the number of clothes he had packed, the bag closes by itself as the wings came to life, it flew around him.

Grabbing his sword, he made it much smaller and put it in the flying bag.

Breathing in a deep breath. "It's time to face the King."

Placing his hands on Micheal's shoulder in an assuring way. "Whenever you're in need of a helping hand, don't haste to call your friend." Gabriel said with a smile.

"Thank you for everything Gabriel." Michael said returning the smile with one of his own.

Telling him his goodbye, he went to the throne room and met King Aaron there.

"My King, I am here to ask for your permission to visit the earth and dwell in it." Michael said at first.

"Permission is not granted Michael, you are not going anywhere. You left this kingdom since yesterday and you just show up now to tell me this rubbish that makes sense to you, right?" King Aaron thundered in anger.

"My daughter soul needs to be found, my granddaughter who is still out there is in danger and you want me to leave all that and remain here?" Michael asked. "No, I am not going to repeat the same mistake I did thousands of years ago, because of some worthless position I had choose instead of the woman I love, the woman who gave birth to my daughter. I am going down to earth, and you cannot stop me this time Aaron. Whether my love for Selena is Forbidden or not, it won't stop me from loving her or leaving this kingdom to correct my past mistakes." Michael said breathing fast for talking too long.

"I see." Aaron said with a smile. "You think you can leave here just like that Michael the great? Get it into your head, Mermaids and angels can't get along, it is Forbidden. Let me see you try to leave this kingdom." Aaron said.

"You don't scare me Aaron. I am leaving for good."

Aaron clapped his hands and the door opened to reveal many angles with their swords drawn out.

"Like I told you, you can't leave here Michael." King Aaron said smiling.

"I know that I won't leave without a fight Aaron." Michael said facing the angels. "Must I always kill to prove my point, brother?"

\*\*\*\*\*

LILLIAN HOME:

"A man he was in a water form and he appeared just like the way the skull man had came out from blue. From their conversation I heard, my newest father to be, called the man his father and Lucifer." Rae said.

"Are you really sure you heard the name right?" Lillian asked.

"Sure granny, not that I am bragging but I can spell out the word Lucifer to you in case you didn't catch the name I mentioned." Rae said.

"This is totally unbelievable Rae." Lillian said afterwards. "First it was Tharollin coming back and now you heard him when he called the water being Lucifer." Lillian added.

"Yeah granny, I heard his name loud and clear." Rae said nodding her head.

"His bones was taken away from him a long time ago and you said you saw him in a water form. How did he even managed to stay alive without his bones?" Lillian said aloud in thoughts.

"Umm, I believe that question is not for me granny, you are asking the wrong person here."

Before Lillian could talk, Tharollin appeared in their midst.

His eyes settling in Rae's first before Lillian who spoke.

"You came back earlier than I thought."

"You didn't expect me to sleep on the way, do you?" Tharollin asked with a deep scowl on his face.

"Sorry." Lillian whispered.

"Why are you apologizing to the skull man granny?" Rae asked drawing the attention of Tharollin to her.

"You do know who you are talking to right?" Tharollin said giving Rae his full attention. This daughter of his has no single respect. "Haven't Lillian told you who I am to you?" He added with clenched teeth.

"As a matter of fact, my grandmother did, you are the big moron who had opened the Gate of Darkness." Rae responded with clenched teeth.

## Chapter 44

'He has achieved success who has lived well, laughed often, and loved much; Who has enjoyed the trust of pure women, the respect of intelligent men and the love of little children; Who has filled his niche and accomplished his task; Who has never lacked appreciation of Earth's beauty or failed to express it; Who has left the world better than he found it, Whether an improved poppy, a perfect poem, or a rescued soul; Who has always looked for the best in others and given them the best he had; Whose life was an inspiration; Whose memory a benediction. Life will break you. Nobody can protect you from that, and living alone won't either, for solitude will also break you with its yearning. You have to love. You have to feel. It is the reason you are here on earth. You are here to risk your heart. You are here to be swallowed up. And when it happens that you are broken, or betrayed, or left, or hurt, or death brushes near, let yourself sit by an apple tree and listen to the apples falling all around you in heaps, wasting their sweetness. Tell yourself you tasted as many as you could.'

♥♥♥♥ LOLLY AND DEAN ♥♥♥♥

Continuation from the last episode:

"Hey that was a mistake which I will never repeat again, I agree with you on this one, am a big moron." Tharollin said with a raised eyebrows, anger forgotten. The words surprised Rae and Lillian whose mouth was opened. Did she hear the devil's son well? Did he just called himself moron? Lillian thought.

"So you are admitting you did wrong by opening the Gate of Darkness skull man?" Rae asked, she thought the skull man, her father to be, would throw back insults on her and get angry when she had called him a big moron, but surprisingly enough, he did the opposite.

"Yes, I foolishly opened the Gate." Tharollin said. He has every right to be angry at his new found daughter with her rude words, but with what he had seen before when he had confronted her in the Mer-clan Kingdoms, his argument ceased in his throat. And now he knows she was his daughter, he wants to get on her good side.

"Even though you admitted your wrong, I won't forgive you skull man. My mother is frozen at the front of the Gate because of your selfish unexplained desire.... skull man." Rae said with a huff in the air.

"I know and I am ... sorry. I wasn't thinking by that time, if I had actually believed your mother, my soulmate, all these things wouldn't have happened. But it is now in the past and I will try to make it up to you and Avonmora, it is a promise." Tharollin said in honesty.

"You are still not forgiven." Rae said stubbornly, though she bear no grudges against the skull man, but you know her, since the man has escaped from the argument she has been preparing



for which wasn't forthcoming, so she decided to spice things up with her pretending anger at him.

What he did was wrong, but it is all in the past now. She wouldn't blame him when he didn't believe her mother of being pregnant with her because her grandmother had told her once that Demons hardly bear children.

They should be looking for a way to remove her mother from her frozen state.

"It won't be easy to forgive Rae but I can't change the past even if I want to." Tharollin said, he was truly sorry. "I know you hate the sight of me by now for what I did a thousand years ago, and for that, I am deeply sorry for all you might have been through. I should have listened to Avonmora when she told me about her pregnancy." Tharollin added. "But I paid deaf ears to it."

"Whatever skull man, when are you releasing my mother since you are the one who had put her in such a position in the first place?" Rae demanded pretending to be angry.

"That is why I am here." Tharollin said and move over to where Rae is. "I hope you can find it in your heart to forgive me one day Rae." He added with a genuine smile.

"I will try my possible best skull man." Rae responded immediately.

Well he will get used to the 'skull man', maybe one day, she will learn to call him father and not this nickname he hates.

He smiled at her nevertheless and said to her. "At least you are going to try, thank you." And faces Lillian. "We have to talk Witch and it is urgent."

"Rae you just come back from school a few hours ago and haven't gotten any rest, you are tired, why don't you go to your room and sleep while me and your father discuss." Lillian told Rae with a little warning eyes.

Rae stood up from her seat with a grumpy face, she wanted to hear what her 'father to be' has to say, a plan formed in her head. She started walking towards the stairs when the voice of Tharollin stopped her with his hands on her shoulder, making it the first he was touching her shoulder, she ignored the hand on her shoulder and focus more on the man and his voice.

"Rae can stay wherever she wants too Lillian, don't force my daughter on what to do." Tharollin said as he touched his daughter's shoulder. He hopes she did not say something rudely to him as his hands were on her shoulder. He is already tempted to give reply her rudely, but he couldn't. She was his daughter.

If he didn't find out in the time that they were father and daughter, Lillian house would have probably been razed down by their shouts.

"Besides, she will only pretend to give us some privacy only for her to eavesdrop on our conversation, so let her stay, I have no problem with that." Tharollin told Lillian.

Rae started to smile at her grandmother when the statement made by her father turned her emerging smile to a surprise one. How did he even know her plan? She had planned on giving them privacy and eavesdrop on them. His he a mind reader?. She voice out her thoughts.

"How did you know that is what I planned on doing?" Rae asked still surprised.

"I am your father Rae, the same blood runs in your veins, and I already know what you can do. When I was your age, I do eavesdrop on my father and whoever that is with him. Sometimes I stay in the ceiling, other times, by the door. So I know that is what you are about to do Rae. It runs in the blood." Tharollin said.

"You can sit down Rae." Lillian said and Rae didn't need to be told twice before she went back to her previous seat.

"Let me start with the gods I went to visit." Tharollin began. "First of all after threatening them, Zeus told me they never sent the orders for the Mer-clan to be killed, they are not even aware of it."

"You mean to say everything we've been told is a lie?" Lillian asked with surprise.

"Yeah, which has left me with a question of why? Why would Tamara lied and say it was the gods who had ordered her? What is her aim? The gods were speaking the truth after I threatened Zeus, believe it or not, your sister is up to something." Tharollin responded to her question.

"You mean to say you threatened the gods?" Rae asked before Lillian would talk. The skull man threatening the gods? That is unbelievable.

"Yeah." Tharollin reply. "And for the record, the gods became afraid of me when I told them everything will soon turn bloody if they didn't tell me the truth, which they did Rae." Tharollin said.

"Hmm." Rae muse to herself as she stared at her father. "In that case then, I will need you to follow me to school tomorrow and scare one or four people for me, especially the Amazon's warriors and their weakling leader of a girl who loves threatening me." Rae added.

"That would be no problem, I will follow you to your school, after all, you won't need to hide who you are anymore, I am here now so no harm will come to you, whoever that wants to get to you will have to pass through me." Tharollin said with seriousness.

"Really?" Rae said her eyes lighten up as the thought of the students expression if they see her with Tharollin and also realized he is her father . "I will like you to wea-" She was cut off by Lillian.

"I am still here Tharollin, we were discussing about something before Rae changed the topic." Lillian said looking at Rae as she interrupted her.. "And Rae will you keep quiet and allow your father and I to discuss." She added.

"Hey Witch, don't tell my daughter to keep quiet, she was giving a mouth to use and speak, so speak she shall." Tharollin said to Lillian before turning his gaze back to his daughter. "You were saying."

"I will like you to wear your skulls clothes when coming with me to school tomorrow." Rae said smiling at her grandmother.

"Oh, of course I will wear it." Tharollin said and bend his head down to whispered into his daughter's ear. "It's my trade mark, it makes people scared of me whenever they see the skulls."

"I want a more frightened skulls, so that they will scream." Rae said.

"And become scared." Tharollin added.

"And they will run and hide."

"And pee on their pants when they see my/ your scary darkness face." Father and daughter said the same time and burst out laughing.

"Honestly, I can't wait for tomorrow to come." Rae said after recovering from her laugh. "You can continue your discussion with grandmother." She said smiling.

Tharollin smiled at that, this is the first time his daughter, for the many hours they had spent, was smiling at him. He straightened his full height and faces Lillian, smile gone to be replaced by his famous scowl. "Let's continue from where we stop Lillian." Tharollin said. "Where were we in our discussion?" He asked.

"We were discussing about Tamara and why will she lie about the gods." Lillian reminded.

"Okay, since she is your sister, didn't you have any atom of her plans?" Tharollin demanded.

"No, at first, I did, because when she introduced Rosa as her cousin to us, I wanted to question and ask her why she lied by telling the council of the Kings and Queens that Rosa is her cousin, but you know my sister, everyone who is friends with her, is her cousin, so I kept quiet and didn't question her." Lillian said.

"I went to confront her and saw her with a young girl that is like my daughter's age mate, but what shocked me the most was when the young girl called Tamara her mother." Tharollin revealed what he heard.

"That is impossible, she is a priestess of the gods, she cannot have any sexually relations with anybody. That is the rule of being a Priestess." Lillian said in disbelief.

"I thought I was hallucinating when I heard it, but she still repeats the word 'mother' again when I held Tamara's throat." Tharollin said leaving out the fight he had with Tamara's daughter. "Your sister is hiding a lot of deep things from this kingdom I assure you Lillian." Tharollin added.

"I will confront her." Lillian said.

"And you think she will open up to you? This is Tamara we are talking about." Tharollin said. "In case you don't know, she and my father are up to something because why would they lie and say it was him, referring to Roen, who had ordered the killings of the whole Mer-clan." He added.

"So what are we going to do?" Lillian asked. Tharollin was right, it won't be that easy for her sister to open up her mouth and talk, even if you threatened her. Whoever that is backing her up has probably given her the courage that she needed, that is why she had used the gods name to carried out her plans.

"You remove whatever's hidden spell you had placed on my daughter and allow her to be her real self. Since everyone is looking for the last mermaid to sacrifice according to your priestess. Let me see them touch a single hair of my daughter, they will have me to contend with." Tharollin answered.

"What if I don't want to for now?" Rae said. "What if I still want to remain in this disguise for the time being?"

"Then no problem, it's alright for me. As long as you are happy staying in this disguise, I am happy too." Tharollin responded.

"Though the question that still bugs me is, why would she kill the Mer-clan and leave Avonmora frozen? I don't get it." Lillian said drawing Tharollin attention back to her.

"I am going to ask her when I visit her again, and speaking of Avonmora has brought the main reason for my coming here. Her body is no longer at the front of the Gate of Darkness, it is empty, she is not there again, someone has taken her body away from there." Tharollin revealed.

"What!?" Lillian and Rae said at the same time.

"Yes, she is no longer there. Whoever it is that took my Mate body might have unfrozen her or she is still frozen." Tharollin said to the quiet sitting room.

"Did you happen to catch any scent in there?" Lillian demanded. Who could have done that?

"Yes, a mermaid and an Angel, though I am not too sure of the second one because I see no reason why an Angel would come down from the sky they live to carry what does not belong to him or her." Tharollin said in anger.

A mermaid? Lillian thought. And her mind could only come up with Sarah since she said Avonmora is her aunt.

"So I went to confront my father if he was the one who had taken her body away from the Gate of Darkness, and he wasn't around. I was about to come here when I saw this." Tharollin said and brought out the crystal stone out from the skull head he had placed it in. "A soul is trapped in it." Tharollin added and gave the crystal stone to Lillian who held it with care.

She had seen this stone from somewhere before. She tried to recollect where it is as she stared at the still soul in the crystal stone

"It remains still in your hand but if I touch the stone, the soul in it will begin to move aggressively trying to set free." Tharollin said collecting the stone from Lillian. And to Lillian surprised the still soul started moving and thrashing itself on the inner walls of the crystal stone. Collecting it from Tharollin, the soul stopped moving immediately.

"Strange isn't it?" Tharollin said.

"Yes, strange." Lillian responded, cracking her brains to remember where she had seen this stone.

"Can I take a look at it grandmother." Rae voice brought her out of thinking.

"No, what do you want to see in it." Lillian said as she stretches out her hand with the stone to give it to Tharollin.

"You heard my daughter Lillian, give the stone to her for heye to see." Tharollin said and Rae smiled.

Lillian then gave the stone to Rae who collected and was surprised when she saw the soul started moving once again on Rae's hand.

It felt like when she had touched her mother's cheek and the icy had melted on her touched only for them to return once she removed her hand.

It felt exactly the same way. This soul inside the crystal stone, is her mother.

"The soul in it belongs to my mother skull man." Rae said drawing loud gasps from Lillian and Tharollin who looked shocked.

\*\*\*\*

VAMPIRE KINGDOM:

Dean who couldn't sleep at all since he couldn't wait for tomorrow to come so he would begin his search, decided to visit his friend whom he hasn't seen for a long time.

Using his vampire speed, he ran towards his friends house.

Arriving, he stared at the magnificent house, nothing has changed since the last time he visited. The house was still as big and beautiful as it was.

Knocking on the door, her father, King Alf, opened the door, his face hard but changed when he saw who knocked. Dean greeted the muscular man.

"Come in son." King Alf said and widen the door open for Dean to enter, which he did. "How is your parents?"

"They are fine sire, thank you." Dean said to the man.

"It's been long you've paid your friend a visit since you heard of her engagement."

"I am sorry for that sire, I was busy with the kingdom affairs." Dean lied, he wasn't busy with the kingdom affairs, he has forgotten about his friend. "Where is she sire?"

"In her room probably." King Alf answered. "Go and check on her."

Saying his thanks, Dean quickly climbed the stairs and went to her room and knocked. He knew everywhere around the house like the back of this hand.

"The door is open, you can come in." A family voice was heard behind the closed door.

Opening the door, he let himself in and saw his friend glaring at him sitting on her bed.

"Hello... Lolly, long time."

"Dean." Lolly said. "You remembered your friend today."

"I am sorry Lolly, it won't happen again, I promise." Dean said.

"You better keep up to your promise, come sit down here." Lolly said and Dean went to sit down on her bed.

"How is school and everything?"

"School is fine, thank you." Lolly answered. "Spit it out, I know you didn't come all the way here to ask about my school."

"I am in a mess." Dean finally said after some minutes has passed by.

"What kind of mess are you in?"

"Am in love with a girl, but she doesn't love me back." Dean said.

"Why wouldn't she love you? You are handsome, a good looking guy, so I am wondering why wouldn't she love you back."

"I don't know, she has a mate but it's still want her." Dean said. "I want to make her mine."

"Who is the girl?"

"Her name is Rae." Dean replied.

"Rae? As in Rae Fey, Lillian's granddaughter?" Lolly asked with shocked.

"Yes, she is the one. I love her from the bottom of my heart, but she loves Jason. I would do anything to separate them." Dean said with seriousness.

Lolly smiled. Dean and Rae, Jason and Lolly, they fitted together, this is her chance, she will have to convince him to be on her side. She wouldn't kill Rae as planned.

So Jason and Rae are soulmates?

"What do you intend to do?" Lolly asked.

"Find someone who could break the Soul Mate Connection they have, Rae will be free and she will become mine once it is broken, I have been assured of it." Dean said.

"I can help you achieve that, if you will help me in return." Lolly said. "I also need Jason all to myself."

"You can have Jason, and I will have Rae."

"Good, about the Soul Mate connection, breaking it will be easy."

"You mean you can break the Soulmate connection?"

"Not me, My mother might have an idea of who can help you break the bond."

"Your mother is dead Lolly."

"Swear on the dead man blood that you won't reveal whatever I am going to tell you now."

"I swear by it, I won't tell any soul." Dean said knowing the consequences of swearing with the dead man's blood.

"I am not Lolly, the one you know who is your friend, is dead and gone, I reside in her body." Lolly said and watches the shocked look on Dean's face. "You promised that you won't revealed it."

"It's not true." Dean said in disbelief.

"It's true, I took her body and saw all her old lovely memories, that's why I know you. I have a mother and a father, the Amazon King is not my father." Lolly answered and allowed one of her hands to changed into her beast hand. Dean was speechless, she was speaking the truth. "Do you now believe me?"

"Yes, I do believe you now. But why are you telling me?"

"Because I want to take you to meet my mother who might help you."

"Okay. When are we going?" Dean asked.

"Now." Lolly responded.

Before Dean will say another word, he found himself in a cave, staring at their priestess. He was standing next to Lolly.

"Why did you bring an outsider here Lolly?" Tamara asked her daughter with a tight voice.

"Relax mother, he is on our side." Lolly said.

"The priestess is your mother?" Dean asked, he was surprised by this revelation.

"Yes, and remember you made a promise." Lolly answered him and proceed by telling Tamara everything she and Dean had discussed.



"You want to break the Soul Mate Connection Rae had with Jason?" Tamara asked.

"Yes my priestess, but my father once told me about the druid who broke the mate bond between the Tribird and his mate."

"Yes, and the druid was killed alongside with the rest of the Druids." Tamara said.

"There was a first Tribird?" It was Lolly asking surprised.

"Yes my daughter, but that will be a story for another day." Tamara reply.

"Is there no other person who could help me as the Druid is no longer alive." Dean said.

"I think there is someone who can break it, but we have to ask him first." Tamara revealed.

"And who can that be mother?" Lolly demanded.

"Who else if not your father Lolly."

## Chapter 45

'Life will break you. Nobody can protect you from that, and living alone won't either, for solitude will also break you with its yearning. You have to love. You have to feel. It is the reason you are here on earth. You are here to risk your heart. You are here to be swallowed up. And when it happens that you are broken, or betrayed, or left, or hurt, or death brushes near, let yourself sit by an apple tree and listen to the apples falling all around you in heaps, wasting their sweetness. Tell yourself you tasted as many as you could. Sometimes people are beautiful. Not in looks. Not in what they say. Just in what they are. Do not let your fire go out, spark by irreplaceable spark in the hopeless swamps of the not-quite, the not-yet, and the not-at-all. Do not let the hero in your soul perish in lonely frustration for the life you deserved and have never been able to reach. The world you desire can be won. It exists.. it is real.. it is possible.. it's yours.'

### ♥♥♥♥ MEETING LOLLY'S FATHER ♥♥♥♥

"I told you we are not telling father anything for now." Lolly reply.

"Lolly my daughter, your father is the only way right now." Tamara said and moved closer to meet her daughter. "Don't you want Jason again? Don't you want him to be yours? Don't you want to wake up by his side everyday of your life? And finally, don't you want to become the Queen of the whole Supernaturals? Don't you want all that Lolly? Trust me on this my daughter, we need to tell your father." Tamara told her daughter.

"Your mother is right Lolly, whoever your father is, needs to know the situation you are in and he will help us out, you will have Jason all to yourself forever and I will have Rae all to myself. Don't you want forever? Because I want it, and it's with Rae." Dean said touching Lolly's shoulders.

Lolly In deep thought, leaving their midst, her back turned to them.

"Fine, I want everything mother, I want everyone to be under me, to obey my command with Jason right beside me." Lolly finally said killing the tension around them.

Tamara smiled. "That is what I had always wanted to hear you say Lolly." She added still smiling. It has been long she has heard or seen Lolly's father. She only goes when he calls her.

Lolly turned and smiled back at her and faces Dean. "It's a long journey to reach where my father is. Have you make up your mind to support me and not back out at the long run?" Lolly said with a hard look.

"I have crossed my heart since, there is no turning back now." Dean replied.

"Good, because if you betray us, I will personally kill you and eat you myself." Lolly said with a charming smile.

"I am not a betrayer Lolly, I keep my words." Dean said back.

Lolly nodded her head and raised her two hands in the air, a portal made with fire which opened appeared above her head where her hands are, it has sharp teeth which was made with fire. Bringing down her hands. She faces her mother.

"It's time, I will go first." Lolly said and jumped higher into the portal which swallowed her body quickly, the portal teeth closes as soon as she had disappeared and reopened again.

"Scared Dean?" Tamara asked staring at the vampire Prince as she taunt him.

"No ma'am, I can go through fire for Rae, this is nothing compared to the love I have for her." Dean answered and walked towards where Lolly had stood and jumped higher like the way he saw Lolly did a few moments ago.

Swallowing his body, the portal reopened it's mouth and Tamara didn't waste time in jumping higher.

As soon as it has swallowed Tamara, it disappeared leaving the cave empty.

10 Minutes Later.....

The water being appeared in the cave but couldn't find Tamara as he had expected. He couldn't feel anyone or hear a sound. The cave was quiet, too quiet.

Where could have Tamara went too? The water man thought as he looked everywhere with caution in case he had missed something.

He hoped he did not come too late to stop the fight between his son and Tamara.

But looking at the cave, it appears no fight ever happened.

He waited for a few minutes more before he disappeared back to his cave.

\*\*\*\*

"You mean to say, the soul in there belongs to your mother?" Tharollin demanded. He was shocked.

"Yes skull man, it is." Rae replied.

"How do you know the soul belongs to Avonmora?" Tharollin demanded again.

"That's because it has the same feelings I felt when I saw my frozen mother and touched her cheeks. Believe it or not, but this is my mother's soul." Rae answered her father.

Lillian gasps out loudly drawing the two attention to her. She now remember where she had seen the crystal stone.

"What is it Lillian?" Tharollin asked.

"Your daughter is right Tharollin, that's Avonmora's soul trapped inside it." Lillian finally revealed the reason for her loud gasps.

"Why do you say so Lillian?" Tharollin demanded.

"Because on the day the Mer-clans were killed, I remember vividly when Tamara brought out this very stone and put Avonmora's soul in it before freezing her. According to her, the gods requested for her soul." Lillian explained. "But if the soul was to be given to the gods, why then is it with Lucifer?" She added.

"Obviously, that was a lie, the gods didn't ordered for the killings of the Mer-clans, neither did they requested for Avonmora's soul, it was a lie all along and you all foolishly brought it. I am going to kill her once I see her, she won't be spared Lillian." Tharollin said in anger. "But before I do that, I will first visit my father to know why he had the soul and why he lied against the King (Roen)." Tharollin added and began transforming into his dark smoke.

"Hey skull man, don't forget you are following me to school tomorrow to scare some frightened students." Rae said watching with fascinating eyes as her father's body quickly dissolve to the dark smoke.

"I won't forget, I will see you in school tomorrow Rae." Tharollin and the smoke consume him entirely dissolving.

"Wow, will I ever be able to do that grandma?" Rae asked immediately. "You know turn into a smoke like he did?"

"Yes since you carry half of his blood, you will have to tell him to teach you how to do that." Lillian replied her before crossing her arms. "So young lady, are you now going to sleep or do you want me to carry you to your bed cause I will gladly do so." Lillian said and Rae quickly stood up from her seat.

"I am going to my room now granny, thanks for your offer." Rae said and ran out of the sitting room, climbing the stairs and going towards her room.

\*\*\*\*\*

Queen Rosa heard a knock on her door. "Who is that?"

"It's me, Jason." The voice reply back.

Using her magic to silently unlock the door lock, "Open the door son, it's unlock." Queen Rosa said.

Jason entered and closes the door behind him. He went over to meet his mother, hugging her.

"Good afternoon mother." Jason greeted as his mother kissed both his cheeks tenderly.

"Afternoon son, how is school today?" Queen Rosa asked her son.

"Good mother, where is father? He is not in the palace." Jason asked.

"He has gone to get your cousins with his brother and wife. They're coming for the Wolf festival that will commerce in a few days time." Queen Rosa replied.

"Okay, I didn't see you in the garden then my little friend came and after he left, I came here straight away." Jason replied.

"Okay." Queen Rosa said smiling at her son. She went back to her bed and sat down. She tried to put her mind in her conversation she is having with her son but couldn't. She had broken the bond between the first Tribid and his vampire mate. Now she has a Tribid as her son.

Are the gods trying to tell her something she doesn't know? Is this fate? What if history repeats itself? She will try everything within her powers to prevent whatever that will befall her son. She made a mistake years ago and she is sorry for that.

How could she tell Roen and her son that they had been living in a lie. What if, Tamara break up the spell she had used on Roen which made him believe they were mates. Would Roen still love her or hate her? Will her son still want her after all the lies?

Now that she remembered who she is, damn Tamara's spell. She will tell Roen and her son the truth, whatever are the consequence, she will gladly accept it.

But... She has to visit Lillian and confesses everything to her, probably the Queen of all the witches might have a way of pleading with Roen to forgive her.

She loves Roen with all her heart and couldn't bear to see herself living without him. She loves her son and hope they forgive her.

Jason saw the uneasiness in his mother's body he couldn't help but get worried.

"Mother, what's wrong?" Jason asked going to sit on the bed.

"Nothing my son, I just recalled my past." Queen Rosa said sadly.

She will finally die if her son turns his back on her when he eventually hear the truth.

"Are you still remembering your past mother? If it is what is making you sad, please stop thinking about it." Jason said. He knows about his mother's past. How she was Tamara's slave until she introduced Rosa to Roen as the gods had prophecy about her giving birth to the Tribrid. Tamara had always rubbed it on his face ever since he was young until he became of age and warned her. It was one of the main reasons he hates that stupid priestess.

"I am afraid of what the future may bring if my past resurface again son. What if you don't love me like the way you do now? What if you hate my guts and hate me?" Queen Rosa said as her voice cracked in tears. "What if you wake up one day and discovered you have been living under a lie, what if your father hates me as time goes on?" Queen Rosa said allowing the tears to flow freely from her eyes.

"Mother, it hurts me to see you cry. Believe me when I say there is nothing on Earth that can make me hate you. And even if tomorrow I found out you are the devil's daughter, that won't change the love I have for you." Jason said as he cuddles his mother, cleaning her tears.

"Thank you my son. You've lifted up my soul by these words, your love means a whole lot to me." Queen Rosa said.

"I will always love you mother and nothing can change that, always remember that."

Rosa smiled.

\*\*\*\*

KINGDOM OF ANGELS:

"You mustn't kill anyone Michael, just do what I just said. Go back to your room and forget about the mermaid." King Aaron said as he went to meet Michael. "Who told you that these Mermaid of yours would even wait for you after all these years that went by?"

"I know that she will wait for me, I was foolish then, but I am not any more. You must not use your position to control me every single time. We are brothers for crying out loud, why can't you for once since you were crowned the King, support me like a brother would do. Everytime, Micheal do this..... Micheal do that, I am tired of being your puppet. You used the second in command position to make me deny Selena and you want to use your armies to stop me from seeking out my granddaughter and helping my daughter and finding my lover? It won't work this time Aaron." Micheal said and faces the angels blocking the door. "If you know you don't want to

die, step aside or face my wrath." Michael added no angel moved, he won't feel guilty for their deaths.

"Kill him." Aaron voice sounded behind his back as the angels that are more than 200 ran towards him.

The Angel throne room was very large that it will fit more than 1,000 people in there.

"Fighting is what I love doing." Michael said and ran to meet them. The magic bag open and his sword entered his hand. Swinging his sword to one side, electric light came out of the sword and touched about 20 angels.

2 Minutes Later....

Micheal turned to face his brother Aaron who wasn't surprised by how quickly his brother was done in killing the angels in the throne room, they took after their late father after all

"Stay of my lane brother." Micheal warned before running out of the throne room. His wings came out from his back and he flew down to earth.

This isn't over Micheal, Aaron thought as he clapped his hands and some angels came to clear the bloody floor.

As long as he lives, Selena can never be yours.

Aaron thought.

She met him first but choose to ignore his advancing and fall in love with his younger brother instead.

"I will be an obstacle to your love Micheal." Aaron said lowly with a cruel smile.

\*\*\*\*

The portal of fire opened and Tamara saw Dean and Lolly ahead of her. She quickened her steps to meet with her daughter.

They walked for a long time and in silence as everyone was in their own thoughts.

Finally Lolly stopped in front of a path that was covered with overgrown bushes and trees.

She bent down to pick a sand under her feet, she throws it on the air and the bushes and trees give way to as the ground beneath the bushes opened up, staircase begin to form.

"Let's go in." Lolly said going down the staircase. Dean followed before Tamara. The ground closed over their heads and they were covered in darkness.

No need of light because they could see clearly.

The stair leads them to a room, which was filled with lit candles in all corners, lighting up the room.

In the room Dean saw a man who was sitting down and reading a book, everywhere in the room was filled with books. Looking at him, Dean knows the man in front of them was a Hellhound creature.

His hair was green and long, it was plaited in cornrows. And his ears looked pointed and sharp, an elf perhaps. He was muscular as you could see it since he was not wearing a shirt. And, he was the most handsome young man Dean had ever encountered, though he knows this man in front of him is very old. Between him and Jason, he didn't know who will win the most handsome if they contest, including Jorkallun.

"What is it Lolly dear?" The green haired man asked still not taking his eyes from the book.

"Something is eating me up father and I really need your help." Lolly replied.

The statement made the green haired man to close his book and look at his daughter fully. Dean noticed his eyes color, they were mixed in green and purple.

"Come here my child." He said softly as Lolly quickly went to meet her father. He stood up and Lolly sat on his chair. "Tell me what troubles you my precious daughter."

"Am in love with someone father, and he is about to be taken away from me." Lolly said with teary voice.

"And who wants to take him away from you?"

"Her name is Rae Fey." Lolly supplies. "She has a mate connection with my man and I am here to know if you have any ideas on how to break the Soul Mate connection they have. My friend here want Rae and I want Jason." Lolly added.

"I can do that." The green haired man said. "I can do anything for you my child even if it means breaking the bond of a soulmate for you, I can do that." The green haired man said.

"But how do you intend to do it father?" Lolly asked in shock.



"Yes sire please don't get offended by my question, how can you break off a soulmate bond?" Dean asked. "I was told that the only person who could do it was a druid who died when the first Tribrid mate was killed."

The green haired man was silent for a long time that Dean was scared if his question had angered the man. He was about to open his mouth to say sorry when the man spoke.

"I am the Tribird in the story you were told." The green haired man said finally, he was going to ask Tamara later on what Dean had meant 'The first', he was the only Tribrid and will ever be. "But....the druid who had killed my mate is not dead yet, I know her face and will find her wherever she hid and end her life. She has forgotten that I am an elf. I heard the words she had used and know who she is, so she isn't dead, she is still alive and out there." He said.

Lolly eyes showed shock which he saw.

"I told your mother never to reveal it to anyone. I was already mad, living in madness and killing every soulmate until your mother brought back my sanity and I grow to love her." The green haired man said and turned to face Dean. "My name is Taloc." He introduced himself.

"I am Dean, the Prince of Vampires." Dean also introduced himself to him.

"So father, when will you break the bond between my lover and the girl, I want Jason right away." Lolly said.

"You have to get me their blood first and leave the rest to me." Taloc replied his daughter.

"If you succeed in breaking up their bond, won't Jason still remembers her?" Lolly asked, that was her greatest fear.

"Leave that to me." Tamara spoke for the first time she was in there. "I have something that will wipe off all his whole memories of Rae." She said referring to the white stone which she had used on Lika.

The druid lady had said the stone was to be used twice. She had used it once on the Druid lady, so it still remains the last one.

They will use that memory wiper to wipe Jason's memories of Rae.

## Chapter 46

'Promise Yourself:

To be so strong that nothing can disturb your peace of mind. To talk health, happiness, and prosperity to every person you meet. To make all your friends feel that there is something in them To look at the sunny side of everything and make your optimism come true. To think only the best, to work only for the best, and to expect only the best. To be just as enthusiastic about the success of others as you are about your own. To forget the mistakes of the past and press on to the greater achievements of the future. To wear a cheerful countenance at all times and give every living creature you meet a smile. To give so much time to the improvement of yourself that you have no time to criticize others. To be too large for worry, too noble for anger, too strong for fear, and too happy to permit the presence of trouble. To think well of yourself and proclaim this fact to the world, not in loud words but great deeds. To live in faith that the whole world is on your side so long as you are true to the best that is in you.'

♥♥♥♥ Darkness and Light ♥♥♥♥

Continuation from the last Episode:

"You think that memory wiper you spoke of will work on Jason?" Lolly asked.

"Yes, it will work on him." Tamara answered assuring her daughter.

"Whether you make Jason forget his memories or not, it won't stop me from making my daughter happy." Taloc announced facing Tamara as he said that.

"Like your father said Lolly, we have to bring the blood of my Rae and Jason to him so that he can use it to break the bond that binds them together." Dean said. "After that, we can now think of wiping out their memories from them, let's do one before jumping into another one." He added.

"You're right Dean." Lolly whispered.

"Is that all my child?" Taloc asked facing his daughter.

"Yes father, that's all for now." Lolly answered.

"Consider it done, I just need their blood and this Jason will be all yours forever." Taloc said standing up to his full height. "I have spent all my years in reading different kinds of books so I know the exact spell to use on him to make him see you as the Mate and not the other girl."

"Thank you father, I know I can trust you." Lolly said happily.

Taloc smiled at Lolly before facing Tamara. "Are you now with the Lucifer bones?" He asked.

"Not yet, I am still searching for it, his son hides it so well that I cannot find it." Tamara answered.

"I see." Taloc muse. "Then I will pay him a visit." He added as he stepped out of the table and approach Tamara stopping in her front. "I need the bones and you keep it will complete me to finally be human once again."

Dean noticed a few things, first the green haired man legs weren't human, it was in a beast form, his shorts didn't cover him well, it showed his claws legs. Which make Taloc to be half human and half beast from the waist down. But it was quickly gone. His claws legs became human legs and Dean wondered if something was wrong with his eyes.

"I feel that you are not telling me everything Tamara." Taloc said. "Do I need to find out from my daughter or are you going to tell me?" He added.

"Lucifer son engage Lolly and I in a fight, but he was too strong for the both of us to handle, so he beat up Lolly and I and almost killed me." Tamara finally revealed.

The echo of slap that sounded made Dean to touched his cheek to check if it was him that was slapped. But he felt no hurtful string in his cheeks which shows it wasn't him that was slapped but..... Tamara by the man.

Tamara was expecting the slap so she had embraced herself before telling Taloc the truth. This is one of the reasons she was afraid of her daughter.

"You allowed him to hurt my daughter!?" Taloc shouted in anger as he raised his hand up to slap Tamara again.

"Father, mother couldn't do anything at that moment, besides the man was too powerful for me to handle." Lolly said stopping her father descending hand.

"Powerful you say dear one? No one is as powerful as me even if it is Lucifer's son himself." Taloc boasted as he turns around to face his beloved daughter, he was truly strong, invincible, and he knows it.

"I know that stupid fool who claims to be Lucifer son will be no match for you." Lolly said with pride.

Taloc smiled and clapped his hands together. A door in black appeared in beside Lolly.

"Go and rest now my dear." Taloc said sweetly to her.

"Thank you father." Lolly said and yawned out in tiredness as she gets up from the seat. "As if you know I really need a sleep right now father." She said as she entered the door and it closes behind her before disappearing.

Taloc clapped his hands again another door in red appeared next to Dean.

"You too should rest. I need to speak to Tamara in private." Taloc said and Dean nodded his head and entered the door without an argument. He trusted them enough and know they wouldn't hurt him.

Once the door disappeared. Facing Tamara once again. Tamara moved back in fear as he approached her. It wasn't until her back hit the wall that's when she knew she was trapped. He got to her and raised his hand and Tamara closed her eyes expecting another slap, but she was shocked when she felt his hand caressing where he had slapped with tender and love.

"I am sorry I slap you." Taloc said kissing the side of her cheek. "I will never hurt you Tamara, I am sorry if you were hurt. I will try to keep my anger in check when it comes to you and my daughter."

Leaning in to his touch. "It's okay Taloc."

"I have missed you so much." Taloc said.

"Is that why you sent your daughter and him away to have some quality time with me?" Tamara teased him.

"Yes, it is now a wrong thing if I want to spend some time alone with my Mate." Taloc said.

Tamara smiled at that. If she hasn't thought of going after the ravaging beast who has been killing people years ago, she wouldn't have known he was her soulmate. That was how she had tamed the beast. He couldn't kill her, his second chance Soulmate.

His first mate was killed and he was given a second soul mate which was her.

Why wouldn't Taloc be giving a second Soulmate? She has no answer to that. But she was glad she was able to convince the entire Supernaturals that she had defeated the beast, senseless people.

"I want you so bad Tamara, right now." Taloc voice broke through her thoughts.

"You can have me Taloc, I am all yours." Tamara told him licking his jaw.

**\*\*WARNING SEX SCENE AHEAD\*\***

He groaned almost growled and slammed his lips onto hers. Tamara moaned and like his actions and wrap one of her hands around his neck and the other one caressing his muscular chest.

His hands traveled from her hips down to her thighs. He lifted her up onto his hips and pressed he back against the wall. Tearing off her long dress from her waist down, her panties were getting soaked in her wetness. Her wetness press against his hardness and he hissed. He kissed and nibbled at her bottom lip working his way to her earlobe. Tamara was breathing hard, it sounded like music to his ears. He sucked at the skin behind her ear making it tender, trailing kisses down her neck mouthing her breast through her clothes.

"Fuck." Tamara hummed at his actions.

He kissed her roughly grabbing her ass and thigh. He gave it a good smack and she moaned at the contact. A thin line of sweat fell from his caramel skin. He carried her to his table and put her on it, she laid her back on it.

He attacked her neck again kissing and biting. He tore off what remains of her clothes and unlatched her bra pulling it from her. He pinched a nipple between his fingers and latched onto the other with his mouth. Tamara threw her head back, arching into his mouth. He switched breasts, sucking the other and pinching the now wet one.

"Taloc." Tamara cried yearning for her womanhood to be touched, for some type of friction.

"Say my name." He groaned, trailing his hands down to her hips. He was teasing her.

"Taloc!" She rolled her hips, begging. "Please, touch me." She moaned against his lips kissing him as he returned the kissed more roughly.

He tore off the shorts he was wearing with inhuman strength, his huge d\*\*k dripping with precum. By her thighs he held her, opening her legs wider for him to get in between. He slid his tip against her p\*\*y, making her quiver in anticipation. Catching her by surprise, he slammed into her wet P\*\*y and she screams out in pain. He thrust into her rapidly into her wet cunt. He pounded into her like a raged bull with inhuman speed.

She closed her eyes moaning deeply as she met his thrusts with hers f\*\*king herself on his huge d\*\*k.

"Look at me Tamara, I want see your eyes." His voice was deep and gruff. "Look at me." He commanded, she forces her eyes open to look at him, moaning and groaning.

"Yes, Taloc." She whimpered, looking into his green/purple mixture eyes. She struggled to keep her breathing under control as she drew close to her climaxing. He began going faster than

before, thrusting harder, groaning and moaning pushing deeper into her. He pulled out then slammed back with force.

She clasped her eyes shut, her walls clenched and she came. He thrust into her as he came close to climaxing himself. A couple more thrusts as her p\*\*\*y began to tighten and he bust. He pulled out of her sexually satisfied.

(E don finish oooo 🙄🙄🙄🙄🙄)

\*\*\*\*\*

It was morning when Micheal landed at the place he left Lydia, his wings entered his back and he went off towards a direction. He arrived at a huge cave which he remembers vividly that belongs to Selena. The water in it was gone, dried up. Lydia came out of the cave mouth and motion for Michael to come with her.

"Give us some light." Lydia said once Michael had reached her side. As long as he is here, she will make him work for her for betraying her sister. His wings came out from his back and shone brightly, lighten up the inner dark cave and Lydia could see ahead of her. "Good, follow me." She added.

Entering the cave, Michael remembered his memories with Selena, how she had healed his wounds and saved him and how they had fallen in love, if only he could change the past.

"Why are the waters not here again?" Michael asked as he saw the deep hole that was usually filled with water, that was where Selena's live, where she had healed him under water. Now they are passing it and going further into the cave.

"The water dried up immediately she left this place." Lydia answered him.

"Where are we going?" Michael asked as they have been walking for the past 10 minutes nonstop.

"Where else would I be taking you to if not to see where your daughter is." Lydia replied. She could have taken the shortcut that leads them to Avonmora, but no, she is punishing Michael, she purposely took this route. She was already used to the long distance.

"Can't I just fly us both to where my daughter is?" Michael suggested.

"Nop." Lydia said immediately. "I don't want to fly for now, the one I did with you still makes me have nausea." She added.

"Okay if you say so." Michael said with shrugs shoulders. "But is the distance still far from here?"

"Nope we are almost there, haven't Selena ever took you down here before?" Lydia asked.

"No, she didn't." Michael answered.

"Well I am taking you there now, it's one of her hiding spot which has become mine ever since you betrayed her and she was banished because of you." Lydia said, she will always make Michael feels guilty for what he did to her sister.

"I am sorry Lydia, I was foolish and listened to my King instead of love."

"Save your sorry for the right one." Lydia said and she stopped at a door. Knocking on it three times in a rhythm, it opened and they entered another cave, bigger and a single candle lightened up the cave.

Michael saw his daughter was on a bed in the middle of the room. He quickly went to meet her still her body. Touching and stroking her hair lovely.

"Don't worry my daughter, I will find whoever it is that holds your soul and return it back to its rightful place." Michael said and kissed her forehead.

"How are we going to get her soul? Who took her soul?" Lydia asked no one as she pacing around the cave. "Selena would have known what is going on and will still keep quiet."

"I will go back to where I saw my daughter frozen body, perhaps, I might get a clue." Michael said. "Thank you Lydia for all your help." Michael thanked.

"Selena would have done the same if reverse was the case, not to mention my other five sisters." Lydia responded.

"I will be on my way now." Michael said preparing to fly away.

"Let me escort you back." Lydia said which prompted Micheal to stop.

Not another long walk again. Michael thought.

"Don't you have something else you are doing?"

"I have nothing else I am doing here." Lydia added sweetly. "Let's go now."

\*\*\*\*\*

Tharollin appeared at the cave his father reside, and smile when he saw him.

"I thought we saw not too long ago, the Mer-clan kingdom to be precise, why are you here son?" The water man asked pretending not to know why his son was there.

"I came here to know the truth father." Tharollin answer his question.

"What truth son?"

"Don't play pretend card on me father, I know you far too well. I only have three questions to ask you and I deserve an honest answers." Tharollin said.

"What are your three questions son?" The water being demanded.

"One, why did you and Tamara lied to me and said it was Roen who had killed the Mer-clan, when you know it's you and the stupid priestess who had killed them? Two, why did you and Tamara also lied to my face when I asked you of my remaining Demons?" Tharollin asked.

"Your first question, I don't know where you got such assumption from, but I can tell you they are lies. The gods had ordered the killings of the Mer-clan, and even if the gods are here, I will still say it to their faces." The water Man replied. "And to your second question, I don't know what happened to your demons but you have to ask Tamara where she kept your demons." He added.

Tharollin laughed at his lies.

"You haven't asked me your third question son."

"My third question will have an answer to my two previous questions." Tharollin said and brought out the crystal stone and showed it to his father.

So he was here when he went to answer Hermes call. The water thought and he hoped Tharollin didn't know whose soul is in there yet.

"I saw this here when I first drop by." Tharollin began. "My third question, why is Avonmora's soul trapped in here?"

The water was shocked. Tharollin already knew whose soul is that. He couldn't find the right lies to tell this time around.

"I can see you are still in shock as how I get to know the soul belongs to my soulmate. I will be back later to have the truthful answers from you father...you are lucky that we are related father." Tharollin said. "I will be back Lucifer." He added and dissolved into his smoke disappearing and leaving his father alone.



He now has the soul of the Mer-Queen, getting it back from him will be so hard to do. His hard years plan will just go with the winds just like that? No.

What will he do? What will he do to collect the stone from his son?

\*\*\*\*\*

Rae woke you much earlier and started preparing for school. She couldn't wait to be in school and see the faces of all the students and teachers when they see her father.

Their magic broom has started sweeping and cleaning the house like it always does every single day.

Whistling softly to herself as she baths, she remembered Jason and wondered why he didn't come last night.

Coming out from the bathroom, she quickly put on her dress and her boots. She opened her room door and stepped out, climbing down the stairs and going straight to the kitchen, she wasn't in any trouble so no need to ditch breakfast again.

Lillian was already in the kitchen preparing her breakfast of omelettes.

"Good morning grandma." Rae greeted.

"Morning my sweet, how was your night?" Lillian asked as she brought down the omelettes from fire and put them on a plate, she gave it to Rae.

"Good grandma." Rae answered and quickly ate the four omelettes on her plate. She drank some water and kissed her grandmother cheeks before touching her bracelet and a portal opened beside her. "Take care granny."

"You too be careful." Lillian said as she watches Rae entered the portal. "And don't fight with anyone young lady." She added before the portal closes.

---

Stepping out from the portal, Rae didn't see her father, her bright face slowly turned into anger. She was about to rain all sorts of curses on her father for not keeping to his promise when he appeared right next to her.

The students who had been standing in front of the gate, some witches arriving through their portals, and some super-creatures coming down to the school gate. All disappeared when they sighted the man standing next to Rae.

"The devil is here!" Chants filled the air as no single soul was seen outside the gate.

"I have been waiting for you since, if anyone wants to get angry between us, that should be me, you made me wait." Tharollin said before Rae would open her mouth.

"Hmm." Rae mused as she regarded her father's attire, this one looked more devilish than the one she saw him wear yesterday. At least with the way the students in the front gate had shouted signify her father's sight frightened them. "I love what I am seeing, let's go in." Rae added.

A familiar scent suddenly reached his nose and he knows who it belongs to, he won't lose this chance now.

"Wait here I am coming back." Tharollin said.

"Where are you going?" Rae demanded. "Take me along with you." She added.

Now wasn't the time for argument, he took hold of her hand and they both turned to a smoke, disappearing.

Appearing, Rae saw that they were in front of the Gate of Darkness. Her mother's frozen statue was gone like Tharollin had told them.

What surprised her was when she saw a man, bending down and observing the ground where her mother had been before.

"Where is she?" Tharollin demanded immediately.

The man stood to his feet and his face changed when he sighted Tharollin, he was darkness. "Who are you asking of unholy creature?"

"Stop pretending as if you don't know what I am saying. Where did you take the Frozen lady that was here, it was your aura with one other I scented yesterday. Where do you keep Avonmora's holy creature?" Tharollin demanded of the man.

"Who are you and how do you know her name?"

"I am her lover, Mate, whatever it is you called soulmate in your place, that is what Avonmora is to me." Tharollin replied. "So where do you keep her?"

So this is the Tharollin who had opened the Gate? He is back. His daughter couldn't find someone else to mate with instead of an unholy one.

"You are right, I am with Avonmora. And my daughter will never be with darkness like you. Light and Darkness can't be together." Michael said.

"Are you dreaming? Avonmora your daughter?" Tharollin smiled. "Let me tell you something which you don't know Birdman, light and darkness do have something in common which most people fail to understand. There is no light without darkness and same as reverse. Light is one side of the coin, and Darkness is the other." Tharollin added.

## Chapter 47

'He's not perfect. You aren't either, and the two of you will never be perfect. But if he can make you laugh at least once, causes you to think twice, and if he admits to being human and making mistakes, hold onto him and give him the most you can. He isn't going to quote poetry, he's not thinking about you every moment, but he will give you a part of him that he knows you could break. Don't hurt him, don't change him, and don't expect for more than he can give. Don't analyze. Smile when he makes you happy, yell when he makes you mad, and miss him when he's not there. Love hard when there is love to be had. Because perfect guys don't exist, but there's always one guy that is perfect for you. When we honestly ask ourselves which person in our lives mean the most to us, we often find that it is those who, instead of giving advice, solutions, or cures, have chosen rather to share our pain and touch our wounds with a warm and tender hand. The friend who can be silent with us in a moment of despair or confusion, who can stay with us in an hour of grief and bereavement, who can tolerate not knowing, not curing, not healing and face with us the reality of our powerlessness, that is a friend who cares.'

♥♥♥♥ THAROLLIN IN SCHOOL ♥♥♥♥

Michael snorted loudly.

"Indeed unholy one." Michael said. "You better get out of here before I roast you to death that even the devil will not accept your rotten soul."

Tharollin smirk. "I will love to see you try that." He said his face changing into blackness. "Your type are the ones who make mouth but can't do a single thing." Tharollin told him.

"Oh really?" Michael said as his wings came out from his back shiny together with his hands which was closed. "Let me use you as an example then."

"Skull man, that's enough, you are scary the birdman already." Rae said drawing Micheal's gaze to her.

"Who are you and what are you doing beside the unholy one?" Michael asked staring at Rae. He hadn't even notice her presence. He has been only focus on Tharollin that he didn't think someone else was with them.

"She is my daughter birdman." Tharollin answered for him crossing his arms across his chest, though he was very alert for any attack the birdman might unleash to him. "Got a problem with that?"

"Yeah am his daughter, you now have two, how do you even put it 'unholy ones', facing you birdman." Rae said smiling crossing her arms like her father did.

"I am not a birdman, I am an Angel." Michael said with clenched teeth. "Does my wings look like bird wings to you?" He added still staring at Rae. He doesn't want to hurt the little girl, she felt familiar to him. But he reject any connections that will connect him with darkness since the unholy one said the little girl is his daughter. No doubts about that, they act the same.

"Actually to me, your wings look like bird wings, anything that has wings and fly up in the air, is a bird to me, my father gave you the perfect name, birdman." Rae answered his question.

Tharollin turned to look at his daughter. "I hope that doesn't include me because I too have wings."

"We are related, so you do not count." Rae reply him.

Tharollin doesn't feel like fighting the holy one in front of him, so he tried to talk things out with him, gently. After he had collected his Mate body from him, he will then kill the holy one. "Look here birdman, fighting with me is a waste of time, because you will lose. Just bring out my soulmate body wherever you kept it and leave here with your two wings still intact." Tharollin told Michael.

"I told you my daughter won't mingle with darkness not to talk of a rude one like you." Michael said. "Now if you still want your wings intact, leave here quietly with your daughter."

"Are you serious of what you said, that Avonmora is your daughter?" Tharollin demanded. This would be the second time he was hearing it from the birdman.

"Did I carried water in my mouth when I said it twice unholy one?" Michael asked.

This is totally impossible. If what the birdman is saying is true, then he is standing right in front of Avonmora's father.

"It can't be true, you are Avonmora's father, for real?" Tharollin asked the angel and Michael saw himself nodding his head to his question, Tharollin continue. "Then where were you all these years. The months I stayed with Avonmora she never made any mention of having a father or one of the birds people as her father."

"Same question I will ask you, where were you when they killed her Mer-clan people and frozen her body here? You said you are Mate yet you couldn't protect the one thing the gods gave to you darkness, shame on you." Michael fired back.

"Yes I know I did mistake by opening the Gate of Darkness and leaving my Mate behind without a second thought, I am truly sorry for doing that, but that doesn't change the fact that you weren't there for your daughter when she was growing up. I almost did like you but later got to know that Avonmora gave me a beautiful child." Tharollin said.

"You dare touched my daughter? You even have the guts to say you slept with her!" Michael shouted in rage.

"You got that all wrong birdman, I f\*\*k the brains out of Avonmora, your daughter, and which resulted my daughter here." Tharollin said smirking at Michael.

"You don't say that to my face you unholy creature of the nigh-" Micheal stopped his rant and what Tharollin said processes in his brain, his rage gone completely. He looked at Rae and then at Tharollin then finally on Rae. "Are you trying to say, Rae is Avonmora's daughter?" Michael asked softly. Was this the girl Lydia said Avonmora had for the Demon King? He hope not.

"Have I been carrying water in my water since I have been calling her 'my daughter'?" Tharollin throws back Micheal's words at him. "Of course she is my Mate daughter, who do you think I would f\*\*k with to have my Rae, uh holy creature of light?" Tharollin said taunting the angel.

"Is it true?" Michael ignored the taunting and focus on the girl beside the unholy one. "Because I see no resemblance of my daughter in you."

"And here I thought they say angels sees the heart. I am using a hidden spell to cover my aura birdman." Rae answered him.

"If you are truly Avonmora's daughter, then that automatically makes me your grandfather." Micheal said. "And you are very rude."

"She got that from me d\*\*khead, she is not rude birdman, don't speak like that to my daughter." Tharollin said.

"What did you just call me?" Michael demanded as his face slowly change into anger and he started to walk towards Tharollin, closing the distance between them slowly.

"Which of them, Birdman or d\*\*khead?" Tharollin answered his approaching father-in-law with a hard look.

"You both should stop this right now! Father just tell him you already have the soul of my mother that is why you have been looking for her." Rae said realizing this was the first time she was calling him father and not skull man, she turns her gaze to Michael. "And you birdman or whatever you said you are, my grandfather or Angel, take us to where you kept my mother, simple as that, there is no need to start a battle which I know you both can't finish, so put aside your little differences and work together to bring my mother alive once again." Rae finished her long speech feeling like the most intelligent one amongst them. It wasn't easy speaking sense to the both of them.

What are they even arguing? Her father has the soul, the birdman claiming to be her grandfather has her mother's body and instead of them to work together they are busy showing which of them got the power.

"You have the soul with you?" Micheal asked with wide eyes as he stopped moving.

"Yes I do and no, I am not the one who removed my mate soul. I found it and that was when I realized that my Mate body was actually missing." Tharollin explained his reasons for having her soul with him.

"Fine, I will do as my granddaughter here said, let's put our differences behind us and work together, what do you say unholy one?" Michael said looking at Rae.

"As long as my Mate is involved, then I will agree birdman." Tharollin said.

"I will take you to where I kept my daughter body." Michael said finally.

"That is very good of you because I would have traced you, just in case you don't know you are not the only one who could fly in the sky."

"Please don't ruin the moment here." Michael said without moving his lips.

"Now that we have settled this, let's go to my class, I need you to put fear into the students." Rae announced holding Tharollin arms and dragging him with her. "You can now do that your smoking stuff let's get out of here, my friends will be waiting for me."

"Anything for you dear." Tharollin said and prepare himself to transform into his smoke when Micheal's voice stopped him. "What do you want again birdman?" He asked turning to face him.

"You can't just leave me here alone, I will follow you both to the school and wait until you are ready to come with me to the cave I kept my daughter." Michael said.

Rae turned her head and regarded Micheal from head to his toe. "Nah, you are not needed, you are not scary like skull man here, the students will run to you for safety purpose. Why don't you go and fly around until night comes then come here afterwards by then my father would have been waiting for you." Rae told him.

"Have I ever tell you I am proud of you?" Tharollin asked his daughter and answered his question. "No I haven't because it hasn't been up to a day we got to know we are related as father and daughter."

"For crying out loud, stop stealing my lines for me." Rae said, how did he even know that was exactly what she wanted to say to him.

"I would rather speak it because letting it to come out from your mouth, I don't want that to happen." Tharollin said. "Your words alone could kill anyone who is not strong at heart, so thank you...you are welcome."

"So I shouldn't follow you?" Michael said drawing father and daughter attention to him.

"Uh, nope." Tharollin and Rae both said together. "We don't want you for now, you will ruin my plans for me." Rae said.

"Okay my granddaughter." Michael said and returned his gaze to Tharollin. "Meet me here at midnight with my daughter's soul."

"Of course birdman, don't keep me waiting." Tharollin said as Michael face change into anger.

"If it would make you feel better you can call him skull man granddad." Rae told Michael.

"It suit him." Michael said afterwards. "I won't keep you waiting skull head."

Tharollin snorted loudly, grab Rae in one of her arms and disappeared in a puff of smoke making sure the smoke entered Micheal's nose.

\*\*\*\*

Taloc snap his fingers and Tamara's clothes were as brand new on her body. Taloc licked her lips and kissed her, this time around slowly.

Breaking their kiss, he clapped his hands and another door appeared. "Go and rest dear, I will join you soon, I want to have a brief talk with our daughter." Taloc said gently as he caress her face.

"I will be expecting you soon Taloc." Tamara said kissing her mate before walking to the door, open it and step in, closing the door behind her.

Taloc clapped his hands and the door made of black appeared without wasting time, he entered it.

He stepped into a huge room which looks like a princess room and saw his daughter on the bed.

"Are you sleeping my dear one?" Taloc whisper ask.

"Not yet father." Lolly answered sitting upright on the bed. "What do you want to discuss with me father?"



"Your Vampire friend, is he trustworthy?" Taloc asked as he remain standing.

"I can't really tell father, but if he betrays me, I will end his life." Lolly replied him.

"Okay, just be careful around him, I don't trust his types one bit." Taloc said remembering the Vampire who had broken the Mate bond he had with his first soulmate. "I hate Vampires, but for you, this one will live."

"Thank you Father, don't worry yourself father, I will skin him alive any day I see an ounce of betrayer in his bloodstream." Lolly promised her father.

"Good, your mother is waiting for me, rest enough so that when you are awake, your journey back to the Supernaturals will begin." Taloc told his daughter and made the door Tamara had entered to appear in the room, opening the door, he entered it.

Lolly smiled to herself, Dean won't know what hit him. Let them get the blood of Jason and Rae's first. After her father would have broken the soul mate connection Jason have with Rae, she will finally kill Rae and Dean.

She will put an end to Rae. Her father will always support her decision.

She went back to sleep, closing her eyes.

---

Dean smiled silently in his sleep. He had read Lolly's thought. His secret power he has as a Vampire was reading people's thoughts. He doesn't use it on people often but since he entered this room, he felt like using it on Lolly and Tamara and he was glad he did.

Lolly plan to kill him together with his Love of his life.

Well, two can play the game.

\*\*\*\*\*

Lillian who was about to eat got surprise when she heard a knock on her door. She wasn't expecting anyone, so who can that be?

She waited again to hear another knock before she went to open up the door and blinked her eyes when she saw who is knocking at her door.

Though the hood covered her hair and face blocking people from knowing her, but her pale white eyeballs immediately told Lillian who it is.

"Won't you allow me in Lillian." Queen Rosa said.

"I am sorry your highness, I was surprised and forgot my manners." Lillian said and open the door widely for Rosa to enter. "Please come into my home."

"Thank you Lillian." Queen Rosa said and entered the house. Once she was inside the house, she let down her hood.

Lillian quickly lead her to the sitting room. "Please you can sit down on any of the chairs."

Queen Rosa sat down on one. "Thank you once again Lillian." She said.

"Is there anything I can get for you?" Lillian asked her visitor.

"No thanks, I came here to see you. My husband did not even know I am not in the palace." Queen Rosa said and Lillian sat down beside her.

"You came here to see me? Hope all is well?" Lillian demanded with worry.

"I won't lie to you, all is not well. I have been keeping a huge secret from you, the entire Supernaturals and even my husband." Queen Rosa began. "I don't know if I can be forgiven if the secret is told."

"What are you saying your highness? What secret?" Lillian asked confused.

"Promise me you won't ever reveal what I am about to tell you today to any living soul." Queen Rosa said.

"I promise you on my life, I won't reveal the secret to anyone." Lillian promised.

"I need your help Lillian, that is why my instinct tells me to trust you and let you in. I really need your help." Queen Rosa finally said.

"What kind of help do you need my Queen? I can't be of help to you if I don't know the cause."

"First of all, my name isn't Rosa like Tamara had introduced me to the Council of Kings and Queens years ago. My real name is Lika."

"What?"

"Yes Lillian, I am Lika, the last druid remaining."

\*\*\*\*\*

Appearing inside the school compound, all students moving all stopped for a brief moment to look at the man beside Rae before they all turned into speed man and ran into their various classes, locking the door with it's padlock.

Tharollin shook his head sideways and glanced at Rae beside him who nodded her head and he disappeared.

He appeared in every classes one at a time putting on his most scary face. Some students fainted, those who could disappeared quickly did that and when they appeared they still saw themselves in the classroom, the fairies flew out of the window only to see they couldn't.

Rae was laughing so hard that when a hand touched her back she became startled and raised up her hands in the air. She nearly jumped out of her skin.

"I don't know what is going on Mr Jack, I am innocent." Rae said and turned to face the proprietor when she saw Jorkallun and Sarah behind her.

Sarah was laughing so hard and Jorkallun just smile at her. "I never thought I'd see the day Rae Fey would get scared." She said in-between her laughter.

Bringing down her hands and glaring at Sarah, "Yeah laugh all you want and I will tell him to scare you once he is done with our school mates." Rae said.

"So you do know him?" Jorkallun asked watching as Tharollin disappeared and appear scary the students half to death.

"Yeah, I told him to scare them and I hope Lolly, our favorite drama queen, is here." Rae said to them.

Tharollin appeared right next to Rae. "I am not doing that again Rae." He said with seriousness. "But you needed to see their faces when they all screamed out in fear." He added with a smile. "Hope you are satisfied now?"

"Yeah I am." Rae smiled back.

"Rae Fey!" Jack's voice was heard in his office as he called out Rae. "You and the riff-raff who is causing the uproar in my school you don't know how I built should come to my office right NOW!" He shouted.

"Who did he just refer to as a riffraff?" Tharollin asked.

"You of course, let's go." Rae answered and hold her father arms, without a word exchange, they both turned into smoke and disappeared.

"Let's go to the office and see what's going to happen." Sarah said and Jorkallun nodded his head.

They ran and quickly climbed the stairs leading to Jack's office to eavesdrop on their conversation.

No teachers were seen on the corridor.

Tharollin appeared in front of Jack who shifted back fearfully when he saw him. He also saw Rae beside the man smiling at him.

He wasn't expecting them to puff into his office like the way they just did now, he was expecting them to follow the door, you know knock and he well tell them to come inside after making them wait for 5 minutes.

"We are here as requested Mr Jack." Rae said.

"Who is this man with you?" Jack asked Rae as he tried to remain strong but you could see his legs shaking slightly.

"That's my father." Rae said. "He is a Demon Mr Jack." She whispered the last part to the proprietor.

"D-demon?"

"Does the name Tharollin rings a bell to you?" Tharollin asked the man he was intimidating with his presence, the shock look the man sent to his direction made Tharollin showed his cruel smile, "Yes, the very one who opened the Gate of Darkness."

Sarah and Jorkallun turn to look at themselves with pure shock. The tharollin they were looking for is inside the office.

"Y-y-you are highly wel- welcome to my school Sire." Jack stammered.

"At least give us some sit." Tharollin said and Jack quickly dust the two empty seats in front of his table. "Please sit down with your lovely daughter." He added and walk over to his chair, using the table to keep his balance so that he won't fall, before he could sit down Tharollin voice stopped him.

"Actually I prefer to sit in your seat." Tharollin said stopping Jack and went over to sit on the chair meant for the proprietor, pushing Jack away at the process.

Rae sat down on one of the empty chairs Jack just cleaned.

Father and daughter both placed their legs on the table at the same time.

"You can sit on the empty one Jack." Tharollin said and Jack sat down immediately. "So let's get down to business, shall we?"

"O-of c-cc-course Sire."

"So, who were you referring to as a Riffraff?"

## Chapter 48

"When I despair, I remember that all through history the way of truth and love have always won. There have been tyrants and murderers, and for a time they can seem invincible, but in the end, they always fall. Think of it--always. There is neither happiness nor misery in the world; there is only the comparison of one state with another, nothing more. He who has felt the deepest grief is best able to experience supreme happiness. We must have felt what it is to die, Morrel, that we may appreciate the enjoyments of life.

" Live, then, and be happy, beloved children of my heart, and never forget that until the day God will deign to reveal the future to man, all human wisdom is contained in these two words, 'Wait and Hope. Do not let your fire go out, spark by irreplaceable spark in the hopeless swamps of the not-quite, the not-yet, and the not-at-all. Do not let the hero in your soul perish in lonely frustration for the life you deserved and have never been able to reach. The world you desire can be won. It exists.. it is real.. it is possible.. it's yours. I believe that imagination is stronger than knowledge. That myth is more potent than history. That dreams are more powerful than facts. That hope always triumphs over experience. That laughter is the only cure for grief. And I believe that love is stronger than death.'

♥♥♥♥ LUCIFER ♥♥♥♥

"D-did y-y-you j-ju-just sa-say I cal-called y-y-you a R-rif-riff-riffraff?" Jack asked trying to sound surprised but failed woefully at his acting attempt. "I totally h-have no i-idea of what you are saying Sire." He added with a forced smile.

"Today is the first day I came into this school with my daughter, and I got insulted by a boy." Tharollin said looking at Jack with an evil glint in his eyes. "How old are you anyway?" He asked casually at the shaking man.

"I-i am eight hundr-" Jack started to say but got interrupted by Tharollin.

"Stand up when talking to me, I am now the school proprietor and you are now my student or better still my teacher I am yet to employ." Tharollin said.

How he managed to get up and stayed upright with his legs still shaking remains a mystery to Jack. "I am ei-eight Hund-hundred years o-old S-sire (800)." Jack manage to stammered out.

"Eight hundred years old? And there I thought you are like two thousand years old (2,000) you know, with the way you carry yourself as if you are the oldest creature in the Supernaturals, not knowing you are just eight hundred years old." Rae said with a smile as she turned her head to face Jack.

"I just get insulted by a child." Tharollin said after a while. "Why did you call me a riffraff or is that how you call your student's parents names the first time you see them?" Tharollin asked.

"I-i am so so-sorry S-si-sire, I-i th-thought it was so-somebody el-else t-th-that was cau-causing the up-uproar in m-my school with my ha-har-hardwo-working stu-student Rae. H-how can I call the great Tharollin a R-rif-riff-riffraff?" Jack asked as he stared at father and daughter who just glue their eyes on him. "It doe-doesn't m-make a-any sen-sense to me sire." He managed to speak. "I ap-apolo-gise for my un-uncalled be-hav-ior Sire, it won't rep-repeat it-se-self again."

"Who built the school?" Tharollin asked suddenly picking interest in it.

"A-all the K-kings and Q-queens bo-both con-tribu-ted to bu-build the sch-school Sire." Jack said.

"I see." Tharollin muse and decided to ease the man worries a little. "Relax boy, I am not here to eat you up. I have forgiven you for calling me that name." Tharollin told him. "You won't die today so calm your nerves down." He added and laughed.

Jack nodded his head afraid to speak.

"Why aren't you laughing along with me?" Tharollin demanded as he scowl at Jack playfully 🙄.

Jack suddenly burst out laughing and Tharollin joined him afterwards 🤣. Jack laughter was the loudest that Tharollin has to stop his laugh and look at Jack as if he had grown two heads and chuckle slightly.

Rae smirked at her proprietor finding the whole situation funny 😏.

"If you punish my daughter for this and she tells me, count yourself dead then. I may still be adapting to the new changes in the Supernatural Kingdoms as it wasn't like this one thousand years ago, but it won't take me half a minute to trace your house or your hideout and silence you for good." Tharollin said as Jack stopped his laugh.

"Of course Sire." Jack responded managing to get himself on track once again.

Tharollin stood up from the seat and lay his hand on Jack's head suddenly that Jack almost scream in fear, but the scream trying to come out seized in his throat by Tharollin's stares. He thought the devil 🐈‍⚔️ wanted to kill him

If Tharollin hasn't lock his gaze with him giving Jack that his famous evil look, all the whole Kingdoms would have heard his bloody screams by now.

"I am not eating you, relax." Tharollin told him as he patted Jack's hair like a toddler. "With the power invested in me by Tharollin, you may now reclaim your position as the head proprietor of the Supernaturals school." Tharollin added as he left the table to stand behind Rae who also get up to her feet.

"You can now take back what is rightfully yours that was forcefully taken away from you Mr Jack." Rae said walking towards the office door.

"Thank you Sire." Jack said trying to find his breath.

"Come on father let's go." Rae said and opened the door. "We are going through the door this time around." She added.

Sarah who had pressed her ear 🗨️ to the door, so that she won't miss out any words, wasn't quick enough to remove her head that was placed hard against the door. She could have fallen with a loud thud if not for the timely Intervention of Jorkallun who grab hold of her in her waist firmly.

"Wow, I never knew you are the gossip type Jorkallun." Rae taunted the Dragon boy. "I would understand for Sarah, but you... I never thought to see you eavesdropping in anyone conversation since you always do that 'I am a dragon and I know all the stuff.'" She added.

Jorkallun laughs. "You never ceases to amaze me, Rae."

"And who are they?" Tharollin voice sounded behind Rae as he closed the door behind him.

Jack fell down to the ground flat immediately the door was shut, his heart racing faster that he was sure Tharollin would hear it. He started thinking about his life from when he was a little baby.

Tharollin regarded the two students standing in front of his daughter. This was the first time he was seeing the two people and his eyes were glued on Jorkallun who kept smiling at his daughter... his red hair shows he is a dragon Prince. Hmm interesting...

"They are my friends skull man." Rae answered.

"Is that your boyfriend?" Tharollin demanded still looking at Jorkallun. "He is still smiling at you and I don't like it."

"He is my friend and the girl beside him is his girlfriend." Rae told her father. "I haven't set my eyes on my boyfriend though to introduce him to you."

"If you say so child, I just don't like his smile." Tharollin said his eyes still on Jorkallun.

"Why is that stupid handsome boy not here Jorkallun?" Rae demanded. "He could have heard the noise by now and show his face."

"I don't think he will come to school today Rae." Jorkallun answered. "They are preparing for the coming Wolf festival and his cousins are around." He added.



"How did you know that?" Rae asked.

"I visited him last night." Jorkallun answered.

"So he is your father?" Sarah asked shyly still in shock about the new discovery.

"Yup, the scary man is my father." Rae replied still thinking about Jason.

"Wow, I never expected to see him in flesh, my mother will be so surpris-"

"In as much as I love the attention I am having right now, I still got some other things I want to do." Tharollin said interrupting Sarah. "Rae I will meet you at home. Goodbye strange friends of my daughter." He added and was about to transform to his smoke form when Sarah's voice stopped him.

"Wait, I want to tell you something that is very important." Sarah said. "But in private, you and Rae together, please." She added.

"You know, you should thank your stars you are friends with my daughter, I would have let my dark smoke consume you for stopping my transformation." Tharollin said. "I hope what you are about to say is worth the wait."

"It is sire." Sarah responded. "Let's go over to my boyfriend class which is more secure than here." She added.

Sarah lead the way with Jorkallun and Rae and Tharollin followed them sending a cold chill smile to the students who didn't faint whenever he passes a classroom.

They entered Jorkallun class.

"What is it?" Tharollin demanded before the door was shut.

"I know who Rae is." Sarah said, her voice changing from that timidly girl who is always shy to her warrior strong voice.

Rae eyes widen when she heard that. Tharollin quickly went into defense.

"How did you know?" Rae asked.

"I am also a mermaid too." Sarah revealed.

"You are what?" Tharollin asked, he didn't see that coming.

"A mermaid just like Rae." Sarah answered. "I was sent here to look for Selena and ended up finding you. I have known for long that you are a mermaid."

"You were sent here by who?" Tharollin demanded.

"By my mother, who is Selena's sister. Rae is my cousin sister and her mother is my aunt. Where I come from, there are still a lot of Mermaids and Mermen there." Sarah explained. "So you see sire, we are related which makes you my uncle." She said saying the last three statements as she stared directly to Tharollin.

"I know my instincts were right when I told Lillian that Selena wouldn't have popped out from nowhere." Tharollin said with a smile. "I was right then, Tamara lied to you all."

"Jorkallun, did you know about this?" Rae asked and turn her gaze to the red haired boy pretending to get angry at him.

"I am sorry I kept it away from you Rae, I promised Sarah I won't reveal it to anyone else unless she permits me." Jorkallun said with a guilty look.

"It's okay Jorkallun, I completely understand, I also told my handsome boyfriend not to reveal to anyone that I am a mermaid." Rae said and laughed out loud. "We do know how to keep secrets." She pointed out.

"Speaking of Tamara, I and my boyfriend over heard her when she and a water being with you were in a cave, probably hers, and you were asking them questions which they lied and said it was the King who had ordered the killin-" cutting her off.

"I know that, I have already found out the truth, I went there to ask her why she lied only for me to find out she has a daughter." Tharollin said trying to remember Tamara's daughter name he heard.

"The priestess has a what!?" Rae realized the shout came from her.

"Yes child, Tamara has a daughter who has a sunburn long hair and is really pretty to look at. We fought when she challenged me, though I didn't kill the beast she transformed into. I am trying to recall the name I heard Tamara called her daughter." Tharollin said thinking hard.

"Hold on a minute sir, did you say a beast?" Jorkallun asked in surprised. "Her daughter turned into a beast?"

"That's what I said dragon boy." Tharollin answered him and the name suddenly came to him. "I think Tamara's daughter's name is Lolly." He finally revealed.

Rae eyes widened in surprise.

Sarah eyes widened in surprise

Jorkallun wasn't left out.

"From your looks I guess this Lolly is attending this school, am I right?" Tharollin asked.

\*\*\*\*

The water man couldn't think straight anymore.


How did Tharollin find the stone? He had made sure it wasn't seen.

No, he has to tell him now that Avonmora's soul is not with him anymore.

He started walking deeper and deeper inside the cave until he came to a deep pit.

No one could see what was inside the pit as it was a bottomless pit.

"Master, there is trouble." The water man said as he bent his head a little bit inside the pit.

A hideous creature  flew out, nearly coming out of the pit but couldn't as the sound of chains echo around the cave. He was chained and has been chained for so long. He is the real Lucifer.

"Have you gotten the bones?" The creature demanded immediate only his big head could be seen.

"Not yet master, Tharollin successfully collected the bones from the Gate of Darkness but didn't give it to me. He also has the pure soul which can be used together with the bones." The water man said.

"This isn't good." The creature's thick voice vibrated the whole ground. "Has Raphael remember who he is yet?"

"No Master, he still thinks of me as his father and also as.... Lucifer." The water man answered him.

## Chapter 49

'It is not the critic who counts; not the man who points out how the strong man stumbles, or where the doer of deeds could have done them better. The credit belongs to the man who is actually in the arena, whose face is marred by dust and sweat and blood; who strives valiantly; who errs, who comes short again and again, because there is no effort without error and shortcoming; but who does actually strive to do the deeds; who knows great enthusiasms, the great devotions; who spends himself in a worthy cause; who at the best knows in the end the triumph of high achievement, and who at the worst, if he fails, at least fails while daring greatly, so that his place shall never be with those cold and timid souls who neither know victory nor defeat. Simplicity, patience, compassion. These three are your greatest treasures. Simple in actions and thoughts, you return to the source of being. Patient with both friends and enemies, you accord with the way things are. Compassionate toward yourself, you reconcile all beings in the world.

♥♥♥♥ LUCIFER (Part Two) ♥♥♥♥

"You are what?" Lillian asked confusedly. What is her Queen saying?

"I said my real name is Lika and not Rosa. I am a druid, the last druid." Rosa/Lika said.

"You are a druid? Where do you keep the real Queen Rosa? It means you are camouflaging as the real Queen Rosa." Lillian said getting up to her feet and moving away from her.

"You get it all wrong Lillian, I am still the same person. Please sit down and let me explain myself. If I didn't want your help or trust in the first place, I won't even open up to you or tell you....this, so please sit down, I am not your enemy." Queen Rosa said.

Lillian sense some truth behind those words and that prompted her to sit down. She trusted the Queen. "So which name do you prefer I call you, Rosa or Lika?" She asked.

"Rosa is fine by me, Lika is just like my past life, which, I don't want to ever remember, so you can still call me Rosa." Queen Rosa answered.

"Alright my Queen, so how did you escape death when all druids were killed? How?" Lillian asked with interest. If truly what the queen is saying is the truth, then how come she had survived the war?

"Let me start from the beginning Lillian." Queen Rosa said and Lillian nodded her head for her to continue. "Many thousands of years ago, I hated the word called 'soulmate' and was against it so badly that I took the wrong path which leads to the destruction of my people. My hatred blinded me and it caused the death of a thousand people." Queen Rosa said.

"And what kind of destruction that leads to the death of many people are you talking about my Queen?" Lillian asked.

"The soulmate bond breaker." Queen Rosa revealed finally.

Lillian eyes widen like a socket when she heard that. "Please my Queen, I hope I am very wrong, don't tell me you are the unknown Druid who had broken the soulmate bond between the Hellhound and his Vampire Mate years ago?" She asked hoping and praying to the gods that the answer should be 'No'.

"Yes Lillian, it was I who did it, though I didn't know it would end up in that way back then, I realize my mistakes and couldn't change it, I had to run away from my home and hide, my people, my family were all wiped out by the ravaging beast." Queen Rosa said allowing the tears to flow down her cheeks. "Imagine, a princess who had killed her own people by her selfish act." She added.

"You are the Princess of the Druids?" Lillian managed to asked amidst her shock.

Queen Rosa nodded her head slowly and answer. "Yes, I was a princess of the druids."

"This is unbelievable, you are Princess Likarica who got missing and we all thought, especially your parents, you were killed by the ravaging beast." Lillian said trying to steady her breaths. "If only I had seen your face once, I would have recognized you the very day you appear before the council of Kings and Queens and Roen became your soulmate, but no one knows how Princess Likarica looks like."

"You are right Lillian, I don't like being around people and that is why no one knows I was the one who had broken up the bond, I was tagged as 'the unknown Druid', I remain a mystery to everyone who knows about the ravaging beast history." Queen Rosa said and gave out short gasps as she tried to control her tears. "I am just sorry for what I did in the past." She added in a tearful voice.

"You know crying won't change anything, crying won't bring back the dead, crying won't carry you back to the past, so stop crying and look towards the future and correct your mistakes through it." Lillian told her and Queen Rosa cleaned out the tears on her cheeks and eyes. And a thought suddenly came to Lillian. "But...how do you met Tamara, the Priestess of the Supernaturals, how did the both of you met?" She asked wanting to know.

"When I ran away from my Kingdom, I went inside a cave and met Tamara there and we became friends, though I didn't tell her who I was then or why I was running away. After spending a few days with her and was still hearing the deaths of the people who died under the beast hands, a water being appeared out of nowhere and I heard Tamara calling him 'master'." Queen Rosa stopped to catch her breath.

"Master? Tamara has a master who is a water being?" Lillian asked shocked. "Like he is in a water form or a water bender in a human form?" She added.

"Her master is in a water form." Queen Rosa responded.

"Are you serious? Are you sure Tamara has a master?" Lillian asked.

"Yes Lillian she has a master. He appeared and asked Tamara why she hasn't subdue the beast yet and she told him she was working on that. A plan came into my head and I told them I can be of help...."

"What kind of help?" Lillian interrupted immediately.

"I reason that what if the beast memories were wiped off, especially the part where his mate bond was broken, perhaps if we erase his whole memories then he wouldn't go on killing everything. And I did the memory wiper, which she used against me. She wiped off my whole memories Lillian and I couldn't remember who I was again until yesterday evening. The memory wiper stays some years before the victim it was used upon remembers who he or she is." Queen Rosa said. "She then turned me into her slave."

\*\*\*\*

"Yes father, she goes to this very school and has become my arch enemy." Rae answered her father. "I don't really like her, let me rephrase that, I dislike her." She added.

"Lolly is the girl who thinks she owns the whole world." Sarah began. "I just don't like her." She added.

"And she was my ex who betrayed me and went ahead to get engaged with my best friend." Jorkallun said. "I loathe the ground she walks on." He added.

"Wow, that's a lot of hatred for one person alone." Tharollin said with a smile. "But I love it." He added playfully.

"Yeah I know you will like it." Rae said with a smile before it faded. "Father, you said you fought with Lolly in her beast form, right?"

"Yes I did." Tharollin answered.

"And also you said she was the Priestess daughter, right?" Sarah asked.

"When I said that I wasn't carrying water in my mouth." Tharollin said almost shouting at Sarah.

"Don't yell at me, you are now my uncle remember so you have to answer all my questions politely." Sarah told Tharollin.

Tharollin stare at Sarah and turn his gaze to Jorkallun. "Hey you dragon, don't you also have your own question to ask me?" He asked.

"Nah, I heard everything you said. I just can't believe that Lolly is Tamara's daughter, which means, the priestess slept with the Amazon King behind everyone's back." Jorkallun said aloud in thought.

"Exactly my thought, she is a cunning witch." Sarah said.

"Tamara lied to everyone of us, because she said the last mermaid will be sacrificed at the Gate of Darkness, and my grandmother thought I am the one who the Priestess had spoken about and that is why she hide my real appearance and aura. What my grandmother didn't know was that there is more Mermaids and Mermen outside the kingdoms like Sarah had said, and one is standing right here in front of me." Rae said facing Sarah as she speaks.

"About that, your grandmother already knows about me. She found out the day I came to your house because Tamara had changed into Lillian to get to you." Sarah said and saw Rae's surprised face. "Please don't hold it on your grandmother, I personally pleaded with her not to tell you my secrets."

"Like I told Jorkallun, I completely understand." Rae said with a smile.

"Thank you for understanding me Rae, I am glad we are cousins."

"Kids, I have places I need to go right now, I and Tamara still have some scores to settle and my father also." Tharollin said. "I will see you later Rae." He said and quickly change into his smoke before anyone stops him again this time.

"The real reason why we told you everything is that my mother needs to talk to her sister, Selena, who is your grandmother. And my findings from an ancient king who had worked with your grandmother, Jorkallun father to precise, he told my boyfriend that the only way to summon the mermaid goddess is through her bloodline, which is you. A part of you carries that." Sarah said.

"You are right." Rae said. "I always speak to Selena, in fact it was during one of my visits to her that I met my father. She knew he was coming. She is a beautiful woman."

\*\*\*\*

"Hmm, my magic is still useful after being locked up for many years." Lucifer said his hideous lips curled up evilly.

"I just hope he doesn't remember who he was master, we just have to find a way to collect the stone from him." The water man said.

"Don't worry, Raphael won't remember a thing and since the soul is with him, let him have it. We are going to steal it back from him when he least expected and even if he does return the soul back to its owner, there are still ways I can extract the soul out of the lady." Lucifer said.

"Then my worries are gone."

"Know what to lie when he asks you a lot of questions, it is important if Raphael stays with on our side." Lucifer said.

"Yes master." The water man said.

"When everything is ready and I am free once again, I will return your body back to you." Lucifer said. "I am so glad the day I met King Damien who was the former Demon King before I killed him and transfer his powers into Raphael who I erase his memories. Who would have ever thought that Damien and Raphael have same resemblance and I used that to my own advantage." Lucifer said and laughed out, the whole cave shook and the water man following suit.

Lucifer entered the bottomless pit back leaving the water man who continue to laugh.



## Chapter 50

'Dare to Be.

When a new day begins, dare to smile gratefully. When there is darkness, dare to be the first to shine a light. When there is injustice, dare to be the first to condemn it. When something seems difficult, dare to do it anyway. When life seems to beat you down, dare to fight back. When there seems to be no hope, dare to find some. When you're feeling tired, dare to keep going. When times are tough, dare to be tougher. When love hurts you, dare to love again. When someone is hurting, dare to help them heal. When another is lost, dare to help them find the way. When a friend falls, dare to be the first to extend a hand. When you cross paths with another, dare to make them smile. When you feel great, dare to help someone else feel great too. When the day has ended, dare to feel as you've done your best. Dare to be the best you can – At all times, Dare to be! The most important kind of freedom is to be what you really are. You trade in your reality for a role. You trade in your sense for an act. You give up your ability to feel, and in exchange, put on a mask. There can't be any large-scale revolution until there's a personal revolution, on an individual level. It's got to happen inside first.'

♥♥♥♥ AARON'S PLAN ♥♥♥♥

"You don't mean that, do you?" Sarah asked very surprised. Rae had been speaking with her grandmother who she has been trying to find for a very long time.

"I am deadly seriously." Rae answered.

"You mean to say that you communicate with the goddess of Mermaids?" Jorkallun asked.

"Yes." Rae answered.

"That means summoning her will be so easy then, I personally have a question to ask her when I see her." Sarah said. She couldn't wait to reach home and inform her mother the good news. "My mother can't wait to behold her sister whom she hasn't seen for a long."

"Well, there might be a little problem in that." Rae said all of a sudden.

"Which can be?" Both Sarah and Jorkallun demanded straight away.

"It's about Selena, my grandmother, I don't know how to summon her, she only appears to me whenever I visit her in the Mer-clan Kingdom." Rae answered them.

"You mean to tell us that you don't summon her, she comes to you rather?" Sarah asked.

"Exactly Sarah, once I get to the Mer-clan, she is there already... waiting for me." Rae told them.

"Then we have to visit the Mer-clan together and see her." Sarah said.

"What if she doesn't appear to us like she did to me....alone, remember I was always alone whenever I went to the Mer-clan and not with people." Rae told them.

"You are right Rae. What if she doesn't appear to us like you just said." Jorkallun said.

"But you said I can summon her, right?" Rae asked.

"Yes you can. My father told me only the bloodline of Selena can summon her." Jorkallun told her.

"And since I just discovered I am a descendant of Selena, I can be able to summon her." Rae said and her face squeeze in a sudden thought. "But how do I summon her? Will I perform some rituals or say incantations to summon her in my presence?" She asked.

"I didn't ask my father that, once I get home today that would be the first thing I will ask him, we shall get to know how we can summon Selena tomorrow." Jorkallun responded.

"Okay, just tell me what to do." Rae said and punches Sarah on her shoulder, though not hard. "We are cousins and you never revealed that to me."

"I am sorry Rae, it wasn't my intention to lie to you, but it has to be done. But I am glad that you now know who you truly are." Sarah said in an apologetic voice. "I am sorry you are just getting to know the truth now." She added.

"Well you are forgiven, I just don't like the way I get to know things very late." Rae said with shrugs shoulders. "And since my teacher won't be coming to school today, I will attend all my former classes." She added.

"Thanks for your understanding Rae. Anyway I will accompany you to your classes since we still have the same class together, if Jorkallun wouldn't mind." Sarah told Rae as they both turned to face Jorkallun.

"Fine by me." Jorkallun said to them with a smile.

"Don't worry when next I see Jason, I will slap him for allowing your girlfriend to ditch you for me today." Rae said playfully.

"I will like that, please format his brain with your slap if possible for me." Jorkallun told Rae in a playful voice.

"I will definitely do that." Rae said and walked towards the door.

Sarah kissed Jorkallun and left his arms to join Rae who was whistling at them.

They left Jorkallun and hurriedly went for their history class.

They weren't shouted at for coming late to the class.

Once Serena started teaching them some histories, Rae realized the topic Miss Serena was teaching them Jason had taught her already.

She misses Jason's presence. She wished he had come to school today.

\*\*\*\*

Tharollin appeared at Tamara's cave and couldn't find her there. He sense no presence in the cave so he disappeared going to meet his father.

---

The water man had barely sat down on his throne made with rocks when Tharollin appeared in front of him.

"I am back like I said father. I need the answers right now." Tharollin said.

"Relax son, I will tell you all that you need to know." The water man said and continue. "Tamara was the one who had told me she wanted to kill all the Mer-clan and use their blood for powers and since Avonmora's soul is a very pure one, she decided to steal her soul and give it to me so that I can keep it well for her. I asked her what she wanted with the soul and she couldn't give me any reasonable answers. Tamara is the cause of everything, she is the one to be questioned and not me...your father." The water said lying. He couldn't tell him the whole truth.

Tamara is just like a puppet in the hands of Lucifer and him. The killing of the whole Mer-clan was to use the blood of an entire Kingdom who are very close to water and make sure it entered the Gate of Darkness, where some of his fallen angels that were killed by the last war and were thrown into the Gate of Darkness. The blood will make their bones raise again after some years has passed.

Wolves and the rest of the Supernaturals doesn't need water to live like the Mer-clan do. Mermaids and Mermen use water to live, so there were easy target and Tamara played a huge role for them without knowing.

Tharollin wouldn't know all that, he was too kind hearted and that was what caused him to be where he is right now.

The pure soul which is to be use pointed to the Mer-Queen, and it will be used to unlock the chains that bind Lucifer when it made contact with the bones which Tharollin had helped them retrieved.

"Father, why did you not discourage her from her plans. Why would she want to wipe out all the Mer-clan?" Tharollin demanded.

"For her greedy I suppose. Tamara is a greedy person I have ever come across. I should have talked sense into her and not stand there and watch her use the name of the gods which she use to lie against the entire Supernaturals, and have all the whole Mer-clan killed. I know I am very wrong in that." Water man said.

"I see now, Tamara is the cause, Tamara is evil." Tharollin said convince a little.

"There is still a way to redo the past. You can bring all the Mer-clan back to life." Water man said suddenly.

"Really?" Tharollin asked shock.

"Yes son, I won't lie to you."

"Tell me what it is father?"

"The Bones you collected from the Gate of Darkness can be used in reviving them all. You just have to hand over the bones to me and you will see every Mer-clan will be alive once again." Water man lied.

"The bones can do that?" Tharollin asked with surprise.

"Yes son, it is one of the Secret of the bones I learnt and that was why I had pleaded with you to bring back my bones which was thrown at the Gate of Darkness." The water man answered him.

He had fought with the gods and Tharollin had helped them defeat him. And what they had thought was his body was thrown at the Gate of Darkness.

His real body was with Lucifer.

\*\*\*\*\*

KINGDOM OF ANGELS:

Aaron was standing in front of his twelve most trusted and strongest angels. He had summoned them.

"The twelve of you are my strongest warriors I have and I trust you will carry out my work diligently." Aaron began as he stared at each of the angels face to mark his point.

"We will do all we can my King." One of the Angels told Aaron.

"Good." Aaron said with a smirk and turn his back to them immediately. "I want you to hunt for Micheal, my brother, and kill him." He said.

"My king, killing Michael will be so hard, you know he is the strongest after Raphael, the Creator messenger who has not been seen for so many years now." One of the angels said. "No one can even recognize him even if they want, because Raphael always wear a mask to conceal his identity." He added slowly.

"Are we talking about Raphael or about my brother Micheal?" Aaron demanded and he angrily faces them once again.

"I am so sorry my King if it makes you angry, but we should give it a thought, Micheal was trained specially by Raphael himself, he is no match for one angel." The same angel said again. "You saw what he did to that 200 angels that you ordered them to kill him, he killed them all within two minutes." He added.

"I know Micheal is a strong angel and that is why I am sending you all at once to him. The twelve of you are the strongest amongst the other angels because you were trained a little bit by Raphael before he went missing and the Creator refuse to give us his location, so you will know a little bit of Micheal skills." Aaron said to them.

"What about Gabriel?"

"He won't know about our discussion, no one should tell him." Aaron answered.

"So what do you want us to do to Micheal?" Another Angel asked, pretending he didn't hear the first time Aaron had said he wanted Micheal dead.

"Find him, when you see him, follow him until you see him with a woman whose name is Selena, you kill Micheal there and bring me the woman." Aaron said with an evil glint in his eyes as he spoke. "Make sure Micheal doesn't live."

Unknown to them, Gabriel overheard their conversation.

## Chapter 51

'When we least expect it, life sets us a challenge to test our courage and willingness to change; at such a moment, there is no point in pretending that nothing has happened or in saying that we are not yet ready. The challenge will not wait. Life does not look back. A week is more than enough time for us to decide whether or not to accept our destiny. Don't let the expectations and opinions of other people affect your decisions. It's your life, not theirs. Do what matters most to you; do what makes you feel alive and happy. Don't let the expectations and ideas of others limit who you are. If you let others tell you who you are, you are living their reality — not yours. There is more to life than pleasing people. There is much more to life than following others' prescribed path. There is so much more to life than what you experience right now. You need to decide who you are for yourself. Become a whole being.'

Follow me on Instagram:  
Officialomaisabella

♥♥♥♥ LUCIFER'S BONES ♥♥♥♥

LILLIAN'S HOUSE:

"After she made you lose your memories, she turned you into her slave?" Lillian asked and Queen Rosa nodded her head in affirmative. "My sister is purely evil, she did all that to you and still introduced you to us." She added.

"Tamara is your sister?" Queen Rosa asked with surprise.

"Yeah, she is my sister, a lot of people don't really know we are even related, we don't really act like siblings that's why it's hard for people to believe we actually came from the same parents. I am sure some of the Kings and Queens had forgotten, it's no big deal anyway, I am used to it." Lillian answered with a shrug shoulders.

"Wow, if you didn't say this now I wouldn't have thought you and Tamara are related." Queen Rosa said in wonder.

"I get that surprise look a lot when I tell people Tamara and I are blood sisters." Lillian said. "But what she did to you, is unforgivable." She added.

"Yes Lillian, my only fear right now is if I am the true mate of my husband, I am afraid of finding out the truth." Queen Rosa said.

"Then you have to try and use your magic and see if truly you are Roen's soulmate." Lillian told Rosa.

"I can't perform any magic right now." Queen Rosa said.

"What do you mean you can't perform any magic to see if you are truly Roen's mate or not? Don't you want to know or are you playing on my intelligence my Queen?" Lillian demanded immediately.

"No, you are getting it all wrong Lillian, you won't understand." Queen Rosa said.

"Then make me understand my Queen, tell me why you can't perform magic and you said you are a druid, magic, powerful magic runs in your veins and you are here saying you can't perform a single magic." Lillian said. "Unless you lied that you are a druid." She added in fury.

"Calm down Lillian, just know whatever I told you is nothing but the truth. Why I can't perform any magic right now is because if I do that, I will alert the ravaging beast to my location. I told you I was the one who had broken their soulmate connection, I and the beast are interwoven in this, I will put myself in a big risk if I do a slightest magic. That is why I ran away because I didn't want to die, and now I have a son and a husband who I don't want anything bad to happen to them." Queen Rosa finally explained her reasons.

"In case you don't know, Tamara defeated the ravaging beast a long time ago, so don't be scared, after all you have a son who is also a Tribid just like the beast." Lillian said trying to encourage the Rosa.

"I don't believe Tamara would tame the beast or defeat it so easily, If she can be able to wipe out my memory and present me to Roen and you all as his wife, then, she is up to something else. Come to think of it, how did she know I will give birth to a Tribid and true to her words, I did. I am not even sure that the sacrifice my son have to make when we see the last mermaid, is true. I made a memory wiper stone which she used on me and it still remains one more time before it becomes useless, she might have used it on the ravaging beast and lie to you all that the beast is dead or rather she will say she had defeated it.... don't you think so Lillian?" Queen Rosa ask Lillian.

"What are you trying to say my Queen?"

"What I am trying to say is that the ravaging beast is still alive and it's out there patiently waiting to strike." Queen Rosa responded. "If it has died as Tamara has claimed I will know." She added.

"I believe what you say my Queen." Lillian said.

'If Tamara could lie and tell everyone that only the last Mermaid will be used to close down the Gate completely and now she just find out the truth about Sarah being a mermaid which shows Rae isn't the last mermaid as they had all presumed, that means Tamara lied to everyone else again when she said she defeated the ravaging beast' Lillian thought.

"Tamara has deceived everyone in the whole Supernaturals and to even think we actually believed all her lies." Lillian said.

"That's my point, I think she lied to everyone of us." Queen Rosa said.

"Like I told you before my Queen, you have a Tribird has your son, so perform your magic to see if you and Roen are soulmates." Lillian told Rosa.

"Don't you think I was given a Tribird as a son for a reason since I was the one who had broken the mate connection. I feel like my son will experience such." Queen Rosa told Lillian her fears.

"My Queen, you have forgotten that your son is not only a Tribird but a Millennium Wolf. He will protect you and everyone in this Kingdom as long as you are doing good. My own believe is that you were given a Tribird as a son for a reason, and that reason is for good. So don't freak out and imagine things." Lillian said to her softly.

"Thank you Lillian, I will use my magic on the day of the full moon which falls on the wolf festival which is in two days time form now." Queen Rosa said.

"I have an idea but I am not sure if it will work." Lillian told Rosa.

"You have an idea? What kind of idea?" Queen Rosa asked.

"I know if I ask you to tell Roen everything you told me, you wouldn't. So, I think we should expose Tamara at the Wolf festival." Lillian suggested.

"Your idea is good, but I don't think Roen will believe us. He trusts the Priestess and always do as she asked him to do, believe me Lillian, it will be hard, very hard to convince Roen that Tamara is not trustworthy." Queen Rosa told Lillian.

"Leave that to me my Queen, I have a good plan, and Roen will believe once he sees it with his own eyes." Lillian said confidently. She planned on revealing Rae's true identity and Sarah's together in the Wolf Festival, in that way Roen will believe that there is no last mermaid like Tamara had said and realized that he had been deceived. And Tharollin who is back, won't allow anything happen to his daughter or her friend.

A good perfect plan and she hope it works out.

"What are you planning?" Queen Rosa asked showing her interest.

"Something that will favour you and open Roen's eyes to see the true color of my sister. You know sometimes I wish Tamara and I are not sisters." Lillian answered. "I hope you and the King are soulmate, if truly you are his soulmate we have won number one war out of the 2."



For the first time since she got to Lillian's house, Rosa smiled. "I hope so too." She said and stood up to her feet. "Thank you for giving me a listening ear and not condemning me." She added still smiling.

Getting up to her feet also. "I am glad you open up to me, at least two heads are better than one." Lillian responded with a smile of her own. "Everything will work out fine."

"Let me start going before my son or his father start looking for me, I hope to see you on the day of the wolf festival." Queen Rosa said.

"Sure, I will see you there my Queen." Lillian said and made a portal opened in front of them. "This portal will lead you to your house since you said you can't perform magic yet." Lillian told Rosa.

"Thank you Lillian...for everything." Queen Rosa said and entered the portal which closes immediately behind her.

Lillian went towards her room.

\*\*\*\*

LUCIFER CAVE:

"Are you sure of what you are saying father?" Tharollin demanded in bewilderment.

"I won't lie to you son. My bones can do that, just give me the bones and you will see everyone in the Mer-clan Kingdom will arise once again." The water man said.

"Okay then father, I will give you the bones and pray it does work as you said, if not hell will be nothing compared to what I will do to you." Tharollin said.

"Don't worry about that my son, everything will be back the way it was before. You won't regret ever given me my bones son." The water man said.

Fool. Giving him the bones, Lucifer will be released.

The water man thought.

"I will bring you the bones before the end of the day father." Tharollin said and disappeared.

Relaxing in his sit, the water man started laughing.

\*\*\*\*

It was closing time in school and Rae quickly left for home after saying her goodbyes to Sarah and Jorkallun. For no reason she was just tired and needed a good sleep without anyone disturbing her.

Jorkallun as usual was escorting Sarah home.

"Will you be attending the Wolf festival?" Sarah asked.

"Yeah I will and you?" Jorkallun asked.

"Of course, I have never stepped my foot in the wolves festival before, so this year will be different because I now have friends, like Jason who is the Prince of all wolves, Rae my cousin and you, my lover." Sarah answered.

"You know the date the Wolf festival is fixed fall on full moon?"

"Yeah I know." Sarah replied remembering her conversation she had with her mother. She became worried.

"I know you are scared if you find out that I am not your soulmate." Jorkallun said speaking out her mind. "Don't worry about that Sarah, we are destined to be together."

"I hope so Jorkallun, I can't imagine my life without you in it." Sarah said sadly.

"On the day of the full moon, you will see that we are destined to be with each other." Jorkallun said and they fall into a comfortable silence with each other until they got to Sarah's house. Kissing her on her lips assuring her that everything will be okay, he left.

Sarah opened her door and saw that the house was empty, she quickly ran to her room to connect with her mother and tell her what had happened.

But she wasn't answering, trying it for sometime, and she wasn't picking, she went and took her bath after that, she lay down on her bed, she wasn't feeling hungry yet and slept off dreaming of the coming full moon.

\*\*\*

LILLIAN'S HOUSE:

Rae appeared in the sitting and saw her grandmother entering the sitting room. One look at her, Lillian knew something was wrong.

"What is it Rae?" Lillian asked worriedly.

"I don't know grandma, I just feel weak and I need some sleep urgently. I am just tired grandma and I don't know why." Rae said tiredly.

"Okay my dear, go to your room and rest." Lillian said and watches as Rae left her presence towards the stairs. "What of food, won't you at least digest something into your system."

"I don't feel like eating Grandma." Rae responded. She couldn't tell her grandmother that her body yearns for Jason. Not seeing Jason today has brought this sudden tiredness to her and only Jason's presence can make it go away.

She entered her room with tired eyes and lock her room door. She turns to go to her bed when she saw the white haired boy that has been haunting her laying in her bed as if he owns it.

Her tiredness was suddenly gone. His presence made her feel strong again.

"Jason where have you been?" Rae whispered asked. "Forget about that, what are you doing in my room? In my bed?"

"I came to see my girlfriend and I brought you some clothes you will have to start wearing plus the one you will wear to the Wolf festival, girly clothes which will soon be arriving at your doorstep at any moment from now." Jason answered.

\*\*\*

LUCIFER'S CAVE:

Tharollin appeared in the cave his father was in and saw him standing next to the rock throne.

"You came as you promised." The water man said and regarded Tharollin carefully. "Where is my bones, why is it not with you?" He asks.

"Relax father." Tharollin said and open his two palms together and the bones appeared in his hands, stretching it towards his father. "Here is your bones father." He said.

The water man couldn't believe his eyes, he quickly collected the bones from Tharollin outstretched palms.

"At long last my bones is in my hands once again. It will surely go to where it belongs." The water man said joyously as he held the bones in his chest and it entered his water chest, floating all around him.

"Remember your promise father to bring back the dead people." Tharollin remembered his father.

"Of course my son. Thank you for bringing me back my bones." The water man said and started moving about in joy.

In his state of happiness, the water man didn't see the little mischievous smile which appeared in Tharollin lips.

## Chapter 52

'The unreal is more powerful than the real. Because nothing is as perfect as you can imagine it. Because it's only intangible ideas, concepts, beliefs, fantasies that last. Stone crumbles. Wood rots. People, well, they die. But things as fragile as a thought, a dream, a legend, they can go on and on. If you can change the way people think. The way they see themselves. The way they see the world. You can change the way people live their lives. That's the only lasting thing you can create. Whatever you do, you need courage. Whatever course you decide upon, there is always someone to tell you that you are wrong. There are always difficulties arising that tempt you to believe your critics are right. To map out a course of action and follow it to an end requires some of the same courage that a soldier needs. Peace has its victories, but it takes brave men and women to win them. A star falls from the sky and into your hands. Then it seeps through your veins and swims inside your blood and becomes every part of you. And then you have to put it back into the sky. And it's the most painful thing you'll ever have to do and that you've ever done. But what's yours is yours. Whether it's up in the sky or here in your hands. And one day, it'll fall from the sky and hit you in the head real hard and at that time, you won't have to put it back in the sky again.'

♥♥♥♥ RESTORING AVONMORA'S SOUL ♥♥♥♥

"I am glad you now have your bones back father." Tharollin said interrupting the happy being. "Now it is your turn to keep to your own promise." He added.

"Don't worry dear son, I will do as I have promised once the rituals are complete. Bringing the dead Mer-clan is as easy as swallowing a water. So keep calm and you will see how everything goes back to how it was." The water man said.

"It has better be so father, I gave you your bones because I trust your words and I know you won't lie to your own son." Tharollin said to him. "But...if you didn't keep to your own bargain, then whatever happens to you just know you caused it." He added with threat to make it look real.

"Everything is perfectly in order now that I have my bones with me, I always keep my promise son." The water lied.

The bones are now with him, his master shall be set free and no one can stop them.

"When should I be expecting the result?" Tharollin asked.

"It takes time for me to complete the rituals before my bones would be fixed to it rightful places. So give me time Tharollin and I promise you won't regret ever giving me my bones back son." The water man said to him.

"Okay father, I will give you time. I have something I want to do in a few minutes time so I will leave you to start preparing yourself for the rituals." Tharollin said and started transforming into his dark smoke.

"Thank you son." The water man thanked and waited patiently until the smoke was completely gone from his cave before he whispered silently. "Thank you Raphael."

A big fool Tharollin is.

Why would he even believe his lies? How can he bring back the dead ones back to life when he is not the Creator of the universe? Tharollin is a fool who always think he is wise. And this proves he is not as wise as he claims.

He started his journey once again inside the deep cave going to meet his master, Lucifer.

\*\*\*\*

LILLIAN'S HOUSE:

"I have told you before that I am not going to wear any 'girly' clothes. What happen to my clothes I have in my wardrobe?" Rae asked Jason and answered her question. "Nothing happened to them, they suit my body."

"They hide your curves and I want you to be the center of everyone's eyes on the Wolf festival." Jason said and stood up from her bed going to meet Rae who was still standing close to her room door.

"You are my soulmate Rae and I want you to dress like the Queen you are meant to be everyday of our lives." Jason said reaching her and pulling her towards him.

Rae groaned. "Don't I have a say in this how do even put it 'the Queen you are meant to be'?" She asked.

"No." Jason answered and briefly closes his eyes and he opened them. "They are here." Hardly has he finished his statement when Rae and him heard a knock.

Jason smiled locking his eyes with Rae who did the same thing. The knock continue and Rae didn't move from her spot.

They heard Lillian opening the door and attending to whosoever it is at the door.

Soon afterwards they heard 'goodbye' and the sound of the door locking. The sound of Lillian's steps on the staircase was heard as she was heading to her room. Jason quickly kissed her lips and lifted up his head and peck her two cheeks and finally her forehead.

Rae blinked her eyes multiple times when she saw Jason at the window. She usually forgets his vampire speed.

"Please Rae for my sake, wear any one of the clothes tomorrow to school, I promise you they are all your size and you will like it." Jason said and changed into his phoenix bird form and flew out of the already open window.

Before Lillian will knock on the door, Rae opened it. Rae notice the different set of clothes flying in the air behind her grandmother as they followed Lillian in a row.

Lillian was surprised to see Rae standing at the door. She entered the room and Rae closes the door.

"I thought I heard a voice talking to you when I was coming." Lillian said and use her magic to open Rae's wardrobe and remove all her boyish clothes out of the wardrobe, still using her magic all the new clothes in the air started entering inside the wardrobe on after the other. Rae wouldn't deny the fact that the clothes, mostly gowns looks so beautiful, the long gowns looks like the ones a princess do wear. She was a princess, the princess of the witches or rather of the Mer-clan and she had never thought about buying any clothes that has a similar resemblance to a princess clothes. It has never crossed her mind once. "And I thought you said you are tired young lady and you needed your beauty sleep, why are you not in bed and still on the clothes you wore to school?" Lillian asked.

"Grandma my tiredness is suddenly gone immediately I entered my room and I was talking to myself." Rae answered. "Who brought the clothes for me?" She asked pretending not to know who brought it.

"Oh, it was Jason guards. He brought you those beautiful clothes." Lillian said with a smile. "Thank goodness he didn't give you the money for the clothes like I mistakenly did if not you are going to buy more of those your boyish clothes again. At least someone else sees what I saw and was able to take action in buying these beautiful set of clothes for you. And please do not reject the clothes that your Mate gave to you. Rejecting it means you are rejecting his love and if you really wants to make his wolf happy, you better put on one of the clothes to school tomorrow." Lillian added softly.

"I have heard you Grandma." Rae said. "I... will... try... to.. wear... one... of... it... tomorrow." She added slowly.

"That's good Rae, it's time for you to behave like the Princess you are meant to be."

"Oh not you again." Rae groaned remembering Jason's words as they sounded familiar to her.

Lillian not knowing what she meant by that just smiled and left the room. Rae's old boyish clothes following her behind. She was going to burn them, she didn't trust her granddaughter.

\*\*\*\*

KING ROEN'S PALACE:

Jason appeared in his room and was about to fall on his bed when a knock stopped him half way.

Groaning he went to open the door and was hoping it wasn't Paul and his other annoying cousins that have come to disturb him.

Opening the door he opened his mouth to insult who it is but stopped the words from coming out when he saw his mother.

"Mother, what is it?"

"You missed breakfast with your family this morning and disappeared- I know you didn't go to school today- we are about to have lunch and you are highly needed." Queen Rosa told her son.

"Must I be there?" Jason asked thinking of seeing his annoying cousins. "Can't you all eat without me?"

"Your father demands to see you there."

"He doesn't command me mother. I am not going, tell him I said so."

"Then if not for him come for me please. You know the festival is in two days time and your presence is needed in all activities, so please son come with me." Queen Rosa said softly touching Jason's hair tenderly.

"I am tired." Jason said grumpy. "But I will come with you mother."

Queen Rosa smiled. "We are in the banquet room. Take us there." She said.

Closing his room door once he was out, he locked his arms around his mother waist and fire wings came out of his back surrounding them both and they disappeared.

Appearing at the banquet room Rosa took a seat beside her husband. Jason remembered the night his father invited Rae here, the words of exchange and how he started fallen in love with the girl he hated the most when he first met her brought a smile to his handsome features.



Ignoring his cousins looks he greeted his father and his uncle with his aunt.

He sat down beside his mother.

He noticed three more empty seats beside him and wonder who their new visitors were. Facing his mother he couldn't whispered since everyone here is a werewolves and have super hearing abilities.

"Mother, who are the three empty seats for?" He asked and at the same time the door to the banquet room opened and an angelic female voice filled the air.

"It's for us handsome."

Jason cringe when he heard the voice and didn't turn to look at the new arrivals. To his dismay, the girl sat down beside him followed by her parents.

"Hi Jason, long time." The girl said in a sweet voice touching Jason's arms.

Jason turned to look at the girl touching his arms.

"Take your hands off me Now!"

The girl removed her hand with a smile. She was wearing a black long skirt with a black bra that looks like a tube which matches with the dark skirt she was wearing. One of her arms were covered with tattoos and some part of her body also.

And Jason finally glance into her eyes.

A long time ago Jason would have been awed by the beautiful angelic face but not anymore. Her dark green hair brought out her dark eyes out. Lolly's beauty couldn't be compared with hers. She was extremely beautiful. She was very beautiful and well admired by everyone and was Jason..... ex girlfriend and also the princess of Black Night Howl Pack. The third biggest and strongest Wolf kingdom.

"Why are they here mother? You didn't inform me about Vivian and her parents coming?" Jason demanded trying to hold his anger.

"It was your father's idea." Queen Rosa answered.

"Chill for me handsome, I heard of your broken engagement with Lolly and since you are now single I came here to see if we can rekindle our love we have for each other back." Vivian said seductively. "I told you once that your engagement with Lolly won't last, ta la la, it happened. We are meant to be together."

Paul, Jason cousin, was busy eye fucking the hot girl in his presence. Why do his stupid cousin brother always have the pretty girls to himself? He knows he was good looking, hell, he was handsome, but he is nothing compared to Jason's tall built handsome form.

Getting up to his feet angrily. "Thanks for the food." With that Jason left the banquet room, slamming the door hard behind him.

"Did I say anything bad here?" Vivian asked sweetly.

"No you didn't my dear." Roen replied her.

"Okay." Vivian said with a smile. "Since the Wolf festival is in two days time, I think I will use the one day remaining to pay him a visit in his school and use that opportunity to mock Lolly about her defeat."

\*\*\*\*

The twelve angles saluted Aaron and left the kingdom going to earth.

\*\*\*\*\*

Night came faster and when Rae opened her eyes she saw it was dark already. She was tired and hungry. Going down the stairs she heard voices.

Entering the sitting room, she saw her grandmother with her father discussing.

"Look who has finally decided to join us, the princess is finally awake." Tharollin said playfully.

"What are you doing here father?" Rae asked going to sit in her favorite seat.

"Well I came to tell you that I will be going to meet Micheal for what we discussed." Tharollin said and cut off Rae before she will talk. "And no you are not coming with me, you are staying here and I will gist you everything that happens. And I promise to bring her with me. And please do not argue with me, I don't have the strength for that." He added.

"I don't even feel like arguing right now, just bring me good news." Rae said.

"Sure, I will take my leave, I told myself I should wait and tell you." Tharollin said.

"You did well father, now off go." Rae said.

Tharollin nodded his head and disappeared immediately.

"What were you both discussing?" Lillian asked not understanding father and daughter conversation.

"It's my father and I little secret, you will get to know it soon." Raa replied. "I am greatly famished grandmother." She said changing the topic.

\*\*\*\*\*

Appearing at the Gate of Darkness, he met Micheal there.

"You came earlier than you said." Micheal told the Devil's son.

"Yeah I did, do you have any problem with that?"

"Not at all." Micheal answer. "Let's go then."

Bringing out his wings Micheal flew off towards the night sky.

Tharollin black wings came out and he left the ground following Micheal making sure the angel sees him.

30 minutes later.....

Micheal landed in front of a big dark cave and Tharollin landed beside him.

Without uttering a word to each other they both entered the cave at the same time.

Micheal skin shone brightly, bringing light to the darkness that surrounds them.

Entering inside another cave, Tharollin saw a lady sitting beside his Mate, it was exactly the same scent he scented that was with Michael when he discovered Avonmora's body was gone. He quickly left Micheal side and rushed to meet Avonmora's cold body. Removing the stone that held the soul of his beloved in one of the skulls head. He brought it near her mouth, opened her mouth gentle and the soul inside the stone magically left it's old home and entered the body where it rightfully belongs.

Avonmora suddenly gasps out loudly taking a deep breath into her body before she started breathing normal, going back to sleep, although her eyes were still closed.

"Who is he?" Lydia asked Micheal going to meet the angel.

"Tharollin and also my granddaughter's father." Micheal answer with disdain.

"Tharollin? The one who had opened the Gate of Darkness?" Lydia asked with surprise.

"Yes Lydia the very one."

Going to meet Tharollin.

"We have not been properly introduced to ourselves. I am Lydia, Selena's elder sister which that dumb angel over there dumped years ago. My sister then gave birth to Avonmora which you stupidly left in the hands of the others like a coward that you are." Lydia said trying to intimidate Tharollin into making him feel guilty like she always did to Michael.

Thralloin remove his gaze on his Mate and turned to regard the lady before him slowly.

"Okay...so as you have told me all these now, should I ask for your forgiveness oh great one?" Tharollin asked and bend his bum bum sideways in a mockery bow. "Or bow down to you because you are Avonmora aunt? Haha keep dreaming of it you this dehydration tiny fish."

## Chapter 53

'Here's to the crazy ones. The misfits. The rebels. The troublemakers. The round pegs in the square holes. The ones who see things differently. They're not fond of rules. And they have no respect for the status quo. You can quote them, disagree with them, glorify or vilify them. About the only thing you can't do is ignore them. Because they change things. They push the human race forward. And while some may see them as the crazy ones, we see genius. Because the people who are crazy enough to think they can change the world, are the ones who do. People think a soul mate is your perfect fit, and that's what everyone wants. But a true soul mate is a mirror, the person who shows you everything that is holding you back, the person who brings you to your own attention so you can change your life. A true soul mate is probably the most important person you'll ever meet, because they tear down your walls and smack you awake. But to live with a soul mate forever? Nah. Too painful. Soul mates, they come into your life just to reveal another layer of yourself to you, and then leave. A soul mate's purpose is to shake you up, tear apart your ego a little bit, show you your obstacles and addictions, break your heart open so new light can get in, make you so desperate and out of control that you have to transform your life, then introduce you to your spiritual master.'

♥♥♥♥ FREEING LUCIFER ♥♥♥♥

Micheal place his hand on his lips trying to hide his laugh but couldn't, he burst out laughing.

"What's so funny Michael?" Lydia asked turning to face Micheal in anger.

"Nothing Lydia, just laughing that he has also given you a nickname like he did to me." Michael answered. "If you are this angry I wonder how you will feel when you meet my granddaughter who happens to be like her father." He added.

Lydia hisses loudly then turn to face the devil's son. "I can see you lack manners Tharollin, but what do I expect when the blood of darkness runs in your stupid vein you arrogant fool." She told him.

Pretending to touch his heart. "Ouch that was painful tiny fish." He said and smiled. "Well I have been called that name a number of times so I am used to it." He added.

"You are so full of yourself." Lydia said with clenched teeth. "That is why every Mer-clan was Killed because of your foolishness."

"Don't you think I know that already? Anyway thanks for reminding me." Tharollin said and then let out a deep sigh. "I know you are doing all these for your sister and her daughter which happens to be my Mate, but that does not mean you will be rubbing our mistakes on our faces every single time Lydia. Let me tell you there are no mistakes in what I did. The events we bring upon ourselves, no matter how unpleasant, are necessary in order to learn what we need to

learn; whatever steps we take, they're necessary to reach the places we've chosen to go. And that is why I am trying to see if I could rectify my path with the support of you and of course her father, Michael, and my Mate." Tharollin said after his long speech leaving Lydia and Michael surprised.

"That was a very long speech and I am glad it's coming out from you." Michael said to Tharollin with a nod.

"I don't normally say this, so be glad you are hearing it from me." Tharollin said and take a deep breath. "I... am... sorry." He added as if the very words burns his throat.

If Micheal and Lydia weren't super-beings, they wouldn't have heard that tiny whispered from Tharollin.

Lydia smiled and so did Micheal.

"Never thought I would hear those words from you Tharollin after all the insults." Michael said.

"Please don't spoil the mood in this cave right now." Tharollin told Michael with a warning glance which Michael snorted.

"Apology accepted Tharollin, so about my niece, when will she wake up?" Lydia asked changing the topic. Going over to where Avonmora is, she touched her nose and feels her breath, not much though, but it was there.

Gesturing to his Mate body. "I have put back her soul and it will take some time for her body to accept the soul. Because it has been long she breathed with her body. So I am guessing three to six days or not more than that before she gets used to her soul and her body will accept it." Tharollin explained to her. "After that she will wake up from her deep slumber."

"Okay, so she still needs a few more days for her to fully wake up, right?" Micheal asked.

"My mouth wasn't filled with food when I explained that part birdman." Tharollin answered the Angel.

Micheal ignored him staring at his daughter.

"Will you stay here until she wakes up?" Lydia asked facing Tharollin.

"Yes but I intend to attend my friend's invitation to the Wolf festival." Tharollin answered. "He is wolf."

"You have a friend and he is a wolf?" Lydia asked surprised.

"Yeah I have a friend who is a wolf. Is there a problem with that?" Tharollin demanded.

"Nothing I am just surprised." Lydia answered.

Michael who had been quiet but following their conversation suddenly felt a tug on his heart as it moves faster. Gabriel... He touched it and felt the eyes of Tharollin on him, maybe he also heard it.

"Please, I need to go and check something outside, I will be back soon." Micheal said and left the cave without waiting for a response.

His wings came out and he flew till he was out of the dark cave. He stopped and looked up in the sky, there were stars shining so bright and beautiful in the sky and for a moment Micheal forgot himself until his eyes landed on a star.

He flew upwards towards the brightest star he saw in the sky.

Approaching it, he saw Gabriel, the star that looks so small from afar became large and Gabriel was sitting on it, his wings stretching out from his back.

That was their signal to each other whenever one is in trouble or have a message to tell.

"Brother, I hope there is no problem?" Micheal asked as soon as he sat down opposite Gabriel.

"There is a big problem which involves you." Gabriel reply.

"Me? What do you mean?"

"The King, your brother has sent 12 Angels, the one specially trained by Raphael before his sudden disappearance. He sent them after you to kill you once they see you with Selena and bring the goddess to him. I think he has his eyes on your lover and maybe that is why he prevented you from getting close to her fifty thousand years ago (50,000). I said let me inform you what I overheard him and the angels discussed." Gabriel said his message.

"Thank you my friend, you did good by informing me this on time. I will watch my back from now henceforth." Michael said grateful.

"Let me start going before the King notice my absence and don't forget to call on me whenever you need my help." Gabriel said and flew upwards disappearing in the clouds.

Michael left the star and flew downwards towards the cave. He was very vigilant of his surroundings.

\*\*\*\*\*

Lucifer Cave:

Reaching the pit where Lucifer was.

"Master, I am here once again, I come with good news." The water man said.

It was quiet until the sounds of chains was heard and the head of the ugly beast was seen.

"What is it Gar, I hope this good news of yours is really worthy coming up here." Lucifer said.

"Master the fool has given me the bones you seek." The water man (Gar) started removing the bones one after the other from his water body and placing it on the ground next to the beast head.

Lucifer razor teeth showed fully when he grin immediately he saw the bones.

"Yes, these are the bones." He said bringing out his two claws hands and taking the bones. Feeling them. "These are the bones I yearn for." He added.

"At last our hard work for the thousand years paid off master." Water man (Gar) said with a smile.

"Yes, it surely did. Now since we no longer have the pure soul with us, I will need a replacement." Lucifer said.

"A replacement? You need someone who will replace you in there?" Water man said gesturing to the pit.

"Exactly, just bring me someone here, someone of higher status." Lucifer replied him.

"I think I know who I can use to replace you." Water man (Gar) said thinking of a particular person who will easily fall for his trap.

"Then get me the person here immediately." Lucifer ordered as he took the bones with him back inside the pit.

Water man (Gar) disappeared.

\*\*\*\*

Taloc Hidden Place:



"Father, we are ready to go home." Lolly soft voice drifted round the empty room. She was standing at the door of the room when she whispered those words. Opening the door, she stepped out and was back at Taloc reading cave.

Taloc who wasn't sleeping heard it. Waking up his Mate gently, he told her what he heard.

"Then let's go." Tamara told him getting up from the bed together with Taloc.

Tamara first step out followed closely by Taloc, they saw their child already waiting for them.

"Hope you had enough rest my child?" Taloc asked softly.

"Yes father." Lolly answered with a smile.

"What about your vampire friend?" Taloc asked and at the same time the door to Dean's room appeared, stepping out of the door to meet them was the good-looking vampire.

"I am ready, I rested well. Thank you for your hospitality Mr Taloc, I hope someday to return the favour." Dean told the Tribird.

"I don't need your favour you are offering to me in the near future because there is no one who is as strong as I am." Taloc boasted, his green eyes showed a little bit of green light which brings out his green hair out even more.

"Sorry I said that." Dean apologies.

"Can we start going father I don't want to miss another day in school." Lolly said.

"With what we walked when coming here I doubt if you can make it to school." Dean told Lolly.

"And who said we are following the same path again?" Lolly demanded.

"...."

"Let's forget about the vampire response and focus more on your mission. Bring Rae and Jason's blood to me so that I can break off their Mate connection." Taloc said immediately Dean opened his mouth to give his response.

"Thanks father, I know you always help me out and this one...is a piece of cake to you father." Lolly said with a smile.

"More than a piece of cake my darling child. Just count Jason as yours when the two bloods are presented to me."

Taloc made a portal opened and he went over to where his daughter stood, kissed her forehead tenderly.

"If you cannot get me their bloods do let me know."

"Sure father." Lolly said happily and entered the portal.

Dean quickly entered the portal before Taloc would open his mouth.

Kissing Tamara fully on her lips he dispatch their lips and look down on Tamara with love.

"The demons I am devouring are remaining few, once I have devoured them all my beast will like to come down to pay a visit to the people." Taloc told Tamara. "Unless you have another way in keeping my beast sane."

"I will try to see if I could find more demons for you to devour or something else. It's not yet time for you to reveal yourself to the people."

"Whatever you wish Tamara. I will see you again."

Tamara smile and entered the portal which closed.

Taloc went back to his seat, using his magic to lift out an old worn out book titled : Breaking the Mate connection. He had found the book at the courtyard of the Druids after killing them all. Some of its pages has torn and burnt but it was still readable. Whoever wrote it, possibly the one who had broken his Mate bond with his first soulmate, didn't know when it fell off from his or her hands.

He opened the few pages that was remaining and stopped when he got to a page.

He smiled to himself. This is what he is looking for.

The Breaking Bond.

\*\*\*\*\*

The Realm of the Gods:

Water man (Gar) appeared in Hermes room and the god was surprised to see him.

"What are you doing here again? Do you want Ares or Zeus to know about your appearance? You are going to put me in trouble if the rest of the gods knows about you." Hermes whispered-yelled.

"You are the only one here Hermes, so you are safe." Water man (Gar) responded.

"I have told you to always give a sign when coming. Ares just left here a few minutes ago." Hermes said in heated voice.

"Sorry, I won't do that again."

"Why are you here?"

"I came here to tell you something." Water man replied.

"I am all ears."

"I finally have my bones. My son Tharollin gave it to me a few minutes ago and I couldn't wait to show you."

"Where is it?" Hermes demanded his face lighting up like christmas bulb.

"It's back in my cave, follow me and let me show it to you."

"Fine, lead the way." Hermes said and disappeared after his friend has disappeared.

---

Lucifer Cave:

Both appeared the same time inside the cave and the water man began to lead the way into the deepest path of the cave where the pit is.

Hermes followed him.

"Where is the bones my friend?"

"I kept it somewhere inside the cave just in case my son has a change of heart." The water man (Gar) lied.

"Good, with it we can use it to oppose the gods and the rest super-creatures."

They arrived at the pit which was so dark inside.

"I kept the bones inside the pit." The water man said pointing at the pit.

Hermes quickly went over to the pit and bend his head to see if the bones are there.

At that moment, the water being shoved Hermes hard and he fell into the pit. He moved backwards immediately.

Hermes realise this was a trap and tried to disappear but to his dismay he found out he couldn't. He couldn't scream out for help. He was helpless.

He felt claws around him pulling him deeper into the pit.

The water man didn't have to wait long as LUCIFER came out of the pit. The chains binding his legs and hands each were broken.

The only chain that wasn't broken was the one round his neck.

"At long last. I AM FREE." Lucifer said trying to move his right leg and he found out he couldn't move.

## Chapter 54

'If you can keep your head when all about you  
Are losing theirs and blaming it on you,  
If you can trust yourself when all men doubt you,  
But make allowance for their doubting too;

If you can wait and not be tired by waiting,  
Or being lied about, don't deal in lies,  
Or being hated, don't give way to hating,  
And yet don't look too good, nor talk too wise

If you can dream - and not make dreams your master;  
If you can think - and not make thoughts your aim;  
If you can meet with Triumph and Disaster  
And treat those two impostors just the same;

If you can bear to hear the truth you've spoken  
Twisted by knaves to make a trap for fools,  
Or watch the things you gave your life to, broken,  
And stoop and build 'em up with worn-out tools

If you can make one heap of all your winnings  
And risk it on one turn of pitch-and-toss,  
And lose, and start again at your beginnings  
And never breathe a word about your loss;

If you can force your heart and nerve and sinew  
To serve your turn long after they are gone,  
And so hold on when there is nothing in you  
Except the will which says to them: 'Hold on!'

If you can talk with crowds and keep your virtue,  
Or walk with Kings - nor lose the common touch,  
If neither foes nor loving friends can hurt you,  
If all men count with you, but none too much;

If you can fill the unforgiving minute  
With sixty seconds' worth of distance run,  
Yours is the Earth and everything that's in it,  
And - which is more - you'll be a Man, my son!

♥♥♥♥ DEAN'S DANGEROUS PLAN ♥♥♥♥

Lucifer tried to move again but alas, he couldn't. He tried to move backwards towards the pit and was surprised to see he could move freely. He tried once again to move forward but couldn't.

"What's going on master? Why aren't you moving?" Water man (Gar) question as he watches with wide eyes seeing his master struggling to move his leg.

"I can't move forward at all Gar." Lucifer replied still trying to see if he could move any of his body but all to no avail. "What is going on!" He bellowed in anger.

"I don't know master. Raphael gave me the bones which are complete and you said with your mouth it was the real bones." The water man (Gar) told him.

"Yes I know I said that. The bones are real and that is why I am confused right now." Lucifer said pushing his beastly body to move forward which didn't move.

The voice of Hermes is still heard in the pit as he shouted for help. Lucifer made a huge piece of rock from the cave above them to fall and cover the pit, concealing the voice of Hermes. The cave became quiet once again saved for the voice of Gar and Lucifer

It was at that moment Gar saw the chain around his master's neck.

"Master I think the reason why you can't move any of your body right now is because of that chain around your neck." Gar told him pointing out the chain.

Lucifer felt around his neck touching the chain with his claws. He wasn't aware of the chain in his neck all this while. He tried to yanked it off his neck but he couldn't. It was bound to him.

"Why would the chain still be in your neck and the rest of the chains binding you were broken master?" Gar asked.

"I don't have an answer to that question Gar. I made sure I arranged the bones to a complete human skeleton form and place it on the chains that bind me." Lucifer answered.

"B-but you cannot stay like this now that you are free master." Gar said.

"I know Gar, I will have to come up with somethin-" Lucifer stopped mid way as a thought suddenly occurred to him. "Let me see if this will work." He said to himself.

"What will work master?" Gar question

"This." Lucifer replied and disappeared.

He reappeared behind the back of Gar.

"It worked!" Lucifer gushed out in happiness.

Gar quickly turned when he heard his master voice behind his back.

"You can't walk but you can teleport yourself anywhere master?" Gar asked.

"Apparently yes. I shall get used to this and find a way to break off the only chain that binds me." Lucifer said and slowly the beast transformed into a good-looking man who was naked without clothes. The chain is still round his human neck but was hidden by his dark long hair.

"I am now the way I was before." Lucifer said admiring his skin he hasn't seen for many years.

"Yes master."

"Gar, I will give you back your body. To fight the coming battle with me you need your real body and not in this stupid water form you are." Lucifer told Gar.

"Thank you master." Gar exclaimed with excitement.

"But, the place I had hidden your body is far. You will come with me to have it. You have served me well for many years during my imprisonment."

"Thank you once again master." Gar thanked. "I am ready to follow you wherever you are going." He added.

"Good. Then follow me closely to avoid getting lost. We are going for a long journey and as soon as we return, great war will start once again." Lucifer said and disappeared afterwards.

Gar following suit.

\*\*\*\*\*

Coming out of the portal which opened in her cave, she saw her daughter and Dean already waiting for her.

"I will see you tomorrow my Priestess." Dean said with a bow. "I beg to take my leave now." He added.

"Of course Prince Dean." Tamara said.

"I will have to follow him mother, we will see you tomorrow in the morning before I go to school." Lolly told her mother.

"No problem my dear, I will be waiting." Tamara replied.

Touching Dean's shoulders gently, they disperse into thin air.

---

Dean saw himself in Lolly's room once again.

"Thank you for the trip Lolly." Dean said.

"You are welcome. Don't forget to come here tomorrow morning." Lolly reminded him.

"I will." Dean said and made to leave then stopped. "What about the King of Amazon's Warrior, won't he asked me questions once he sees me since we were not in the room for almost two days?" He asked.

"Don't worry about that Dean. Leave Lolly's father to me. I know how to handle him. Follow the room window instead of the door." Lolly answered. She will use the normal forgetfulness spells she normally use on the Amazon King to make him forget about her absence.

Dean nodded his head and walked towards the window, opened the huge glass window.

"I will see you tomorrow." Dean told her and jumped outside her two storey building window. Landing on the ground like a gallant warrior. He ran with his vampire speed to his kingdom that night.

Reaching the palace, he ran straight to his room and was about entering it when a voice stopped him.

"Where have you been son?" King Darin asked his son. "We have been searching everywhere for you since you left this palace two nights ago." He added.

"Sorry father, I was thinking about what you and mother told me. I have to clear my head, it's not easy knowing the woman I fell in love with is in love with another man." Dean told his father, lying.

"I have told you Dean that the gods will one day give you your own soulmate. Leave those two lovers alone and the gods shall surprise you." King Darin said feeling pity for his son.

"When will that be father?" Dean asked pretending he wasn't thinking of Rae. "Honestly father, I can't wait to see my Mate." He added.

"You will. You know King Roen was once in love with the Mer-Queen, Avonmora, they dated and he hoped and prayed to the gods to make them Mate. His prayers weren't granted rather



Avonmora met her real soulmate, Tharollin, who was once the Demon King. And later on Roen found his mate which is Rosa. What I am trying to say my son is that the gods never make any mistakes. If Jason and Rae are meant to be and are true Mate, then nothing can penetrate their love and even if someone does penetrate their love and breaks them apart, their separation won't last long because unlike the first Tribird who was just a Hellhound, Fairy and Elf, Jason is the only Millennium Wolf." King Darin said and tap his son left shoulder slightly. "Don't forget that my son." He left and Dean realise he was alone. Opening his room door he entered his room.

'And I don't care about that father, before Jason would even think of rescuing Rae from me, she will be pregnant with my child.' Dean thought to himself going straight to his bed to sleep.

\*\*\*\*\*

The Following day.

Lillian was in the kitchen preparing breakfast for Rae when she heard the clearing of throat behind her. Though she knew who it was but wondered how she didn't hear her granddaughter coming down from the stairs.

"Good morning grandmother." Rae greeted.

Turning round to answer her greetings, her eyes nearly fell off from their sockets.

Standing before her was a totally different Rae.

Her short skimpy black dress suit her body. She wore a matching black knee boots. She looked so lovely in that dress, Jason sure knows how to select beautiful clothes.

"Why are you putting on those jackets dear?" Lillian asked once she noticed the jean blue jacket Rae was putting on.

"I feel so naked in this dress so I have to put on the jacket to cover my open shoulders. The rest of the clothes are shorter than this. I don't think I will be wearing this dress to school and I will wear Jason's clothes Instead of this." Rae answered looking down on her dress.

Lillian started laughing putting some fried meat together with the soup broth and gave it to Rae who collected it and started eating immediately without sitting down. After eating her food, she thanked Lillian and touched her bracelet, a portal opened.

"Take care and tell Jason I thank him for the clothes he bought for you." Lillian told Rae who snorted at the mention of Jason and entered the portal.

---

Stepping out of the portal. She felt all the eyes of the students in the Gate on her. Ignoring their intense look. She entered the school compound. It was as if the students were seeing the sun for the first time as they stared at Rae. Some of the boys whistle seeing the curves of Rae who shoot a warning look towards their direction. She march towards the class where she knows Jason will be. Her face filled with anger.

Kicking the door to the class in anger with her left foot, it opened and she entered inside using her magic to close the door making sure it slam hard.

And what worsen her anger was the fact that the white haired boy who was sitting on the desk and was smiling at her.

"What.Did.I.Do.To.You?" Rae asked as she walked towards her boyfriend with each words.

Getting up to his feet. "Is that the thank you I was expecting from you?" Jason asked.

Stopping in his front. "I don't like this dress. I prefer my old clothes and not these exposed skin things you called clothes."

"Rae my love, the dress suit you. I am so arouse just staring at you. And..." Jason stopped stretching out his hand to loosen Rae's hair that she did in ponytail. "You look more beautiful when you let your hair down my love." Jason said.

"Don't change the topic Jason." Rae said with clenched teeth and Jason bend his head to kiss her on her lips.

"I am not my love. I just want to change your look. I love your boyish look but I want to see how you look like in girls clothes and I must say, I am not disappointed." He said holding Rae in her waist.

"I don't like this dress, you will come to my house and convince my grandmother to allow you take back those clothes which you brought and tell her to return my old clothes."

"But..." Jason got interrupted when the door to the classroom opened and Vivian head was seen.

"Hello my handsome." Vivian said and her smiling face change into anger when she saw Rae beside. "Is this your new girlfriend Jason?"

"What are you doing here Vivian?" Jason asked shaking in anger. "I thought I made myself clearly yesterday night that I am not interested in you."

Laughing out as she stepped fully into the class.

Rae eyes stared at the great beauty in front of her who is more beautiful than Lolly. The dress she was putting on looks so transparent that one would see what she wore. Her dark green hair suits her and Rae was happy she was putting on this short skimpy dress today.

And she just called her Jason 'handsome'.

"I want you out of my class Vivian, as you can see I am with my lover."

"You know fully well that I will be coming here that is why you pick up a random girl to make me feel jealous of you once I see you both together." Vivian said with a smile. "I am not jealous one bit Jason, this won't make me hate you. I know deep down inside of you.....you still love me and will want to be with me and not with that ugly girl with you." She added. She lied about the ugly part though. The girl with Jason looks beautiful in as much as she hates to admit it.

"Vivian do not call my girlfriend a random girl." Jason said with a warning. "I don't want to get rid of you but you are forcing my hands."

"Jason my handsome, you can't get rid of me that easily." Vivian said and moved closer to Jason.

"But I can get rid of you if you dare lay your hands or hair on him." Rae told Vivian slowly. "Before I count one to 5 you'd better find your way out of this class and from this school or else I will change your face."

"You can't do anything to me fool. Do you know who I am?" Vivian asked.

"One." Rae started counting.

"Oh, you've started counting and you think you can scare me with that mere threats of yours girl?"

"Two."

Jason went to sit down to watch the fight that will commence soon. Vivian doesn't really know who Rae is.

"Listen to me girl, Jason and I have lovely past together and if you know what is good for you.... you better stay out of my path because you won't like what I will do to you."

"Three." Rae said nodding her head.

"I don't know what to say to you again, but I can assure you that Jason is not yours."

"Four." Rae counted removing her jacket and flinging it to one corner of the classroom.

"What is wrong with you girl? If you count five what do you want to do to me? Beat me?" Vivian laughed out. "You can try and see yourself fail."

"Five." Rae counted finish. "I gave you five chances for you to leave and you refused too."

"When it comes to my Jason, I don't run away girl." Vivian said to her looking at Jason seductively.

"I was hoping you will say that, girl." Rae told Vivian and without warning bounce on her.

10 Minutes Later.....

Rae has helped Vivian to cut off part of her long hair with her hands. Her clothes were torn and her body was dirty.

Dragging Vivian by what is left by her remaining hair as she walked towards the class door, opening it, it was then she noticed the presence of the whole students who were Watching the fight through the Window. They all quickly cleared the way for her as she dragged the girl out of the school compound to the school gate. she pushed the girl outside the gate.

"STAY AWAY FROM JASON HAVE I MADE MYSELF CLEAR?" Rae demanded.

Vivian nodded her head in fear.

"Good girl."

Rae left her going back to the class.

"Jason I have a change of heart by the clothes you bought. I think I will be wearing them henceforth." Rae said as soon as the door was closed behind her.

\*\*\*\*

Greeting the Amazon King, Dean quickly climbed the stairs going straight to Lolly's room.

"Sorry for the delay."

"It's okay Dean, let's go." Lolly said and grabbed Dean hands, they disappeared and once again appeared in Tamara's cave.

"Now that we already know what to do to break the bond that binds Rae and Jason, we need a plan to carry it out without them getting any suspicious." Tamara told them immediately.

"I have been racking my head to see if I could get an idea to take their blood from them but couldn't come up with any ideas." Lolly said in frustration.

"I have a plan that I have been thinking since last night, a good one that will yield a good result." Dean's voice was heard quietly.

"And what plan do you have?" Tamara demanded.

"Simple. I was once friends with Rae and Lolly was once the lover of Jason. We have to pretend and ask them for forgiveness presenting them each a gift which is might be sharp and it will pierce their skin drawing out blood." Dean gave out his plan.

"Hmm." Lolly muse and smile. "That is a very good plan you have Dean, but how do we get to ask for their forgiveness because I for one can never beg Rae to forgive me." She added.

"And who told you that you will have to beg Rae? I am the one who is going to beg for her forgiveness and you are going to beg Jason. Somehow we have to separate the two of them to carry out our plan." Dean told them.

"That is a very nice idea. But, how do we get the two of them when Jason will be at alert?" Tamara asked.

"The Wolf festival of course. Every Kings and Queens in each Kingdoms will be invited along with their children. We will us that opportunity to collect their blood." Dean told them.

None of them even remembered Jorkallun and Sarah.

## Chapter 55

'Don't just learn, experience.  
Don't just read, absorb.  
Don't just change, transform.  
Don't just relate, advocate.  
Don't just promise, prove.  
Don't just criticize, encourage.  
Don't just think, ponder.  
Don't just take, give.  
Don't just see, feel.  
Don't just dream, do.  
Don't just hear, listen.  
Don't just talk, act.  
Don't just tell, show.  
Don't just exist, live.

Every day, think as you wake up, today I am fortunate to be alive, I have a precious human life, I am not going to waste it. I am going to use all my energies to develop myself, to expand my heart out to others; to achieve enlightenment for the benefit of all beings. I am going to have kind thoughts towards others, I am not going to get angry or think badly about others. I am going to benefit others as much as I can.'

### ♥♥♥♥ THE WEREWOLVES FESTIVAL (Part One) ♥♥♥♥

Dean's thoughts weren't on Jorkallun and Sarah as he said his plan, to them, those two are not his worries right now.

"That is a very good plan Dean." Lolly said.

"I know it is." Dean said with a smile.

"Now that everything is planned for tomorrow's festival, I hope it ends in our favor." Tamara said.

"It will mother." Lolly said to her mother. "I am running late for school, I will come back later to discuss something with you after school." She added and touched Dean's shoulder and they vanished leaving Tamara alone in her cave once again.

Reappearing once again in her room, they both left the room.

Kissing the Amazon's father on his cheek the same the dead Lolly normally do, they left the house together.

After they were few meters away from Lolly's house they stopped.

"See you tomorrow at the Wolf festival." Dean said and ran with his Vampire speed towards his kingdom.

Lolly vanished and appear few feet away from her school.

She entered the school without delay.

\*\*\*\*

DRAGON KINGDOM:

"Good morning Father. I was expecting since last night from the meeting you had with the elders dragons and you didn't showed up." Jorkallun said as soon as his father had transformed from his huge red dragon to his fully clothed human form.

He had come home the previous day and asked the guards where his father is since he had searched around the house and couldn't find him.

Now it's morning and he had prepared for his school, he decided to wait a little bit and see if his father will come home early. He came home.

"Sorry son, I couldn't leave the meeting yet when we haven't discussed the kingdom affairs finished." King Vermitrax said to his son.

"Okay, I am glad you are now here. I want to ask you something important father." Jorkallun said.

"And what do you want to ask me son?" King Vermitrax ask.

"About Selena the goddess. You said only her bloodline can summon her if she has one, right father?"

"Yes of course son. But as far as I know, Selena doesn't have a bloodline apart from Avonmora who is still frozen in front of the Gate of Darkness." King Vermitrax replied his son.

"I know that father." Jorkallun said with a sigh. "But let's assume Avonmora has a daughter, what can she use in summoning her grandmother?" He asked.

"She will use her blood to summon the mermaid goddess. And the best way to do that is by going to the Mer-clan, to the cave her statue is and summon her there." King Vermitrax explained to his son.

"But father how can she use her blood to summon her grandmother?" Jorkallun asked.

"She will know what to say when she gets there. The bloodline of Selena will know what to do after he or she has cut somewhere in their hands and allow the blood to flow." King Vermitrax answered.

"Thank you so much father for your kind explanation." Jorkallun said with a smile.

"My pleasure son. Now run off to school before you get very late." Vermitrax told his son and he kissed his forehead gently.

Jorkallun gave enough space between himself and his father and turned into his red dragon, he flew upwards.

Vermitrax watches his son dragon form until he was out of sight.

\*\*\*\*\*

ROEN'S PALACE:

Vivian ignored the looks sent in her way by the guards as she entered the palace ground. She started walking with speed as she walked straight to her parent's room and was lucky enough to see her mother and father when she opened the door.

Queen Latifah and King Jasper gasped out loud when they saw the state of their daughter.

"What happened to you my daughter?" Queen Latifah demanded immediately. She couldn't believe the girl standing right in front of them is their daughter who left the palace some few minutes ago looking so elegant.

Vivian started crying. "She caused it mother. She beat me up." She said still crying.

"Who beat you up?" King Jasper asked.

"I don't know her name but she was with Jason when I came to see him, she insulted me and started beating me up all because Jason told her he doesn't love her again and rather he loves me." Vivian lied through her teeth as she explained to her parent's what happened.

"You mean to say a girl in the school beat you up and transform your beauty into something else just because Jason didn't love her?" Queen Latifah asked and her daughter nodded. "Are you sure the girl is not Lolly in particular and you are hiding it from us?"

"I would be the first person to know if she is Lolly, mother." Vivian replied. "The girl who did this to me isn't Lolly. I think Jason told her to do so to humiliate me in front of those stupid students." She added in tears.



"Why then didn't you stop her? You are the best Wolf fight in our Kingdom why will you allow such a girl beat you up to this ugly state you are in?" King Jasper asked.

"I tried to defend myself father but I am no match for her. Father please speak on my behalf to Jason's father to punish that evil girl." Vivian said.

"I will do that as soon as he comes out from his meeting, you know tomorrow is the Wolf festival and he won't want any distraction." King Jasper told his daughter.

"Thank you father." Vivian said her teary face lighting up a little bit like christmas light.

"Vivian, go and cut your hair to the level the said girl had put the rest of your hair into. It will grow back again dear." Queen Latifah told her daughter.

"Your mother is right dear, ask one of your maids to cut the long ones out so that all your hair will be the same level." King Jasper said in support of what his wife had told their daughter.

"Thank you father, thank you mother, I will do as you have said." Vivian said and left the room to cut her remaining long dark green hair.

\*\*\*\*

Sarah tried once again to reach her mother through their contact mirror but Lydia wasn't picking.

'I hope grandpa hasn't found out about mother secret mission.' Sarah thought to herself as she prepares for school.

She left for her school hoping her grandfather hasn't found out yet and believing it was something else that was delaying her mother from picking up.

\*\*\*\*

THE SUPERNATURAL SCHOOL:

"That is what I would love you to say." Jason said to Rae standing up to his feet and went to meet her at the door.

Turned her Beck and saw some students still lingering around the class window, opening the door once again and sent them a deadly look.

The students disappeared quickly into their classes.

Rae closed the door back again and turn her head only to see Jason's face close to hers.

"All the beautiful girls who want you are always wearing all those revealing clothes which is making me have a change of heart about those clothes you bought for me." Rae told Jason. "So I will be wearing them from now henceforth."

"I am glad you are now seeing things." Jason said placing his hands on her hip. "But you should know that you are the most beautiful amongst them all."

"Are you trying to flatter me Mr Jason?" Rae asked playfully as she placed her hands on his shoulders drawing imaginary circles on his shoulder blades.

"Yes my love. Have I told you how beautiful and sexy you look in this dress?" Jason asked.

"No." Rae answered with a straight face.

"Okay sorry my fair lady but you look absolutely breathtaking in your dress and I want to kiss you badly Miss Rae and you know I am a good son who always asks before he does things."

"Just kiss me Jason and stop blabbing." Rae said interrupting his rant.

Jason didn't need to be told twice as he bent his head and kissed her.

He wrapped his strong arms around her waist, his hands going down to her thighs and in one swift move made Rae wrap her legs around him, her dress lifting higher at the process. In another movement he pressed Rae's back against the wall beside the class door.

Rae was all but moaning with such a pleasure to be surrounded by him. It was so erotic, so powerful, so lustful.

He thrust his denim-covered sex to her own covered one in one, powerful movement. They both groaned at the feeling. Rae couldn't help but moan into the kiss when she felt his hard-on at her own already wet sex. Although it was with clothes and everything, it made her wonder how it could be without any clothes on any of them.

Removing his lips from hers he went straight to her neck and started licking the place Wolves mark their Mates for eternity.

Rae grabbed his hair, closing her eyes when he started thrusting again and again, like they were actually having sex, only they weren't. His lips kissed and sucked her neck, and even bit the mark place erotically, making Rae to moan once again. He grabbed her thighs so hard and practically fucked her through the clothes very hard, showing how much he wants her, just like she wants him.

Nothing matters to them at that moment as they were completely lost in each other's world.

Rae keeps moaning loudly as Jason keeps thrusting into her.

A knock sounded on the door halting and bringing them back to this world.

"Who is it?" Jason growled loudly to whoever it is that has the guts to interrupt them.

"It's Jorkallun." The dragon replied. "And you and Rae should keep it down, this whole building was shaking with whatever you are doing which is none of my business. And I want to talk to my little sister." He added.

Releasing his hold on her thighs, he waited until she had smoothly her dress.

Jorkallun was a very lucky guy, he should count himself lucky that they were friends. He opened the door with a deep scowl.

"I hope I didn't interrupt anything you both were doing?" Jorkallun asked in pretence as he and Sarah stepped inside the class.

"State what brings you here and leave immediately." Jason told his friend.

"We came to see Rae and not you lover boy." Sarah said going to meet a blushing Rae standing next to her.

"Whatever." Jason said and faces his friend. "What is it you want to discuss with her?"

"About the information I was asked to carry on." Jorkallun replied.

"Which is?" Jason demanded.

"It is not my place to tell, ask your Mate." Jorkallun answer.

"Rae..." Jason started to say but was cut off by Rae.

"Yesterday you weren't in school so my father paid a visit scary the whole school. I got to find out that Sarah here is my cousin sister." Rae said quickly.

"Your father was here and Sarah is your cousin also?"

"Yes Jason, I found out I have a father recently who is the King of demons."

"That means Tharollin is your father who opened the Gate? Which means you are the devil's child" Jason asked in surprise. "And he was here in school?"

"Yeah, do you have a problem with that?" Rae demanded with one eye closing and the other open.

"No, I have no problem with that. I am surprised you are related to Tharollin. Remind me never to get you angry." Jason replied.

"In as much as I would have loved to listen to your argument, I brought some good news which involves how to summon your grandmother Rae." Jorkallun announced.

"Really? How?" Rae asked.

"My father told me if a bloodline wants to summon the mermaid goddess he or she will have to use their blood in front of the statue of the goddess. And only the bloodline will know what to do next after cut her skin." Jorkallun explained.

"Okay. When do you want us to go and summon her?" Rae asked.

"After the Wolf festival." Sarah answered.

"That's perfect, we will meet in the Mer-clan in two days time before noon." Rae said.

"That is all sis, you can carry on with what you and Jason was doing. My love and I are out." Jorkallun said.

Sarah didn't need to be told twice as she left Rae's to meet her lover. They left the classroom.

"You will have to introduce me to your father Rae."

"Sure Jason." Rae responded. "Don't get scared when you meet him."

"As if." Jason said. "Now go back to your seat, I have a lot to teach you. I want you to be ahead of your classmates."

\*\*\*\*

Michael returned to the cave.

"Where have you been throughout the night Michael?" Lydia demanded immediately she saw the angel.

"Sorry, I was just thinking and didn't realize it was morning." Michael said and Tharollin snorted loudly. He couldn't tell them his brother had sent twelve angels to kill him and probably them that is why he has been guarding the cave all through the night.

"Is that it or are you hiding something from us?" Tharollin asked with a grin.

"It is none of your business if I am hiding anything devil." Michael said and snarled back at him.

"Whatever Michael." Tharollin said with a smirk. "Now that you are here I have to check on my daughter and start preparing myself for the wolf festival tomorrow. So please look after my mate for me" Tharollin added walking towards Michael.

"I don't know even know what Avonmora saw in you and why they made you her mate. Seriously speaking you are not meant for each other..."

"No one is moving until we say so." A voice interrupted Michael. The twelve angels flew inside the cave and surrounded them.

Michael's heart flip when he heard those words. How could he not hear them before they got inside the cave. His daughter and Lydia lives are now at stake because of him.

Tharollin will have to save himself.

If he hasn't responded to Tharollin none of these would have happened. He would have detected their presence.

"And who are you to tell me Avonmora and I aren't meant for each other?" Tharollin asked Michael crossing his arms.

Michael and Lydia turned to stare at him with wide eyes. Didn't he see they were surrounded? Or are they the only one now seeing the Angels?.

"We are surrounded Tharollin in case you don't know. I will answer you once we are out of this mess." Michael answered Tharollin with clenched teeth.

"I hope so Micheal because I have so many ways to tell you why I and Avonmora are made for each other." Tharollin said and turned to face the angel who spoke. "Jack, Seth, John, Mark, Liam, Noah William, James, Oliver, Benjamin, Elijah, Lucas. If you really love your life you better go back to whoever that sent you in one piece." Tharollin said calling out each of the twelve Angels names using his head to point out the one he calls out his name.

Michael was speechless.

"How did you know our names so well devil?" Oliver demanded. "Did Michael tell you?"

"No one told me Oliver, I know all your names." Tharollin answered.

"Tharollin, how do you know their names and who bears it?" Michael asked.

"You better answer him Devil cause you are going down with him with the lady with you, after that we are taking the young lady laying down behind you to meet our King who loves her." James said to Tharollin thinking Avonmora is Selena.

"I will like to see you try and take my Mate away from here James." Tharollin said looking angrily at James and having a thousands thought of killing him differently.

"Tharollin have you met them before?" Michael asked. How could the devil son know all the names of the twelve angels with ease.

"Don't compare yourself to us Michael. You are with darkness and we are light." William said.

Tharollin laughed at that. "Indeed I can see the light in the twelve of you." He said smiling. "I don't want to kill any one of you so if you really love your life you disappear from here right now." He added as the smile was replaced with his deadly glare.

"You can't tell us what to do devil. We are here to take the sleeping lady with us and not even you can stop us." Jack said.

"Do you have any atom of idea who you are talking to Jack or should remind you?" Tharollin ask.

"And I don't care who you are devil. The lady belongs to our King, he owns her and not any one of you here in this cav-" Jack didn't complete his words when his head rolled on the cave floor.

Jack headless body fell with a loud thud to the ground, dead.

Michael eyes couldn't believe what he just saw.

The remaining eleven angels draw out their swords ready to fight.

"Who are you demon?" Seth demanded.

"Who are you Tharollin and how did you know to kill us is through out neck?" Michael asked. Tharollin is hiding something.

"My real name is not Tharollin. I am Rapheal and I am still warning the eleven of you to leave here if you don't want to die like Jack."

Michael's eyes widen in shock.

## Chapter 56

'How long are you going to wait before you demand the best for yourself and in no instance bypass the discriminations of reason? You have been given the principles that you ought to endorse, and you have endorsed them. What kind of teacher, then, are you still waiting for in order to refer your self-improvement to him? You are no longer a boy, but a full-grown man. If you are careless and lazy now and keep putting things off and always deferring the day after which you will attend to yourself, you will not notice that you are making no progress, but you will live and die as someone quite ordinary.

From now on, then, resolve to live as a grown-up who is making progress, and make whatever you think best a law that you never set aside. And whenever you encounter anything that is difficult or pleasurable, or highly or lowly regarded, remember that the contest is now: you are at the Olympic Games, you cannot wait any longer, and that your progress is wrecked or preserved by a single day and a single event. That is how Socrates fulfilled himself by attending to nothing except reason in everything he encountered. And you, although you are not yet a Socrates, should live as someone who at least wants to be a Socrates.'

### ♥♥♥♥ THE WEREWOLVES FESTIVAL (Part Two) ♥♥♥♥

Lydia wasn't getting it. She glances at a shock face of Micheal who was staring at Tharollin and wondered why he became shocked by what Tharollin had revealed.

"Impossible." Michael whispered to himself.

"We can argue about that later Micheal not now." Tharollin told him.

"Are you trying to tell us that you are Raphael, the missing Angel that disappeared thousands of years ago?" Liam demanded and shook his head sideways. "We are not fools and can never be. If truly you are Raphael then why are you surrounded by darkness?" He added as he asked the smiling demon in front of him.

"It's none of my business if you believe it or not Liam but I won't say this again. Go back and tell Aaron that Rapheal interferes with whatever issue he has with his brother." Tharollin began to say trying hard to convince the angels before him to go back. He pointed at the still body of Avonmora. "And the lady behind us isn't Selena, she is my Mate, my soulmate. Should I spell out the words for you to get it?" He added.

"Whatever you say doesn't concern us, only our King will tell us if she is the right person or not." John said. "And if you don't want to be blinded by our shiny lights, I suggest you hand the sleeping lady over there to us peacefully and then come with us to meet the King for killing one of us." John added staring heatedly at Tharollin.

"Then come and take her if you have the guts." Tharollin told John, his face showing his darkness. His two black horns came out of his forehead. "Come and take her."

"You don't scare us one bit Devil's son." William said and charge at him. He flew upwards reaching the Cave ceiling and flew downwards very fast, his sword raised up in the air and he pointed it towards Tharollin.

Tharollin shook his head sideways sadly and waited until the last minute when William has nearly reached him before he magically made his dark sword appeared, driving his sword straight into William heart.

Stopping the angel mid-air.

He moved his sword to his left very fast, as William body was still hanging in the sword. Using his right leg to kick William out of his sword, he slashed his sword to the right and it was followed by the head of William. His headless body landing on top of Jack's own dead body.

Facing the remaining ten Angels. "You are making me break my policy. I only give out warnings once and you are forcing me to repeat myself." Tharollin told them. "Leave here in one piece and go back to meet Aaron and tell him you failed to carry out his assignment." He added.

"Never." Seth growled out the words and rushed at him.

He disappeared before he could reach Tharollin and appeared right behind his back with his sword coming down to hit his target.

Micheal wanted to warn Tharollin about Seth when he saw the Demon blocking the attack with his sword without turning to face Seth.

"I taught you that move Seth." Tharollin said facing the angel as he drove his right hand into Seth's heart, also using his sword to cut off the neck of Seth in one straight move.

Using one of his legs, he kick the dead Seth towards the two bodies of Jack and William.

"Let's attack him together." John shouted.

Micheal couldn't watch the fight without helping Tharollin, he had brought them here without his knowledge and will not sit back and watch Tharollin fight them all by himself.

He made his little magic bag appear and was about to bring out his sword from the bag to join Tharollin in the fight when the said person voice halted him.

"I won't allow you to fight them. You are my father in-law to be so I need to show you I am worthy of being your daughter mate regardless of our past." Tharollin said.



The first time since he came to the human realm, Micheal didn't argue.

"So ...who is next to die?"

The remaining nine Angels charge at him together.

He was faster, swifter and was dodging every sword sent in his way.

He killed the Angels one after the other by cutting off their necks which puts an end to their existence.

Noah was the only Angel left and he dropped his sword quickly on the floor when Tharollin faced him.

"I won't kill you because you are going back to meet your King and deliver my message to him." Tharollin said to the only Angel left.

Noah nodded his head. With what he had seen so far, this man really fought like Raphael.

But how come he has darkness in him remains a very big mystery to Noah.

"Tell him not to come after Micheal again and also he should stay in his lane or else.....he won't like what I will do to him." Tharollin told him. "Tell him Raphael gave him the message. Go now before I change my mind in killing you."

Noah didn't need to be told twice, he fled.

Tharollin walked towards the dead bodies of the Angels, using his dark power to lift up the dead bodies and their heads in the air.

"I tried to warn them to leave but they didn't listen to me. Forgive me my Creator for taking the lives of your creation." Tharollin spoke slowly bowing his head in grief. "May you accept their souls as they come to you." So saying, the eleven dead bodies of the angels disperse in the air.

"What is going on Tharollin, why do you refer to yourself as Raphael?" Lydia asked still confused.

"That's because he is Raphael, the messenger of the Creator who went missing thousands of years ago and was never seen." Michael answered Lydia.

"But you've met him before and you brought him here yourself, how come you couldn't recognise him as Raphael?" Lydia asked again staring at the silent man in front of them.

"He covers his face so no Angel knows his true identity that is why I am surprised. He truly fought like Raphael who went missing years ago." Micheal replied to her and went over to meet Tharollin. "I know how you feel right now Raphael, but you shouldn't let that weight you down. They choose to ignore your warnings so you only kill them for self defense." Michael told Tharollin.

Tharollin turn his head to stare at the angel beside him. "Thank you Michael."

"You are welcome, so can you tell me how you became this?" Micheal said gesturing to the whole body of Tharollin.

"It was a long time ago, I was just strolling around, I was in this realm when I met a man laying down on the road bleeding profusely from his various wounds. I went to help him which happens to be a very big mistake. I fainted and when I woke up, I saw myself like this. I couldn't remember who I was. I asked the man who was with me to tell me my name and he told me I am Tharollin and I am also his son. I couldn't remember anything." Tharollin told him.

"So how do you remember?" Lydia asks this time around as she was listening to the story.

"I remembered when I came out from the Gate of Darkness. My memories returned when I stepped out from the Gate." Tharollin answered.

"But you could have unfreeze Avonmora when you saw her at the front of the Gate or didn't you know who she is to you?" Lydia asked again and Micheal nodded his head supporting the mermaid.

"I could have freed my Mate when I saw her there but I couldn't. My powers are in darkness and it would not free her if I try to, rather I will hurt her more. That is why I was surprised when I saw her soul in that crystal stone after my daughter had revealed to me who it belongs to." Tharollin told them.

"So what did you bring out from the Gate of Darkness?" Micheal asked.

"A skeleton, the bones which my fake father said belongs to him and I gave him the bones."

"You did what!?" Lydia realise the shout was coming from her.

"Yes I gave him the complete bones but I took one and replace it with a fake bone, don't worry." Tharollin said as she saw the look Micheal and Lydia were throwing at him. "The bones I hold is the main one and with it I can use it to control him into doing my bidding. I need to know what he is planning and why he really needs the bones. And most importantly, why he lied to me." He added.

"Your plan has better work." Lydia said.

"I hope so too. I can't control myself from killing, the darkness is not only inside me, I am the darkness and Rae also has a part of it and I am looking for a way to get it out of her." He added quietly.

"Light thinks it travels faster than anything, but it is wrong. No matter how fast light travels, it finds darkness has already gotten there first, and is waiting for it. There are darkneses in life and there are lights, and you are one of the lights, the light of all lights Raphael." Micheal said softly. "You should find that light Raphael, it's still there, inside of you, waiting for you to reach out for it."

"It's not as easy as you think." Tharollin said with a smile. "I have to go now. You should look for another Cave and hide my Mate and yourselves in there. Noah might be back with Aaron." Tharollin added and change into his dark smoke, disperse into thin air.

Micheal carried Avonmora and followed Lydia out of the cave going towards another one.

\*\*\*

The two messengers of the King were seen kneeling down before King Roen with scrolls in each of their hands.

"Give the Kings and Queens my invitation especially the Queen of the fairies, Flora and her husband the King of globins. And make sure the scroll reach the King of Davea. A Davea is a creature of shadow, a special type of demon, which is periodically used by others demons, similarly to hellhounds. And also to the Vampire King and the Witch Queen. I am calling out their names respectively because they will say they didn't see any invitation." King Roen told them.

"Yes my King." They said in unison.

"You may leave." King Roen ordered.

The two messengers left his presence to carry out his orders.

\*\*\*\*

Lolly heard what had happened to Vivian through her Amazon friends when they sat down to eat in the school cafeteria. But her mind wasn't on their conversation, her mind was on what will happen tomorrow at the Wolf Festival.

As she stares at the four people sitting a few seats away from her, especially on the girl who was holding Jason's arms, she couldn't wait for tomorrow to come.

---

School closed and Jason left with Rae leaving Jorkallun and Sarah as they told the two that they wanted to play a prank on Lillian.

"I have been trying to reach my mother but she isn't picking, I don't know if something bad had happened to her." Sarah said as she and her boyfriend begin the long walk home.

"I am sure something is keeping her, don't worry my love your mother is doing fine and she will contact you when she is through with what she is doing." Jorkallun told Sarah.

"I hope so, I can't wait to hear her voice and tell her what has been happening." Sarah said.

\*\*\*\*

Appearing behind Lillian who was preparing lunch for her granddaughter.

Jason and Rae both scream out loud making Lillian jumped up in fear.

They started laughing at her face as Lillian touched her heart that was moving faster.

"We scared her." They said together in-between their laughter.

"What was that prank for?" Lillian ask sending a death glare to Jason who stopping laughing immediately.

"Rae I will see you tomorrow at the festival. Deal with your grandmother alone. Jason is out." Jason said and with a wave of his hand he wasn't there with them.

This wasn't what they planned. Rae thought.

"Sorry grandmother, we just wanted to see you get scared."

Lillian opened her mouth to reprimand Rae when Tharollin made his presence known.

"Father good to see you. It has been a long time since I last saw you." Rae said in enthusiasm silently thanking her father for coming at the right time.

"Long time? I left here yesterday and...."

"Thanks for coming father, see you and grandmother soon." Rae interrupted her father and quickly left their presence climbing the stairs and going straight to her room.

Tharollin turned his confused eyes on Lillian.

"What's going on with her?" He asked. "And her clothes, she is trying to impress someone with her dress?"

"Her boyfriend brought the clothes for her and she and her lover boy who was here some minutes ago played a prank on me and you just came in time." Lillian answer.

"I would have loved to see that again." Tharollin said smiling.

"It's not happening." Lillian told him. "What are you doing here, I thought you said you have an urgent matter you are attending?"

"I was, but my friend invited me over to his Wolf festival and I really need to see my daughter's boyfriend."

"He is a nincompoop, you won't like him." Lillian said referring to Jason.

"I love nincompoops Lillian." Tharollin respond. "So I will be staying with you and my daughter till tomorrow."

"Okay that's fine by me." Lillian told him. "Please look after the food while I go and prepare the guest room for you."

"No problem but be fast about it I don't keep my eyes in one place for long."

\*\*\*\*

The Following Morning...

D-Day Of The Werewolves Festival:

All Wolves troop to the Palace of King Roen.

The large Palace ground where decorated with fine layers of colours.

The servants directed everyone coming to his or her seat.

The Kings and Queens of the supernaturals were already seated in their seats.

Rae and Lillian arrives at the festival and the servants took Lillian to one of the empty seats beside the rest of the Queens.

Rae told the servant with her to leave her that she will find her way around by herself. Her father had told them that he will come later on.

Her hair was let down and her dark dress leaves her shoulders uncovered, instead it's supported around her neck and flows down into a beautiful draped neckline. It's a snug fit which makes the dress both enjoyable to wear and look at. Her arms have been left uncovered. A good choice too, as her skin and the color of the dress form a perfect combination. The dress waist is wide, but it's a slim fit. A bow has been wrapped around her and rests gently on her belly. Below the waist the dress widens and has a symmetric draped style. The dress reaches well above her ankles and is the same length all around.

She looked stunning in her choice of clothes.

She glanced around but couldn't find Jason.

As she walked past some of the wolves that were her age mate they all stared at her.

Ignoring their looks she continued to look for Jason, Sarah or Jorkallun.

She was walking past a hallway near the south Gate when a hand suddenly grabbed her wrist and dragged her with a force into empty hallway.

Rae wasn't expecting it and wasn't expecting to see who used force to drag her into the empty hallway. Dean.

"Sorry for doing that, I have been calling you." Dean apologize for his roughness. His left hand was behind his back. "You look so beautiful Rae."

"Thank you. What do you want Dean?" Rae demanded not bothered they were alone. She has beaten the Vampire Prince before and she could do it again.

"I want us to talk but first, I brought you this." Dean said, his left hand he kept behind left his back and he brought out the Rose flowers he was hiding. "Please Rae accept accept my humble gift."

Collecting it from Dean with her left hand without a thought, she immediately drop the flowers to the ground as it pierced all her fingers.

Dean quickly brought out a dark handkerchief and used it in wiping out the blood before Rae would think of using her magic to heal the wounds.

"I am so sorry." Dean said in pretence as he bent down to pick the fallen flowers making sure he was holding where he hadn't placed the tiny needles in. He threw the flowers out of the Palace fence with his inhuman strength. He put the handkerchief back in his pocket.

He got what he wanted. Rae's blood is now with him.

Her wounds healed. "No problem, you said you wanted to talk to me."

"Yes Rae." Dean said and decided to shoot his shot to see if Rae would have a change of heart towards him.

"I am all ears my Prince."

"You know before I met you I was with Kate. But after that day when I saw you the first time, things happened and I saw myself falling for you." Dean said. He saw her going stiffer, tenser, but he has to tell her his feelings since Jason isn't with her. He continued. "I fall for you hard Rae and I am in love with you."

For a few moments, an awkward silence fell on them. Rae who wasn't looking at him raised her eyes to him and saw him regarding her with watchful eyes, with weariness, exasperation, and..... And longing.

No one spoke until Rae cleared her throat.

"I should have ignored you and Kate when I saw you at the Witches library. If I had, all this stupid feelings of yours won't have happened." Rae said.

"My feelings for you are not stupid. What I feel for you are not stupid."

"Dean, let me-"

"I fucking love you, Rae!" He roared, his voice ringing in the whole place. "I fucking fell in love with you."

Those words made Rae freeze and she looked at him with shock, horror, astonishment, hesitation. "You were not joking that very day you told Jason you love me, right?" Rae demanded and Dean nodded his head. She had thought he was bluffing and was annoying Jason.

"I wasn't joking that day." Dean replied and his face turned suddenly to desperate. "I love you." He said with a low voice that pricked Rae's memory for some reason, breathing hard and suddenly, she realized he caged her between himself and the wall, his arms on each side of her head, his face inches from hers. Rae felt uneasiness. She couldn't fight him. She has to talk sense into him.

"Dean..." She said, pain filling her chest at the fact that her heart belonged to someone else already.

And then, like he couldn't control himself anymore, he kissed her.

It came as a shock to Rae when she felt the lips of someone who isn't Jason on hers.

She pushed the Vampire Prince with all her strength. "Don't ever do that."

Dean was hurt.

"Rae don't you love me? Please I beg you in the name of the gods, become mine. I love you so much Rae that I can do anything for you."

"Dean, I am in love with Jason. Let it sink into your head."

"Rae-"

"I don't love you like that Dean and I don't think I will ever will. You are a great guy and a friend, am sure you will find someone who will adore you back just like you deserve, but I am not that someone Dean." Rae said. "I will take my leave now." She added and left the hallway without looking back going to join the party.

'I will have you all to myself Rae.' Dean thought possessive as he stares at Rae retreating back lustful.

He has her blood and nothing can separate them now.

He turned to leave the hallway to search for Lolly when a hand touched his shoulders halting his movement.

He turned around and saw a beautiful lady the same height with his Rae who smiled at him lovely.

"Yes who are you and what can I do for you?" Dean asked harshly.

"My name is Sarah, Rae's cousin. And I want you to give me that handkerchief you put in your pocket, gently." Sarah answered still smiling at him.



## Chapter 57

'In the sky there are always answers and explanations for everything: every pain, every suffering, joy and confusion. For what it's worth: it's never too late or, in my case, too early to be whoever you want to be. There's no time limit, stop whenever you want. You can change or stay the same, there are no rules to this thing. We can make the best or the worst of it. I hope you make the best of it. And I hope you see things that startle you. I hope you feel things you never felt before. I hope you meet people with a different point of view. I hope you live a life you're proud of. If you find that you're not, I hope you have the courage to start all over again. The timeless in you is aware of life's timelessness. And knows that yesterday is but today's memory and tomorrow is today's dream.'

### ♥♥♥♥ THE WEREWOLVES FESTIVAL (Part Three) ♥♥♥♥

Dean tried to hide his shock look but failed woefully at that.

"I don't get what you are trying to say Sarah or whatever you call yourself." Dean said to her, how he managed to keep cool remains a mystery to Dean. "Go your way."

"You really know what I am saying and I am not going anywhere." Sarah said her smiling face changing into a deep frown. "I saw everything that happened and even when you forcibly kissed her. So I am saying with a low voice since we are in the festival and I don't want to draw eyes on us, give me that handkerchief you put inside your pocket after you used it to clean Rae's blood." Sarah added.

"How is it your business if I cleaned Rae's blood with my handkerchief and put it in my pocket?" Dean demanded. "It is not your handkerchief but mine and I will do with it whatever I like."

"You are forcing my hands and you won't like the outcome of it when I release my hands." Sarah warned him.

"You can not walk in here, stop me and demand for my handkerchief that is not yours." Dean argued.

"If your hands are really clean then why are you so tense when I ask for the handkerchief? You should have given it to me immediately when I demanded for it if you don't have a hidden agenda." Sarah told him going to meet him merely touching his body with hers. "I saw the way you look at my cousin. I don't know you and haven't met you before but I know evil when I see one. And that one is standing in front of me." She added without a wave of her eyes as she looked deeply into his eyes.

"Do you know who you are speaking too Sarah?" Dean asked trying to sound intimidating.

"Do you have any atom of idea who I am Vampire boy?" Sarah asked him and answered her question. "No you don't because if you do you would have been on your knees talking to me, not standing. Anyway." She said touching his shoulders softly. "I don't want to ruin your expensive attire you wore for you, kindly hand over the handkerchief to me and I will let you leave."

"Make me then." Dean said thinking he will beat the girl in his presence.

Sarah smiled. "I was really hoping you will say that." She said and swung her fist in his jaw hard. The sound of cracking of bones could be heard as the punch turn the Vampire Prince face to the left side of the hallway.

He was surprised and quickly turned his head to Sarah. He spit out blood from his mouth.

The trail of blood coming out from his mouth ceased and his broken jaw rejoined immediately.

Prince Dean grew angry and tried to punch the lady in front of him but Sarah successful dodge the fast coming fist.

"I was also expecting that?" Sarah chip in sweetly and uses her right knee to hit his dick hard. Dean rolled on the floor groaning in serious pain.

Sarah bend down and insert her right hand into his left pockets and brought out the handkerchief.

"You should have given me the handkerchief when I ask of it nicely from you but no, you tried to be a macho man to me." Sarah told him and slap him hard on his cheek. "And that is for kissing my cousin without her permission." She added with a smile and left him holding the handkerchief tightly.

Dean just lay on the floor staring at the ceiling. His life sucks but he will not give up on having Rae to himself no matter what it takes.

\*\*\*\*

Rae was nearing the palace library when she saw Jason. She halted in her movements as she feeds her eyes on a very handsome Jason who was all dressed in white attire. Mere looking at him she couldn't help herself but get wet. She could not wait to be in his arms.

Her fantasies about him were interrupted when she saw Vivian with him. Her hair has been cut which kinda look good on her. She saw Vivian walking towards her with a smirk on her lips.

"Good luck trying to convince him." Vivian said in a singing tone as she walked past Rae.

It was then Rae saw his face, it was kind of frosty and distant. She had a bad feeling about it and wondered what Vivian might have told her boyfriend. She closed the distance between them and he turned tensed. Yeah, Vivian told Jason something.

Her lips were still slightly puffy from where Dean had kissed her, and from his looks, his white eyes checked her lips and that was when she guess what Vivian might have told him.

Did she saw their kiss or heard their conversation? Or she probably heard both but decided to tell Jason about the kiss only. But for what?

"Jason..." she started wanting to explain to him everything and to tell him what really happened.

"Vivian has been here to tell me something very interesting." Jason said in a silky, calm, low and deep voice. Which means he is trying to control his anger. She was safe as long as his eyes remains white.

"Jason.." Rae tried again but he cut her off.

"She saw you and Dean kissing, Rae." Jason said crossing his arms. "What's the meaning of this?"

How dare Vivian to try and ruin her life...

Rae thought with gritted teeth. "You just turned pissed off because of something Vivian told you?" She asked him in disbelief.

Jason stiff posture didn't change, his eyes awfully cool and nonchalant. "Why did you let him kiss you Rae?"

Rae groaned. "I didn't let him!" She snapped in anger. "I was searching for you since I didn't see you in the midst of the crowds when he dragged me to the empty hallway suddenly to beg me to love him and he kissed me Jason! I then shoved him and told him never to try such because I am in love with you. He kissed me against my consent Jason!"

Suddenly Jason was right in front of her face, his body caging her own with the simple facts he was lots of feet taller than her. He cupped her face in his big warm hands and penetrated her dark eyes with his piercing white ones. "Don't ever let someone who's not me kiss you again Rae." He said in a very low, very rough voice. His eyes narrowed. "I am not joking about it. Another guy trying to kiss you- I won't be so relent."

Rae snorted loudly. He thought he was relent now? He seriously had a weird way of showing it. "Jason I promise you it was a one-off." Rae said. "You have to believe me and in me. You can't turn all alpha-male on me because of hearsay."

His expression didn't soften, didn't become as relent as he claimed to be, and instead he kissed her. Hard. Rough. Wild.

His lips were suddenly gone. "You had to know it was coming when we became soulmates." He said in a low, growly voice. "I am older than you Rae and I thank the gods for choosing you as mine. I am glad you are mine. I hate the fact that someone who is not me touched you and kiss you. I hate to think about it. Dean should really mind the way he touched my Mate. I am not going to just let you go into another man's hands without a fight. I am not going to be easy. We are both stubborn and you will have to learn how to deal with me as I will also do so to you, okay my love?"

Rae rolled her eyes. "And what will accompany that statement?"

"I am sorry my love." Jason answered with a smile.

"For...?" Rae draw.

"For not giving you a listening ear. Are you now happy my love?"

Rae placed her hand under the chin as she started stroking her imaginary beards.

"Forgiven dear." Rae said after a while of thinking. "Just for you to know how you look, you look so handsome in your white Jean and shirt, I wish to get you naked right now."

"Are you sure? Because I will gladly do so." Jason said.

"Forget I said that and let's go to and Join the others." Rae told him and they left together towards the festival.

Vivian who was hiding somewhere within the walls of the library couldn't believe her eyes. Her plans to get Rae and Jason fought just proved abortive.

She left her hiding place after some minutes has passed and walk towards the festival.

---

Entering the big Palace ground where the festival is being held. Jason cousins came over to meet them.

"Hello beautiful, Jason never told me he has a beautiful friend like you. I am Paul Jason cousin." Paul introduced himself to Rae. "It's my pleasure to meet with a beauty like you."

"It's not a pleasure to meet you." Rae said sweetly.

"Don't mind him, my name is Ryan and you are really beautiful and also I am Jason cousin."  
Ryan, another of Jason's cousin introduced himself.

"Hello Ryan." Rae said politely.

"I am Samson and Jason cousin, your dress brought out the beauty of your eyes." Samson said.

Rae frown.

"And I am Georgia and this is my brother George, we are twins and also Jason cousins." The only beautiful female in their midst introduced herself and her twin brother.

"I get it...you are all Jason's cousins."

"Yup we are, and like I have said before, you are beautiful. What's your name pretty?" Paul asked ignoring the growling coming from Jason.

"I am Rae and please go and flirt with another girl because I am not interested. I am taken." Rae told Paul.

"By who then pretty Rae?" Paul asked.

"By me." Jason answered growling out the words. "She is with me, she is my soulmate."

Paul laughed hard. "Your soulmate? May I remind you that Tribird doesn't have a mate for life?" Paul said remembering Jason what he heard.

"I am connected to her and she is my soulmate weather you believe it or not." Jason said with gritted teeth.

"And even if what you said about the Tribird not having a mate is true, I on the other hand has a soulmate connection with him. So he is my Mate." Rae told Paul.

"Whatever, let's go." Paul told his brothers who left.

Georgia didn't follow them. "I am so sorry for their behavior." She apologizes on her brother's behalf.

"And she is the only one who I love amongst my cousins." Jason told Rae.

"Well apologies accepted. I am Rae and you are?" Rae ask pretending not to have remembered she introduced herself.

"Georgia." The beautiful girl replied going along.

At that moment, Jorkallun and Sarah walked over to them.

Sarah and Rae both hugged each other.

"You look so beautiful and sexy in your blue gown Sarah." Rae compliment with a smile.

"And you don't look bad yourself Rae. Actually I think you are hot." Sarah told her.

"Aww thanks sis. Georgia this is my sister, Sarah and my big brother from another mother Jorkallun. Sarah and Jorkallun this is Georgia, Jason's cousin." Rae said.

"Nice to meet you Georgia." Sarah said with a smile.

"Me too." Georgia respond and wave at Jorkallun, she knows the dragon boy.

"I hate their guts." Jason said all of a sudden.

"Who?" Rae demanded.

"My cousins over there." Jason said staring at his cousins. Rae followed his eyes and saw how they were creating a scene with the servants carrying some food to meet their guests. They were blocking their entrance and couldn't allow the servants to pass. No one paid any attention to them.

"If you feel this way, imagine I that grow up with them in the same house." Georgia said to Jaso.  
"I sometimes wish someone could put them in check."

Rae could still see some servants carrying food coming to meet the ones Paul his brothers are holding down.

"I would have done something about this, but they are my cousins and I don't want them to be disgraced." Jason said after a while.

"I can help if you'd like." Rae said, perking up. "Things will be done in double time."

Before they would ask her what she meant by that. She shouted to the boys. "Oi! You lazy, overgrown halfwits! Get your scrawny arses into gear and collect the food from the servants and give it to the guests. NOW!" Rae yelled out. She normally doesn't use this tone on anyone, ever. It was very scary.

The noises around stops as they stared at her, like everyone and everything still as they all turned to look at her directions. Everyone's eyes were on her and she narrowed her eyes at Jason's cousins. "Are you deaf as well as stupid?"

"Holy shit, I knew she was nuts but that is just scary." She heard Jason mutter to Jorkallun, who had kind of paled.

"Hop to it!" She shouted, planting her hands on her hips. "We don't have all day! Ryan and Samson, get the tables ready for the food. Paul, collect all the food from the servants and give it to our guests-devour one crumb and I'll have your dick made into mats. George, show Paul where our beloved Kings and Queens are sitting so he can bring their share of food to them. And Sarah, next lesson: How to command a group of people, even as incompetent as these fools."

## Chapter 58

'The biggest wall you have to climb is the one you build in your mind: Never let your mind talk you out of your dreams, trick you into giving up. Never let your mind become the greatest obstacle to success. To get your mind on the right track, the rest will follow. When a new day begins, dare to smile gratefully. When there is darkness, dare to be the first to shine a light. When there is injustice, dare to be the first to condemn it. When something seems difficult, dare to do it anyway. When life seems to beat you down, dare to fight back. When there seems to be no hope, dare to find some. When you're feeling tired, dare to keep going. When times are tough, dare to be tougher. When love hurts you, dare to love again. When someone is hurting, dare to help them heal. When another is lost, dare to help them find the way. When a friend falls, dare to be the first to extend a hand. When you cross paths with another, dare to make them smile. When you feel great, dare to help someone else feel great too. When the day has ended, dare to feel as you've done your best.

Dare to be the best you can –

At all times, Dare to be!"

♥♥♥♥ THE WEREWOLVES FESTIVAL (Part Four) ♥♥♥♥

Sarah nodded her head beside Rae. Though she is a strong Fight in the Great River of Nile but she isn't like Rae who always speak her mind regardless of her situation. And that is why she likes Rae.

"I wasn't carrying water in my mouth when I called out your names and what to do!" Rae shouted again and the four boys didn't know when their legs move to carry out her orders.

Every guest watches in amazement as a girl commanded the four boys who are from the second strongest Wolf Kingdom into doing her will.

Rae smiled and faces Sarah. "While everyone else only has to think of this one thing, you have to think about every single aspect going on and be prepared for every problem you may encounter, like the four idiots right now. Put fear in them and they will obey your every command." Rae paused when there was a loud bang and a string of curses as Ryan dropped a table on Samson leg mistakenly.

"Don't be such a sissy, Ryan!" Rae all but bellowed. "Samson, you prat, if by any chance you break one of the tables, you'll walk back all the way to your kingdom to get another one and pay for a new one in replace of the old one!" Samson looked at Rae with a small smirk, pleased at getting Ryan, it faded to an obedient nod as he took note of her expression. "Don't any of you morons think that I can't watch you all at once either! Paul! What'd I say about eating the food?"



Paul actually spat out the tempting fried chicken and retreated behind George for cover. Oh yes, Rae smiled, she was really good at this. This may not be exactly what most people aim to be good at but...well, she never said she was normal did she?

Giving each of the four boys don't-make-me-come-over-there look and looked back at Jason, ignoring the whispers going on around them as they watched the four boys work.

She purposely did not look towards where the kings and Queens are seated, she was avoiding the death-glaring look of one particular person and could feel the heat of her stares on her back, her grandmother.

"I have never in my entire life, met such imbecilic fools as these guys. And I know some really bad ones." She muttered, not really paying attention to her surroundings. "I swear, I'm going to wring some necks soon. Seriously, I'll beat the crap out of you all before the days over. Five minutes to finish setting everything up. Five minutes boys."

Georgia raised her eyebrows and smirked. "I'm envying you right about now Rae. All I can do is yell at them and make them feel bad. But you, you can yell at them and even threaten to beat them, you're lucky."

Rae snorted. "You could always kick them in the nuts. Doesn't matter who they are, so long as their male, that's bound to hurt like hell. No blow is more fatal than that." She told Georgia with a wink.

Sarah, Georgia and she all laughed out.

"Hello Rae, we meet again." King Roen voice froze their laugh.

"Good day your majesty?" They all greeted except Jason who nodded his head towards his father.

"Father."

King Roen grinned at his son before landing his gaze on Rae. "I find it kind of hard not to listen to that commanding tone of yours Rae as you are a witch. Are you sure there's nothing you want to tell us? Me? Little secret?"

Rae tried not to fall over. Her heart rate skyrocketed, her breathing became irregular and her eyes shot to Jason, Jorkallun and Sarah, half in panic and half accusingly. But they shook their heads ever so slightly. Rae swallowed her panic and fought to regain her calm and answer King Roen.

"Whatever gave you the idea that there was a secret?" Rae said, in what she hoped was a confused, non caring tone.

King Roen burst out laughing. "You really remind me of someone." He said thinking of his old lover Avonmora. "Come with me, I would love to have you sit beside me with the rest of the Queens Rae." King Roen said.

"I would have loved to go with you Sire, but I cannot go without my friends and of course without Jason's permission."

Their were loud gasps as Rae politely turned down the King's offer.

Jason smiled at her and placed his hands on her hips in the presence of everyone, bringing her closer to his body.

"She will sit with me father." Jason told his father and proceed to kiss Rae on her hair.

"Okay then." King Roen said after watching his son for a minute. "You and your friends can sit with Jason. I hope to see you more often Rae." King Roen added and left their presence going towards his seat.

Rae made sure Paul and his brothers has done their work properly before allowing herself to follow Jason and co to wherever he wants to sit.

Georgia went over to meet her brothers to rub salts to their already wounded ego. Paul and his brothers couldn't wait for the festival to finish so that they will go back to their Kingdom.

As the four walked by, all eyes were on them.

King Darin and his wife, Queen Jasmine, eyes couldn't leave Rae's figure, especially that of his wife.

This is the Rae their son, Dean, is crazy about.

Queen Flora stared at Rae with heated eyes as she remembered the humiliation Rae gave to her when she visited her school. Ever since then, she loathe the very ground Rae's walk on.

Tharo who is Jason's little friend, ran up to meet with the Prince and Rae didn't see him on time as she stepped on his little toes.

"Aww!" Tharo shouted pretending to limp on his other toe as he held the one the girl had stepped in his hands. He opened his mouth to spit out a hurtful words towards the fool when he stopped.

Are his eyes now deceiving him?

Rae looks at the little boy with caution, he reminds her of her father. The same black hair, eyes, nose, mouth. In fact, this might be how her father had looked like when he was a little boy age. She wish he was here to see the little boy who looks exactly like him.

She bend and touched the boy hair not knowing it is her father. "So sorry for hurting your toes."

Tharo could only nod his head.

"Rae this is my little friend Tharo and Tharo this is Rae my soulmate." Jason introduced gaining the whole attention of the entire people to him.

It was at that moment Rae looked around them and realise they were the only ones standing.

"Let's go and sit down Jason dear, the introduction shall come later."

Jason lead them to where he normally seats whenever the wolf festival comes up. He always sits alone even when he was still engaged to Lolly. But this year is different, he won't be alone.

\*\*\*\*

KINGDOM OF ANGELS:

Noah arrived and quickly went to meet Aaron who was sitting down on his throne chair.

He was surprised when he saw Noah walking towards him and didn't even bother to hide his surprise.

"What is it Noah? Why are you back so sudden, where are the rest Angels?" Aaron demanded.

Bowing his head to him. "They are all dead my King, you are only seeing me because I was left alive to send you a message by the one we encountered." Noah answered him.

"What did you just say? Jack and the other eleven Angels are dead? By who?" Aaron bellowed in anger.

"They were killed by Raphael my King and he threatened us not to interfere with Micheal again." Noah supply him the answers.

Hearing of Raphael name made Aaron stand up from his seat. "Which Raphael are you talking about?" He asked.

"The one we both know my King. He is still alive and dwells on earth now. The man we encountered fought like Raphael and he revealed his true identity to us. But we did not believe

him hence the death of the rest Angels." Noah explained. "He warned us but we didn't listen. Though I noticed something about him, he is full of darkness my King."

"If truly you saw Raphael then getting Selena and killing Micheal will be hard."

"Oh and one more thing my King." Noah said. "Micheal has a daughter with Selena who is Raphael's Mate."

\*\*\*\*

King Roen Palace:

"Let us all stand up and welcome the Priestess into our midst." King Roen announced and everyone stood up except, Jason who motioned to Jorkallun, Sarah and Rae to sit.

Tamara appeared elegantly dressed in a beautiful purple long flowing gown.

"Thank you all." Tamara said with a smile but glaring at the table Jason was sitting with his friends. "You may all sit."

Jason snorted as everyone sat down.

"Let the party begin." King Roen announced and everyone started eating.

The courtyard became noisy once again.

Rae kept looking at the crowds as if searching for someone.

"What are you looking for Miss?" The little boy brought her attention to him.

"My father, he promised to me. If he fails to keep his promise, only the gods can separate our fight." Rae answered him with a smile.

Tharo paled and stood up from his seat taking excuse from Jason and everyone, he left the party.

He doesn't want to disappoint his daughter.

No sooner as Tharo was gone Queen Jasmine made her way towards their table.

"Hello Jason."

"Hi Mrs."

"Hello Jorkallun."

"Hi Mrs."

Jasmine smiled and faces the other two.

"Hello, I am Jasmine, Dean's mother." The vampire Queen introduced herself.

"It is a pleasure to meet you." Rae and Sarah both said at the same time.

"Jason and jorkallun please can I have a word with the both of you privately?"

"Sure." Jason reply standing up as Jorkallun also stood up.

The three both walk out of the courtyard, walking towards the library, they entered the library.

"We are alone now Mrs, what do you want to discuss with us?" Jason demanded.

"Jason, be careful of you call your own. Sometimes betrayal comes from those who we are close to." Queen Jasmine said.

"Is that why you called us here? Anyway I have heard you. Thank you for your message" Jason said and left the library.

Jorkallun wanted to follow suit when Jasmine voice stopped him.

"Jorkallun, I see you as someone who takes the advice of a seer seriously. What is about to come can't be changed. A day is fast approaching when darkness shall be used against light to achieve its aim. A day is coming when you will need help, when that day comes, find the Lake Of Little, the lake which is hard to find, when you see it, whisper my name 'Jasmine'. There, help will come to you. Remember my words always for I see doom fast approaching."

## Chapter 59

'Don't aim at success. The more you aim at it and make it a target, the more you are going to miss it. For success, like happiness, cannot be pursued; it must ensue, and it only does so as the unintended side effect of one's personal dedication to a cause greater than oneself or as the by-product of one's surrender to a person other than oneself. Happiness must happen, and the same holds for success: you have to let it happen by not caring about it. I want you to listen to what your conscience commands you to do and go on to carry it out to the best of your knowledge. Then you will live to see that in the long-run—in the long-run, I say!—success will follow you precisely because you had forgotten to think about it. The biggest wall you have to climb is the one you build in your mind: Never let your mind talk you out of your dreams, trick you into giving up. Never let your mind become the greatest obstacle to success. To get your mind on the right track, the rest will follow. Make a pact with yourself today to not be defined by your past. Sometimes the greatest thing to come out of all your hard work isn't what you get for it, but what you become for it. Shake things up today! Be You...Be Free...

♥♥♥♥ THAROLLIN AND KING ROEN (Part One)♥♥♥♥

Jorkallun regarded the Queen silently and nodded his head.

"I will keep that in my mind my Queen." Jorkallun said after a while and left jogging to meet up with Jason who was already making his way to the festival.

"I hope he remembers my words." Queen Jasmine whispered to herself and left the library.

—

Once he was outside the Palace walls Tharo ran into a nearby bush where no one could see him, he transformed into his real self.

He started contemplating whether to change his clothes filled with human skulls into something nice or leave it the way it is.

The latter won, he shrugged his shoulders and left for the festival once again dressed in his scary clothes.

\*\*\*\*

THE KINGDOM OF ANGELS:

Aaron couldn't believe his ears.

"Repeat what you just said now."

"I said Selena has a child for Micheal and their child they had is the soulmate of Raphael." Noah repeated once again.

"Selena has a child for Micheal?" Aaron said. "This is unbelievable."

"What do we do now my King?" Noah asked the King.

"I don't know what to do next, but I am not giving up on having Selena all to myself." Aaron answered. "Take me to the cave where the rest were killed." He added.

"Of course my King." Noah said. "But what about Raphael my King, what will you tell him when you see him? You know he is now a son-in-law to Michael and he wouldn't allow anything bad to happen to him." Noah asked.

"Somehow I will have to convince Raphael to my side. I must have Selena." King Aaron said in a determined voice.

\*\*\*\*

#### THE REALM OF THE GODS:

Ares went to check on Hermes room for the upteemph time and couldn't see him. He went back to report it to his father.

"He is still not yet back." Ares told Zeus.

'Then where could Hermes has gone too?' Zeus ponder in thought. "Let's wait a little bit longer and see if he could come back before we report to the rest of the gods that he is missing." He added.

"Alright father, I will continue checking his room and when he is back, I will let you know." Ares told his father and left Zeus presence.

\*\*\*\*

#### THE GREAT SEA OF NILE:

King Nile was seen with two of his daughters, Sharon and Siren.

"Father we came to make a report to you." Siren began.

"And what is it my daughter?" King Nile asked Siren.

"It's about Lydia." Sharon said. "I think she is cheating on her husband." She added.

"What are you trying to insinuate?" King Nile asked.

"What Sharon is trying to say father is that Lydia might be having a secret affair with another man who is not her husband." Siren answered for her sister.

"What!?" King Nile exclaimed in shock. "Did you see her with the man?" He asked.

"Yes father, we both saw her with a man, he is an angel. He flew her up and we haven't seen any sign of them since." Sharon responded.

"Are you sure of what you are saying?"

"We are very sure father, very, very sure." Siren said in affirmative.

"I hope you haven't told her husband yet?" King Nile asked looking at the both of them.

"No father we haven't. We wanted to tell you first before anything." Sharon answered.

"Good, let it be between us and let no ear apart from the there of us hear it. I will ask Lydia once she comes to see me. I just hope it won't be true." King Nile said.

"Okay father. We shall take our leave now." They both said together and swim away.

He hopes Lydia isn't cheating on her Centaur.

\*\*\*\*

KING ROEN PALACE:

Jason and Jorkallun went back to their seat.

"So why did the queen called you and Jorkallun?" Rae asked Jason.

"Nothing serious, she just said I should be careful, that's all." Jason replied Rae.

"You should have told her about how her son tried to kissed Rae in the hallway when no one was watching." Sarah chip in.

Rae suddenly turn her gaze towards Sarah's direction.

"Were you there when it happened? Did you see him forcing himself on me?" Rae asked.



"Sure I was there and even collected the handkerchief he used in cleaning your blood." Sarah answered casually.

"Why would you collect his handkerchief?" Jorkallun asks this time around.

"He brought flowers for Rae who collected it and drop the flowers quickly on the floor and started bleeding. When Dean had picked up the flowers, he picked it gently and throw it away. My 6th sense told me danger. After you left, I went to confront him and demanded for the handkerchief. He refused to handle over the handkerchief and I forcibly took it away from him. Maybe that is why we haven't seen him yet." Sarah explained her reason for collecting the handkerchief from the Vampire Prince. "The way he quickly put the handkerchief into his pockets shows he wanted to use your blood on it for something important. So I became alert." She added.

"Thank you Sarah for having my back, my mind wasn't even going towards that direction when he behaved like a gentleman he is not to clean the blood away from my fingers." Rae said with a smile.

"..."

Whatever Sarah wanted to say was cut off when the voice of King Roen was heard.

"May I please grab all your attention here!" King Roen shouted and the noisy courtyard became quite as they stared at him. "Thank you all for your cooperation. Queen Lillian here wants to tell us something important." The King said and Lillian stood up from her seat.

"My greetings to you all once again. I am so happy that we are all here to celebrate the festival of the Werewolves once again. And you know what this means for some unmated Werewolves here." Lillian began and she was cheered by everyone.

Rae whistle loudly drawing attention to her.

"What, she is my grandmother!" She shouted at those staring at her.

"That's enough, silence please." King Roen commanded and it became quiet once again.

"Thank you."

Lillian smile and carry on. "Like I was saying, today is the full moon and Wolves are going to meet their mates tonight." Lillian said. "But what I am going to tell you will shock you all and I hope you will take it with open arms."

"What is your grandmother doing Rae?" Jason asked his Mate.

"I don't know but just smile she is looking at us." Rae answered with a smile. Jason smiled.

"You know for the last one thousand years when tragedy happened when the entire Kingdom of the Mer-Clan were wiped out." Lillian said and smiled when she saw some of the wolves and the Queens beside her getting tense. "Let's raise our cups in the memory of them." Lillian added as she took her cup filled with wine and lifted it up above her head.

Everyone else did the same and dropped it back on their table.

"Now to my story. Let me start from the very beginning." Lillian said grabbing the attention of everyone. "One thousand years ago, Avonmora came to meet me before her death and told me she was pregnant with Tharollin child and..."

The loud gasps prevented Lillian from continuing. The older wolves who knew about Avonmora started whispering amongst themselves.

Queen Rosa eyes suddenly met with Lillian. It was as if she was trying to pass a message through her eyes.

Whatever Lillian is up to she hopes it end well.

Rae heart started beating fast.

What is her grandmother trying to do?

It was as if Jason's heard her heartbeat for he quickly held her hand in his and slowly caress it.

"Relax Rae, I am here with you." Jason said giving her some assurance.

"After she told me about her pregnancy, she begged me to save her child which I did before she was frozen at the front Gate of Darkness." Lillian concluded her story.

"Are saying Avonmora has a child?" Tamara demanded.

"Yes sister she did. And that child who is a hybrid is no other than Rae, my granddaughter you all know." Lillian finally revealed the long awaited truth as she pointed towards the direction of Rae.

Queen Rosa wasn't expecting that, same goes to Queen Flora who looked surprised and shocked.

King Roen couldn't believe what he heard.

Lolly who was just coming in find it hard to believe.

Tamara couldn't stop staring at Rae in surprise. She didn't see that coming. Rae was Tharollin and Avonmora daughter?

And Queen Jasmine...

Jasmine only smiled. She knew who Rae was right from the day she told Dean about her visions concerning Rae.

Everything and everyone became quiet as they stared at Rae.

Rae tried not to fret under the stares of everyone surrounding her.

"What did you just say?" King Roen asked still in shock.

"Rae is the daughter of Avonmora and the Demon King." Lillian said again and made a gesture with her index finger and Rae floated from her seat to her fast

As soon as Rae reached her, Lillian removed the hidden spell ball she had placed in her, which came out from Rae's neck.

Everything was happening so fast for Rae that she didn't have the time to stop her grandmother from removing the hidden spell tiny ball.

The transformation was a very quick one. As Rae changed into her mermaid form. Her feet transformed into her rainbow tail, she fell down to the ground since her tail couldn't carry her body like her human legs does.

Jason was suddenly in front of her, catching her before her body made impact with the ground.

Trying to use his body to hide Rae's mermaid form from the onlookers he turned angrily at Lillian.

His white eyes changing completely to his Wolf, one red and the other one midnight black.

"What are you doing Lillian?" Jason growled out the words with clenched teeth. He was shaking.

"Revealing the truth Jason, trust me." Lillian answer shifting a little bit backwards from Jason and turned to face the silent crowds. "Like I said, Rae is Avonmora's daughter."

"Why are you telling us this right now?" King Darin ask.

"Because Tamara who is my sister lied to you all and made you killed innocent people." Lillian replied. Ignoring the second gasps round her, only few remembered she and Tamara are related.

"Meaning?" King Roen demanded.

"Meaning Tamara used the name of the gods to lure you into believing that the Gate of Darkness which was opened by Tharollin himself will cause evil, thus killing the innocent people."

"You are lying Lillian, the gods demanded for their blood to use in closing down the Gate because it was caused by her stupid soulmate." Tamara retorted out.

"Then why is Avonmora's soul with Lucifer? Or you think I won't find out?" Lillian retorted back angrily at her sister. "My King, she planned all these with the help of Lucifer for something I don't know yet. She lied about the gods, she hasn't even spoken to the gods for years now. She killed the Mer-Clan for her own selfish gain." Lillian added.

"She is lying my King." Tamara said.

"And why do you think I would lie about-"

"Enough the both of you." King Roen said interrupting Lillian. "For a start, Tamara wouldn't do such a thing, and you kept the last sacrifice one with you for years without letting anyone know, that is your number one offence. This shows you are trying to frame the Priestess of the gods." King Roen told Lillian not believing a word.

"I am not framing anything here my King, and to tell you that I am saying the truth, Rae isn't the only Mer-"

"Whatever she is saying is not true Roen." Tamara voice interrupted her sister with anger in her voice.

She will see who Roen will believe. Her or her sister.

"I know she is lying Tamara, you don't need to remind me." King Roen said slowly. "Guards take the last mermaid to the dungeon and the Priestess will choose a date for her to be sacrificed by my son." He ordered the guards surrounding them.

The guards came forward to grab Rae when a loud growl filled the courtyard, shaking the very foundation of the palace.

"No one touches my Mate." Jason icy voice froze the coming guards.

"What did you just say Jason?" King Roen asked his son with anger.

"He said no one should touch my daughter, because if any of you do, hell will look like a pleasant vacation to be compared with what I will do to you."

Everybody turned to look at the new voice who spoke. They all quickly get up to their feet and moved backwards as the Demon King Stepped forward.

"Tharollin." King Roen spat out the name with hatred.

"Hello Roen with the way my name sounded in your mouth I know you have missed this troublemaker King." Tharollin said with a smile as Roen faced clouded with much hatred.

"What in god's name are you doing here?" King Roen demanded in fury.

"I came for my daughter." Tharollin answered and they couldn't see him.

They saw him next to Rae's form, she couldn't get up because half of her body from her waist down were in fish tail.

"Father."

The Queens sitting next to Lillian who was already standing up all ran away for safety from the Demon King whose attention was only on his daughter. Even the approaching guards who stopped at Jason's warning started moving back.

Tharollin bends down and touched the tail ignoring the white haired boy who is carrying his daughter in his hands. Her tail was replaced with human legs.

Tharollin lifted his face and smile at his daughter.

"You look more beautiful in this form Rae, just like your mother. I am here now no harm will come to you." Tharollin said softly.

Standing upright to his full height, his smile changing into a deep scowl. "I dare any one of you to come forward and touch one single hair of my daughter." Tharollin said and suddenly brought his hands together in a pleading form. "Just a single hair, I am begging."

## Chapter 60

'We do not get to choose how we start out in life. We do not get to choose the day we are born or the family we are born into, what we are named at birth, what country we are born in, and we do not get to choose our ancestry. All these things are predetermined by a higher power. By the time you are old enough to start making decisions for yourself, a lot of things in your life are already in place. It's important, therefore, that you focus on the future, the only thing that you can change. Go placidly amid the noise and the haste, and remember what peace there may be in silence. As far as possible without surrender, be on good terms with all persons. Speak your truth quietly and clearly, and listen to others, even the dull and ignorant; they too have their story. Be yourself. Especially do not feign affection. Neither be cynical about love – for in the face of all aridity and disenchantment it is perennial as the grass. Take kindly the counsel of the years, gracefully surrendering the things of youth. Nurture strength of spirit to shield you from misfortune. But do not distress yourself with imaginings. Many fears are born of fatigue and loneliness. Beyond a wholesome discipline, be gentle with yourself. You are a child of the universe no less than the trees and the stars; you have a right to be here. And whether or not it is clear to you, no doubt the universe is unfolding as it should. Therefore be at peace with God, whatever you conceive Him to be, and whatever your labours and aspirations, in the noisy confusion of life keep peace with your soul. With all its sham, drudgery and broken dreams, it is still a beautiful world.'

♥♥♥♥ THAROLLIN AND ROEN (Part Two) ♥♥♥♥

No one moved an inch and Tharollin stared boringly at the crowds.

What a pity....

"I guess you all are afraid of me but not my daughter." Tharollin said talking to himself but all could still hear him. "I will have to change that concept soon." He added and turned to face Roen.

"Let us just forget about the past Roen and start all over again since we are going to be in-laws." Tharollin said to the Wolf King.

"Not when I am still alive and breathing. You are darkness, a demon and shall remain so. I don't plan to give my only son to a demon daughter, especially if the demon comes from you." King Roen said in a cold harden voice.

"Are you still pained that Avonmora's soul connected with mine and not yours like you planned? Get over it Roen, don't use because of the past, our past, to prevent the love our children have for each other." Tharollin told the King.

"I have forgotten about Avonmora since the day she became your soulmate and you in return betrayed her by opening the Gate of Darkness, causing the death of thousands Mer-clan and her life. I will never ever forget that day Tharollin when you choose to ignore her pleas." Roen said. "I wondered what she even see in you, instead of her to reject the Mate bond and bond with someone else who has a good blood in him she bonded with a stupid fool who caused her pain." He added bitterly.

Everyone listened with rapt attention to the word of exchange between their King and the Demon King.

"Reon we shouldn't be having this conversation outside. We are surrounded by both evil and good people and please stop saying as if my Mate choose the wrong person and-"

Cutting off Tharollin sharply.

"Of course she chose the wrong Mate, the gods gave her the wrong mate which is you. If you are her real SOULMATE you wouldn't have hurt her in the first place. You betrayed your love for her by ignoring her pleading when she told you not to open the gate of Darkness. Your selfishness and greed lead to the death of the whole Mer-clan including your precious Avonmora." King Roen said in anger.

"I know I made mistake by opening the Gate of Darkness years ago and ignored her pleading, I have come out from the gate and realize my mistake. Mistakes have the power to turn you into something better than you were before. Don't mention a person's past mistakes when they are trying to change. That's like throwing rocks at them while they are struggling to climb a mountain." Tharollin said walking towards Lillian and stopping right next to her. "When someone does something wrong, don't forget all the things they did right. I am afraid to say this but anger, bitterness and hatred that you have for me have made you forgotten how I helped you and the gods to defeat my father and put him in his place. I have helped you all countless of times in the past and you don't even appreciate it. Why do you all still have so much hatred for me? Just give me one reason, why?" Tharollin asked facing the quiet crowd.

No one answered his question.

Now that Rae could feel her legs, she stood up to her feet using Jason as a support.

"I will tell you why." Tharollin began. "Because I am a demon, and as your history books had written down I am a ruthless Demon King. When you come across the name 'Tharollin' it sends shivers down everyone's spine, and no doubts about that because I can see the fear in your eyes right now when I am not even holding a sword. Why I am giving this long speech is that no one should mess with my daughter. Whatever hatred you all have for me should end only in my side, do not involve my daughter in this madness you called hatred. I am pleading because when it gets to my turn, I won't hear your plead." Tharollin concluded his long speech.

"Whatever you say Tharollin it won't change the fact that your precious daughter will be sacrificed and her blood will be used in closing the gate of Darkness forever." King Roen told Tharollin. "I would have at least have a change of heart in the girl if she isn't related to you by any means."

"Tamara told you things and you believed her? She keeps fooling you all day by day and you don't know it yet. There is no amount of words that can be used to change your heart about who Tamara truly is, I hope you will get to see her real color soon Reon and I hope it won't be too late when she finally reveal herself." Tharollin said. "I am taking my daughter with me now, and I dare you to send all your armies you have to stop me if they can." The demon King added and left Lillian side to his daughter.

"We are not welcome here Rae, let's leave here." Tharollin told Rae who didn't argue with him when she saw his face.

She quickly left Jason arms and grab her father's outstretched hand.

"Oh and Roen least I forget, Avonmora is now free, she is no more frozen at the Gate of Darkness anymore. Go and see for yourself." With that Tharollin disappeared with Rae.

No one moved or make a noise after Tharollin vanished with his daughter.

"My king I am trying to tell you that Rae is not the only Mer-" Lillian began to say but stopped when Roen raise up his right hand to her.

"I don't want to hear any word from you Lillian. You betrayed everyone by keeping the sacrifice person to yourself." Roen told her in anger. "The sacrifice one was with you all these years and you kept it to yourself Lillian."

"STOP CALLING MY MATE THAT NAME! SHE HAS A NAME! HER NAME IS RAE!" Jason shouted in anger to his father scared Roen a bit. His fingers changing into his Wolf long talons fingers and his whole body was shaking with anger. "You should thank your stars you are my father but do not try to push your luck." Jason growled with each words as his voice double into a deep baritone voice showing his wolf was speaking now.

"I am your father Jason and regardless that you are the Millennium wolf I still have the right to say what I want to say because I am the King and your father, and you will obey my orders. Get that into your skull." King Roen said in much anger. "The girl is the one who you will have to sacrifice at the gate of Darkness. Whatever love you have for her must die this minute because it is now a Forbidden Love."

"I am going after her. My love I have for my soulmate is unbreakable love father and it's not Forbidden. I love Rae." Jason spoke calmly.



"She is a Demon my son. If she had been one of King Davea people I would have considered her but she is a demon and I don't associate with demons especially when her father is Tharollin. You are the future King Jason, try to be like me for once and do as I say." King Roen caution his son.

"First of all, I am nothing like you father and secondly you don't get to choose who I will fall in love with. And I will choose Rae over and over again." Jason told his father.

"It is not possible Jason, I will give you an option. Choose between Lolly and Vivian who you will likely love to spend the rest of your life with. Your kind don't have mate and even if they do, not that demon daughter." King Roen said to his son.

Jason didn't say a word, his fire wings came out of his back and he prepared himself to vanished when his father voice stopped him.

"And where do you think you are going Jason?" King Roen asked his son.

"I am going after them to apologise to Tharollin for all this." Jason answered without hesitation.

"You are not moving an inch from here Jason. If you do, I will disown you as my son and I am very serious about it." King Roen said.

The loud gasps from the people shows they have been following the argument between father and son.

"You may not know this father but it was Rae who healed mother when your stupid idiot of a fool who called herself Tamara couldn't." Jason said ignoring the whispering around them as he stared at his father's shocked eyes. "Yes father, Rae, this Demon daughter as you put it was the one who healed your wife the night you invited her over. Did she tell you? No. If I remembered vividly you said in your words that 'the unknown healer is an Angel' does it not shows that Rae is an Angel?" Jason asked his father. "She is not a full demon, she is also a mermaid."

"It still doesn't change the fact that she is the daughter of my enemy. The one who put everyone's life at risk when he opened the gate."

"I now see why Tharollin made this statement, When someone does something wrong, don't forget all the things they did right. For once in your life father, see things through your heart not with your head. You can disown me father but you CANNOT change my love I have for Rae." Jason said and disappeared immediately.

The whispering stops as they all stare at the King to see his reaction but none was coming.

"I will also take my leave my King, but know I did the right thing by keeping Avonmora child a secret which I will do again if given a chance." Lillian said and disappeared.

Sarah and Jorkallun stood up from their seat and left the festival going straight to Lillian's house.

\*\*\*\*

Taloc who was out in the open could feel the presence of someone around the environment following him.

"Who is there?" Taloc demanded as he stopped and looked around him.

He had come out of his hidden house cave and was looking for a particular leaf he will use in the breaking bond when they bring the lovers bond. The leaf was the final ingredients needed.

It was during the search he sense someone's presence and whoever it is has been following him.

"I asked again who are you? Reveal yourself if you are not afraid." Taloc said.

A man appeared few feet away from him.

"Why are you following me?" Taloc demanded again when he saw the strange man who smells of evil few feet away from him.

"I was passing by with a friend of mine who is not here with me when I sense your powerful aura and I couldn't help myself but come down and see where the aura was coming from." The man replied him. "You have this dark aura in you that I can't ignore. What's your name?"

They are actually two?

Taloc thought as he slowly observe his surroundings but he couldn't sense any other person presence apart from his and this strange man who appear from nowhere.

"I ask for your name."

"My name Taloc and who are you?" Taloc ask the man who gave him a cold chill smile before answering.

"I am Lucifer and I want us to work together."

## Chapter 61

'Today is a new day and it brings with it a new set of opportunities for me to act on. I am attentive to the opportunities and I seize them as they arise. I have full confidence in myself and my abilities. I can do all things that I commit myself to. No obstacle is too big or too difficult for me to handle because what lies inside me is greater than what lies ahead of me. I am committed to improving myself and I am getting better daily. I am not held back by regret or mistakes from the past. I am moving forward daily. Absolutely nothing is impossible for me. We all make mistakes, have struggles, and even regret things in our past. But you are not your mistakes, you are not your struggles, and you are here NOW with the power to shape your day and your future. Live the Life of Your Dreams When you start living the life of your dreams, there will always be obstacles, doubters, mistakes and setbacks along the way. But with hard work, perseverance and self-belief there is no limit to what you can achieve. If this book has a lesson, it is that we are awfully lucky to be here-and by 'we' I mean every living thing. To attain any kind of life in this universe of ours appears to be quite an achievement. As humans we are doubly lucky, of course: We enjoy not only the privilege of existence but also the singular ability to appreciate it and even, in a multitude of ways, to make it better. It is a talent we have only barely begun to grasp.'

♥♥♥♥ JOINING FORCES ♥♥♥♥

Continuation from the last episode:

"Sorry but thanks for the offer, I love working alone. Now if you will excuse me, I was doing something before you came." Taloc said and return to what he was doing ignoring the so called Lucifer.

"Do you even know who is standing before you?" Lucifer asked which prompted Taloc to stop what he was doing to regard him from head to toe carefully.

"I only see someone who just puff out in the air and demands for my friendship and using the name of Lucifer to gain what from me? Just in case you didn't hear what I said before, I will repeat myself again. I love working alone. And you don't know who I am." Taloc replied calmly and went back to what he was doing.

Lucifer grinned like a mad man. "My name is Lucifer..." He began but got interrupted by Taloc.

"So you have told me before." Taloc retorted out.

"I am the Lucifer who fought with the Creator and his Angels." Lucifer said reintroducing himself once again. "The Angel who was given the name ' the fallen Angel', I am the fallen Angel who was chased out from the sky by the Creator and his Angels. But I am famously being known by my other name, Lucifer." He added.

That stopped Taloc who turned to look at the man. He noticed the few things he had missed. The dark eyes, the only chain in his neck even as he tried to cover it with his hair.

Taloc breathed the air around him deeply and smell the man stronger aura. Indeed he must be Lucifer because no one can have such a strong aura.

"You are truly Lucifer, right?" At the man nod Taloc continued. "So what do you really want from me?" He asked Still searching for the final ingredient to complete the spell.

"I want us to work together. You have a strong aura which i can't ignore at all." Lucifer said still grinning. "What are you searching for, I might be of help."

"A special kind of leaf." Taloc respond.

"What kind of leaf?" Lucifer asked.

"The one used in breaking a mate bond." Taloc answered.

"Oh, you want to break someone bond and make the woman your Mate?" Lucifer queried.

"No, it's for my daughter. She is in love with a boy who claims to have a mate already and cannot be with my daughter. My daughter Loves him so much so I promised her I will break the bond he has with the other lady and bond him and my daughter together." Taloc explained. "So the leaf is the final ingredient, only dark forces knows what leaf I am talking about." He added. He was sure this man before him was just bluffing and seeking for his attention, probably to distract him from finding the leaf.

"I see." Lucifer said and closed his left palm, when he opened it a tiny leaf rested on his palm. "Here is the leaf you are looking for and you are right about the dark forces knowing this particular leaf and what it is used for." He added with a smirk.

Taloc stared at his outstretched palm and couldn't believe his eyes.

This is the leaf he has been looking for. Collecting it from him with a smile that reaches his eyes. "Thank you Lucifer." He thanked.

"You are welcome Taloc, this gesture of mine will show you how I mean well to you. I want us to work together in achieving my aim and yours too." Lucifer said.

"For this single kind gesture of yours who am I to say no to your offer? I will work with you but in one condition." Taloc said.

"What condition Taloc?" Lucifer demanded looking straight into his green eyes.

"I get to make my own decisions myself and with that of my mate and my daughter. I won't always follow your words if it doesn't suit me." Taloc laid out his conditions without breaking eye contact with Lucifer. "So deal?"

"Deal Taloc, now that we have agreed to join forces together, we will be unstoppable."

"Yes I agree with you. But I failed to ask you one thing though, what do you plan to do if you have my support?"

"I want to take all the Kingdoms in the supernaturals for myself." Lucifer said.

"Too bad Lucifer, I too want the Kingdoms." Taloc chip in immediately.

"Then we can divide it equally between ourselves." Lucifer told Taloc who became quiet, thinking hard before nodding his head.

"It's a deal then, we will share it equally." Taloc said at last.

"I have to be on my way now my other friend will be wondering where I am, see you when I want to see you Taloc." Lucifer said and disappeared.

'see me when he wants to see me, what does he mean by that?'

Taloc thought as he stared at the empty place Lucifer was.

He held the leaf carefully and disappeared going to his hidden lair.

Once he appeared in his own little library, he went to work immediately. Mixing all the ingredients together.

20 minutes later...

He was through with the magic potion he made, the only thing that is remaining now is the blood of the two lovers.

\*\*\*\*

KING ROEN PALACE:

Lolly and Tamara eyes met and they stared at each other as if they are trying to convey a message to themselves.

After two minutes of staring, Lolly turned and left the festival.

She was almost reaching the gate when she saw Dean. She walked up to him and they started walking out of the Palace Gate together. Lolly noticed Dean walking in a funny way but ignored it as she went straight to business.

"Did you get the blood of Rae?" Lolly demanded.

"I did but Rae's cousin took it away from me, what about you were you able to succeed in bringing Jason's blood?" Prince Dean return the question.

"I was just coming to the festival when I heard the discussion between Roen and the Demon King who fought with me once, don't ask me the outcome of the fight." Lolly said and she stopped walking when what Dean had said process in her brain fully. "What did you say about Rae having a cousin?"

Rolling his eyes "I said I successfully took Rae's blood without her knowledge and her stupid cousin came out of nowhere and collected the blood from me." Prince Dean replied to her. "And please don't ask me the outcome of the fight." He said with the same words she had used on him.

"What is her cousin's name?"

"She told me herself, her name is Sarah. And she was sitting next to Rae and she is the one who left with Jorkallun after Jason disappeared." Dean explained.

"This is unbelievable, I didn't know Sarah is Rae cousin. I never suspected that." Lolly said really surprised.

"What do we do since our plan to get the blood failed? I can't lose my Rae to anyone else who is not me."

"Me neither, I will discuss with my mother after the festival and report our failed attempt to my father. Since you couldn't get Rae blood that will also means getting Jason blood will be hard." Lolly told Dean.

"So where are you heading to?" Dean suddenly ask out of blue.

"Home to think of a good plan just in case my father doesn't have a backup plan on how to get a hold of those two blood." Lolly answered.

"Can I follow you home? My parents are still in the festival." Dean said suddenly nervous

"Sure." Lolly respond.

"Hop in my back, let me carry you. It will be faster to get to your home in my vampire speed." Dean suddenly suggested.

"Okay." Lolly said and climbed Dean's back.

"Hold tight." Dean warned and when he felt the tight hold of Lolly's in his clothes, he ran with vampire speed towards the Amazon King Residence.

---

"He disobeyed me, he flaunt my orders away like he normally do." King Roen said in a low tone. He looked up at the crowds that were staring at him to see his reactions and gave them a forced smile which wasn't reaching his eyes. "The festival continues!" He shouted.

And everyone went back to his or her food, though the festival was going smoothly like before but their minds weren't on the festival again.

Their thoughts were filled with the return of Tharollin.

\*\*\*\*

Noah and Aaron left the Angels Kingdom and he took the King to the cave he fought with Raphael.

Entering the smaller cave, he met it empty. He couldn't even see the dead bodies of his dead comrades which Raphael had killed.

"This cave looks like it has never been used in years." King Aaron said looking around the cave. "Are you sure this is the cave?"

"This is the cave my King, I don't know how they made it look as if no one has ever lived in it since." Noah said. He couldn't forget the cave so fast.

"And the other eleven Angels, what about their headless bodies?" King Aaron demanded.

"I have no answer to that my King. They were all pile here and are gone now." Noah answered.

"Hmm, maybe Raphael send their spirits to eternal rest." King Aaron said. "Micheal should just be grateful that I didn't meet him here, but he can't run forever." Aaron said mostly to himself. "Let's go Noah."

They left the cave and flew upwards.

Micheal and Lydia came out from the cave next to the one Aaron and Noah had entered.

They watched as the two tiny little bright lights that looks like star disappeared into the clouds.

"Tharollin was right, Noah brought him here." Micheal said. "I am glad we heed to his advice and left the cave."

"Yeah." Lydia supported, thank goodness she uses her spell to make the cave looks like no one was there.

"Please go back inside and stay with my daughter. I will be watching around here just in case he sent more Angels to find us." Micheal told the mermaid.

"Alright, be careful." Lydia said and went back inside the cave.

\*\*\*\*

Tharollin appeared in the sitting room of Lillian with Rae beside him.

Rae went to sit down, she couldn't believe what happened.

Why will her grandmother reveal her true identity to everyone without her consent? She wasn't ready for the world to know her true identity.

Glancing at her father, she saw his face clouded in anger. She saw how his whole body was shaking in anger.

Tharollin was finding it very difficult to control himself.

She opened her mouth to tell her father to calm down when Lillian appeared in the same sitting room.

Tharollin faces her. "How Dare You?" He spit each words in anger.

"I am so sorry Tharollin I didn't even know it will end up like this." Lillian said scared half to death.

Tharollin gave her a very HOT DIRTY SLAP that sounded like bells in Lillian's ear.

"Start talking Lillian, what prompt you to reveal my daughter's identity?" Tharollin demanded, his mouth not moving as he spoke.

\*\*\*\*



Lucifer appeared beside Gar who was still in his water form. Gar was standing beside a tree, waiting for Lucifer.

"I have been here and you just disappeared without informing me of your whereabouts."

"Sorry my old friend, I went to make a deal with someone who has a strong dark aura. With him by our side we are unstoppable." Lucifer said.

"Did he agreed to join forces with us?" Gar asked.

"Of course, he agrees. When I set my eyes on him, I know who he is and I love his type. What he doesn't know is that his Mate worked for you." Lucifer responded.

"You mean Tamara work for this new friend of yours? The priestess I know?" Gar asked. All his years he and Tamara had worked, he didn't know she has a Mate who Lucifer has suddenly picked interest.

"Yes she is the one."

"Won't she recognised me once she sees me?" Gar asked.

"She won't recognise you once you are in your real form Gar." Lucifer replied.

"What did you and Tamara Mate discussed master?"

"About joining hands with me, though he agreed but on one condition."

"What condition did he give to you?"

"He will get half of the Kingdoms and I will take the remaining ones." Lucifer replied. "We want the same thing, to rule the whole supernaturals."

"And you agreed to his terms?"

"Yes, such strong dark aura isn't something you find everyday."

"So you plan to give him half the Kingdoms when we win?" Gar asked.

"No, I will kill him. I plan to rule all the whole supernaturals and after that wage a war against the Creator." Lucifer said and laugh out. "Come on, let's start going, our journey is still far away." He added and disappeared, Gar followed suit.

## Chapter 62

'In a harsh, cruel world where success is only measured by financial income, the higher moral values are getting lost and forgotten. No one counts your efforts, good deeds, struggle, and giving unless if these deeds make money. Money nowadays, unfortunately, is the fake God everyone follows. If you make solid profits you are a human being worth respect, but if you are struggling and working so hard in life, yet your struggle and good deeds don't make you the money you need, you only worth neglecting. When your life is in turmoil and your soul appears to be lost hold your head up high and try to smile. When doors are closed others open up to sometimes yield better horizons. There will always be doors throughout life, Live it, Love it and Embrace it, yet never settle for second best because you deserve nothing but the best. For all those who struggle to live another day by doing the right thing, hang in there, God is with you and better days are coming too by God's will.

♥♥♥♥ THAROLLIN AND JASON ♥♥♥♥

Reaching her home, Dean stopped in front of the door and Lolly came down from his back.

"Thanks for the ride." Lolly said smiling and knocked at the door.

It was opened by her father who allowed them in. He didn't go to the Wolf festival, it was not his thing and King Roen understand.

Dean greeted the Amazon King who responded to his greetings and face his daughter.

"You left the house a few minutes ago for the festival and now you are back, did anything happen?"

"No father, I don't feel like staying in the festival that was why I came back and Dean volunteer to carry me all the way from the festival to here." Lolly lied.

"Okay, I will be going to my room now, I was in the middle of something when I heard your knock." With that the Amazon King left them taking the stairs in two.

"Come on Dean, let's go to my room." Lolly said.

\*\*\*\*

King Roen mind wasn't at rest at the festival. He stood up and address the people again.

"I am sorry to take my leave now but you can enjoy yourselves as more refreshments is on the way. I will be back shortly, I want to clear my head." With that he left their presence going inside his Palace.

He hasn't gone far when he was stopped by Tamara who appeared in front of him, blocking his way.

"You know Lillian is lying Roen. She wants to use my name and cover up the fact she hid the ultimate sacrifice all these years." Tamara began. "You don't believe her do you?"

"I am confused right now Tamara, I don't know who to believe anymore." King Roen said touching his forehead.

"There is no need for you to be confused my King. Lillian lied and Rae is the daughter of your worst enemy who is the Demon who opened the Gate of Darkness." Tamara said trying to twist his head with her lies.

"I know that Tamara and speaking of demons, where are the rest Demons which you collected from me to keep after the war?" King Roen asked. "Where are they?"

\*\*\*\*\*

Continuation from Lillian's House:

"I am sorry once again Tharollin, I wasn't even thinking at that moment. I had thought if Roen is told the truth about who truly Tamara is, then he might get the priestess arrested and have her confessed to everyone present of all her evil. I wasn't expecting it to turn out the way it did." Lillian explained holding the cheek that was slapped, trying to use her magic to heal the painful sting she still felt.

"You could have told me about your plans first before forging ahead to do what's in your mind. I know who Roen is, now that he knows about my daughter secret identity, he will stop at nothing to get her. Did you realize that before you open your wide mouth to talk?" Tharollin bellowed in anger. "I was the first person who wanted to reveal my daughter identity when I got to know Rae is my daughter, but she told me and you were there that she was not ready yet when she is, she will let me know. Did I force her? I let it slide and forget about it until today when you stupidly went to reveal my daughter identity not only in front of Reon but in the presence of everyone in present in the festival including Tamara. Did you know what you have done? To you it might be the right thing to do, but you revealed it to the wrong people at the wrong time. I wouldn't be this angry if it was inside the palace you told Roen, alone. Where was your common sense when you obviously need it." Tharollin all but shouted in anger.

His daughter now will be everyone's target.

"I am so sorry. I just want to reveal my sister's true nature to everyone present but it did not go according to what I and Queen Rosa planned." Lillian said, she was deeply sorry for what she caused.

"What were you and Rosa planned that made you choose to reveal my daughter identity in the presence of everyone including the Kings and Queens?" Tharollin exclaimed in anger.

Rae has been quite all these while listening to their conversation. She allowed her father to do the talking. Rae wouldn't blame her grandmother but the manner of approach she used and opened up her secret is very wrong. Wasn't her grandmother here when she told her father she doesn't want to be known as his daughter yet that she was very okay with this disguise?

Now she will appear different.

"Queen Rosa came to meet to tell me something important. Like Rae, she is also hiding a secret which no one knows except I." Lillian said.

Rae's ears shot up as she heard Jason's mother's name. Was she the one who had told her grandmother to reveal her identity?

And Jason..... will his father not hold him down now? What if he forbids Jason from seeing her again, will he do as his father says? Maybe that is why he is not here. Can she survive without her Jason if her thoughts come to pass?

"Did you tell her about Rae which prompted her to also reveal her secrets to you?" Tharollin demanded his anger slowly subsiding.

"No Tharollin, I didn't tell her Rae's secret because I already planned to reveal her identity in the Wolf festival, which didn't work obviously." Lillian muttered.

"Okay, since you did not tell Rosa, what other secret she is hiding?" Tharollin demanded.

"She has a past Tharollin. She confided in me about her past. She is a druid." Lillian finally revealed.

Rae just look on.

What's a druid?

She thought as she listened.

"You don't mean it, Rosa is a druid?" Tharollin asked not believing.

"Yes Tharollin."

"I thought all the druids were killed by the ravaging beast in the past so I heard, how come Rosa is now a druid?"

"She escaped and went to hide herself in a cave where she stayed." Lillian answered. "She is not just a druid Tharollin, she is Princess Likarica." She added.

"Rosa is Likarica?" At Lillian nod he continues. "Likarica was a very wicked Princess who loves breaking Mate bonds. I haven't seen her but I have heard of her. I was happy she died alongside her people."

"She told me that herself but she has changed, also you must know something. She is also the druid who broke the Mate connection that binds the first Tribird and his Mate."

"Are you kidding me? Jason isn't the first Tribird we have in the supernaturals?" Rae asked very surprised.

It was that moment Tharollin and Lillian remembered someone was even with them. Facing his daughter.

"Yes Rae, but we all agreed not to reveal or tell anyone about it. So in the younger generations mind they think Jason is the first Tribird they have." Tharollin told his daughter and turned back to look at Lillian. "Repeat what you just said Lillian about Rosa."

"Likarica was the one who had broken the Mate bond which made the first Tribird to go insane and started killing everyone and those who has a mate." Lillian explained further.

"So she was the one who did that to the first Tribird and his vampire Mate? No one suspected it was her since we thought she hasn't gotten such powers to break the bond of a Tribird." Tharollin said.

"Probably." Lillian said.

"Hmm, that was why the Tribird started first by killing the whole Druids, maybe he knows whoever that had broken his Mate bond connection is a Druid person." Tharollin muse.

"This is just the starting of the story Tharollin. When she ran into the Cave, she met Tamara in there but..."

"That doesn't look good." Tharollin cut in immediately.

"But she didn't tell Tamara who she is. When she saw that the beast killings didn't end in her kingdom she made a memory wiper which she gave to Tamara to use on the beast and Tamara used it on her instead, turning her into her own slave. She then introduced her to us as Rosa who is now the King mate." Tamara finished her story.

"..."

Whatever Tharollin wanted to say was interrupted by the presence of Jason who appeared right in the sitting room. He didn't even care to look at his surroundings as his eyes were fixed on his Rae. He quickly walked towards her opening his arms.

Rae on the other hand stood up to her feet and ran into his arms.

They stood in the middle of the sitting room holding each other like their life depends on it.

What they just did triggers something in Tharollin's heart as he remembers Avonmora. He wished she was here to hold him just the way his daughter is doing to Jason. He hopes she finds a place in her heart to forgive him.

"I thought you weren't coming." Rae said as soon as they break from their hold.

"I am sorry I didn't follow you immediately my love, I had to sought things out with my father and sorry to say this, that man is as hard as a nut shell." Jason said softly. "He doesn't want me to meet with you or else he will disown me as his son. To him you are the last sacrifice to be used in closing the Gate of Darkness. How did he expects me to kill my Mate when he knows it is impossible." He added.

"You shouldn't have come after me, he will disown you." Rae said sadly.

"He won't, he was just saying that to frightened me. Trust me my love, he won't even remember he said those words to me when I return." Jason told Rae.

"Are you sure?"

"Yeah and even if he does remember, I have places I can go and stay in." Jason said not bothered a bit about his father's threat.

"So what did you tell your father?" Rae asked.

"I told him what he needed to hear and left. He even told me to choose between Lolly and Vivian to get married to. But I don't want those two, I only want you Rae." Jason said.

"I am happy hearing those words from you. It gives me the assurance that my daughter is in safe hands." Tharollin said letting Jason to know of his presence.

Jason turned to look at the Demon King he heard and read so much about. Never in his wildest dreams would he have thought that he is going to see the Demon King in flesh and blood one day.

"So sorry I didn't notice your presence Sire. I am Jason the son of the King." Jason said introducing himself to Rae's father.

"I know your name already, you told me in the library." Tharollin didn't know what he said that out.

"Library?" Rae said confused.

"I mean I know his name from the guards who was coming out from the library when I came to the Wolf festival." Tharollin quickly lied. "And I am glad my daughter has you who will always stood up for her. I saw the way you protect my daughter from falling and from the eyes of everyone when she was transforming." Tharollin said looking at Lillian when he said those words before turning to look at Jason. "Thank you for that. You have a kind heart Jason, do not let go of it." Tharollin told the white haired boy.

"I will say the same of you Sire. The histories I have read all talks about how evil you are but now I know what I read were all lies. You are not as bad as I had thought before Sire. You are a good man and also a good father, even when you know you have darkness in you, you still tried to reason with my father. I should be the one thanking you for not holding what my father told you against me." Jason told Tharollin with a sincere heart.

"I am just like a forest and a night of dark trees, but he who is not afraid of my darkness, will find banks full of roses under my cypresses. You have earned my trust Jason and you now have my full support." Tharollin said smiling at the young man.

Jason hugs Rae in happiness.

Tharollin was now sure of one thing. Jason won't let go of his daughter no matter what.

Jason is a Tribird and his mother had broken the first Tribid bond.

But why does he suddenly feels that history will repeat itself again.

## Chapter 63

'This life is what you make it. No matter what, you're going to mess up sometimes, it's a universal truth. But the good part is you get to decide how you're going to mess it up. Girls will be your friends - they'll act like it anyway. But just remember, some come, some go. The ones that stay with you through everything - they're your true best friends. Don't let go of them. Also remember, sisters make the best friends in the world. As for lovers, well, they'll come and go too. And baby, I hate to say it, most of them - actually pretty much all of them are going to break your heart, but you can't give up because if you give up, you'll never find your soulmate. You'll never find that half who makes you whole and that goes for everything. Just because you fail once, doesn't mean you're gonna fail at everything. Keep trying, hold on, and always, always, always believe in yourself, because if you don't, then who will, sweetie? So keep your head high, keep your chin up, and most importantly, keep smiling, because life's a beautiful thing and there's so much to smile about.'

♥♥♥♥ THAROLLIN ♥♥♥♥

He pushed the thought off his mind. Nothing of such will happen.

"Thank you so much Sire." Jason thanked him as he dispatched himself from Rae to face the Demon. "I promise not to disappoint you or Rae." He added smiling.

"I know you won't disappoint me Jason, you are not like your father." Tharollin said returning the smile.

"Thank you Father." Rae said in happiness going to hug him.

"Anything for you my dear." Tharollin said with the brightest of his smile.

A knock was heard and Lillian went to open the door.

Coming in with her to the sitting room were Jorkallun and Sarah.

Greeting Tharollin Jorkallun went over to where Rae was standing and pull her for a tight hug.

"I thought you would be a crying mess by now but you proved me wrong. You are smiling that means your father accepted Jason." Jorkallun said smiling. "Thank goodness he did because I don't have the strength to be following your father and trying to tell him how good my friend is to his daughter." He added wiping off an imaginary sweat from his forehead.

"Have you met with him before?" Jason asked in wonder as his friend talk as if he knows Tharollin for long. Removing Jorkallun hands from Rae's waist which earned him a loud snort from Jorkallun. Jason placed his hands on Rae's waist possessively, and pull her to his body.



Call his Wolf jealous, he agrees.

"Jeez I was just holding my sister Jason and for your question." Jorkallun places his mouth in Jason ears, obviously they were the same height. Both were over 6'3 feet tall "YuP." Jorkallun answered the P word sounded louder in Jason's ear.

"Where did you meet him?" Jason asked covering his side of ear Jorkallun shouted in eyeing the dragon badly at the process.

"He came with my cousin to school, don't even try to refresh your memory, you did not come to school that day." Sarah said whispering the last part.

"You have a cousin?" At Sarah nod, Jason eyes flew wide in shock. "That means Tharollin has another daughter who is related to you, right?"

"No she is talking about me Jason. I and Sarah are cousins." Rae answered for Sarah. "And yes, she is also a mermaid." She added when she saw the question look in Jason's eyes.

"Wow, this is unbelievable, that means he is your uncle." Jason said facing Sarah who nodded her head in affirmative.

"Thank you Sire for giving my friend a chance to love your daughter and not hold what his father said to you against him." Jorkallun thanked Tharollin.

"..." Sarah opened her mouth to say something but Tharollin beats her to it.

"One more thank you from any one of you and I will change my mind." Tharollin said and Sarah closes her mouth and went to stand beside Jorkallun who quickly hold her waist with his hands and pull her to his body.

"I still don't understand why my father wouldn't believe the Witch here, I believe the Witch I mean Mrs Lillian, I just know something isn't right and my father is too blind to see it." Jason said after a while.

"He is blinded by Tamara, he believes whatever the Priestess tells him. Your father is a hard man who is so stubborn. He won't believe whatever or whoever that tells him the dark side of Tamara unless he sees it with his own eyes, and Tamara is a very cunning sorceress." Tharollin told them.

Looking at Jason with the way he holds his daughter reminds him so much of Avonmora.

"So how can we convince him since he wants me to either marry Lolly or Vivian?" Jason asked.

"Lolly isn't who you think she is." Tharollin began slowly. "She is Tamara's daughter." He added. Jason wasn't there when he revealed the secret to his daughter, Sarah and Jorkallun.

"What did you just say?" The question came from Lillian who eyes were as wide as a sockets.

Jason couldn't believe what he just heard.

Lolly is Tamara's daughter? This is totally unbelievable.

\*\*\*\*

KING ROEN PALACE:

"I asked you a question Tamara and you haven't given me an answer for the past two minutes." King Roen so staring silently at the Priestess.

"The demons are fine my King. They are in my cave and are still alive." Tamara lied. "I was about to tell you about them but forgot to."

"Okay, I will need to see them as soon as possible, as a King I need to see the welfare of my subjects even though they offended us once." King Roen said. "Not that I don't trust you with them but I just need to see them myself and even tell them of their King return." He added.

"I understand my King. I will be on my way now, just let me know when you are ready to visit them." Tamara said forcing herself to smile.

"Tamara, I just hope what your sister revealed to us are not true because when I find out they are true, you won't like what will descend on you."

"I can assure you Roen, they are not true. I will never and can never deceive my people for my own gain." Tamara said.

Roen believed her words. "I have known you for long both you and your sister and I know what you can do that is why I am surprised hearing those allegations from your sister. I am glad you are saying the truth." Roen said.

"Thank you my king for always believing in me, I beg to take my leave now." Tamara said and disappeared.

Roen heaved out a sigh and continue his way to his chamber.

Opening it he entered his room and went straight to sit in his bed.

He feels like Tamara is lying to him but he wasn't so sure.

He will have to go to the Gate of Darkness himself to check if truly what Tharollin had said is true. Avonmora is not frozen, he hopes the demon isn't lying about that.

He was so absorbed in his thoughts that he didn't hear the knocking on his door until his name was called which brought him down to earth.

Recognizing who the voice belongs to, he stood up from his bed and went to open his room door for his wife to enter.

"I am sorry I didn't hear you knocking, I was so lost in thought." King Roen in an apologetic tone as he usher his beautiful wife in.

"It's okay, I came here to tell you something important." Queen Rosa said.

"If it is about what happened today, I don't want to hear about it." King Roen said with a wave of his hand.

"It is not about that my Lord. It is about myself." Queen Rosa said and sat on the bed. "Please sit next to me, whatever I am about to say is better being said when you are sitting next to me." She added.

"Okay my dear." King Reon said and went to sit beside his wife. "So what is it you want to tell me my love?"

"About my past. My memory was wiped and I couldn't remember who I was until my memory came back recently." Queen Rosa began.

"Past? I don't care about your past my dear. Whatever you did in the past remains in the past."

"Not this one my Lord, I need to say it out otherwise it will kill me." She said softly. "But should know I always love you because the love I have for you is genuine and not fake." She added.

"Okay, I am all ears then."

"First of all, my name is not Rosa but Likarica. I am a druid." Queen Rosa

"Likarica?" King Roen said with shocked. The name sounds so familiar to him.

\*\*\*\*

LILLIAN HOUSE:

"Lolly is Tamara's daughter, I don't think Roen knows though." Tharollin responded. "I think she killed the real Lolly and wear the dead girl skin pretending to be the Amazon King daughter. I don't know but something about her beast smells familiar when we fought. I just can't place my fingers on it. But that girl who killed the real Lolly and pretends to be her is Tamara's daughter " He added.

"No wonder Tamara uses my mother sickness to achieve her aim into making me engaging Lolly who surprisedly now happens to be her daughter." Jason said. "My father needs to know about this."

"Didn't you remember my uncle saying the King doesn't believe anything until it happens in front of him." Rae chip in.

"I know that my love, but I am his son. He will have to believe me. I can't wait to expose Tamara." Jason said and place a kissed on Rae's hair tenderly.

"You two love birds have made me remember my Mate." Tharollin said smiling at his daughter and Jason.

"That's reminds me father, how is mother doing, where you able to put back her soul?" Rae asked.

"Yeah, she is breathing fine but is yet to be awake. Her body is slowly adjusting to her soul which was removed from her years ago. I don't want to miss when she finally wakes up." Tharollin said sadly.

"What about my grandpa?" Rae throws in.

"He is fine and is with Avonmora." Tharollin answered.

"You have a grandfather?" It was Lillian asking as she ask what was exactly in everyone's mind.

"Yes granny, he is an Angel and the father to my mother, so that makes him my grandfather." Rae answered.

"That means you are not only a demon and mermaid, you are partly an angel, wow, so COOL." Sarah said as her face lit up in admiration for her cousin.

"Yes she is an Angel, I wouldn't say partly though but that will go for now." Tharollin said and heaved out a sad sigh. "I don't know if my Mate will ever forgive my foolishness."

"Don't worry father, I know mother will forgive you." Rae said with pity.

"Are you sure she will forgive me? What if she wakes and want to see only her father and aunt and not me? What if she hates me? What if she doesn't like me again? What if-"

"Father stop your blabbing and focus on seeing my mother waking up first. If I can forgive you so can my mother. Don't worry yourself too much." Rae told him as she interrupts his rant.

"I just can't help but worry. What if she wakes up now and didn't remember who I to her? Or what if she doesn't recognise me at all? What will I do then?" Tharollin asked.

No one answered as they all shared a knowing look.

"Father, I think you need to go and stay with her until she wakes up." Rae told her father. "That's the only way to stop you from your ranting." She added.

"You know that is a good idea Rae." Tharollin said smiling. "But are you sure you want me to go and not be with you?"

"Yes father, don't worry about me. I am not a kid anymore and I know you love me but will want to be with your Mate the more. I want you to be beside mother when she wakes up. I will be fine all by myself, you should stay with my mother until she wakes up, isn't that right Jason?" Rae said asking her boyfriend.

"Yes sire, a very nice idea coming from my beautiful Mate." Jason said supporting Rae's idea. "I promise to take care of her until you return."

"In that case, I will be leaving Rae in your hands till am back with Avonmora. Are you promising me that you will take good care of my daughter until I am back?" Tharollin ask Jason.

"I am promising you that sire." Jason responded.

"Any way I have nothing to worry about, you have your boyfriend Jason, dragon boy, your cousin and of course Lillian to protect you while I am gone." Tharollin said to his daughter. "I promise you Rae when I am back, I will teach you how to control your darkness that is in you." He added.

"I will be waiting father. Something tells me once you stay with my mother she will wake up, quickly."

"Thank you so much my daughter." Tharollin said gratefully and went ahead to hug his daughter which she returns affectionately. Jason gave them the space they needed.

Dispatching themselves from the hug. Tharollin touched his daughter face tenderly.

"Rae, there is a darkness inside all of us, though mine is more dangerous than most. Still, we all have it—that part of our soul that is irreparably damaged by the very trials and tribulations of life. We are what we are because of it, or perhaps in spite of it. Some use it as a shield to hide behind, others as an excuse to do unconscionable things. But, truly, the darkness is simply a piece of the whole, neither good nor evil unless you make it so. It took a Miracle, a War, and a Mermaid Queen to teach me that. Long is the way and hard, that out of Hell leads up to Light. Do not forget you always have a light in you Rae. You should always know that you are my Ray or rather my Rae of Light. See you soon my dear child." Tharollin said and bid Lillian bye and disappeared.

## Chapter 64

'Laugh, even when you feel too sick or too worn out or tired. Smile, even when you're trying not to cry and the tears are blurring your vision. Sing, even when people stare at you and tell you your voice is crappy. Trust, even when your heart begs you not to. Twirl, even when your mind makes no sense of what you see. Frolick, even when you are made fun of. Kiss, even when others are watching. Sleep, even when you're afraid of what the dreams might bring. Run, even when it feels like you can't run any more. And, always, remember, even when the memories pinch your heart. Because the pain of all your experience is what makes you the person you are now. And without your experience---you are an empty page, a blank notebook, a missing lyric. What makes you brave is your willingness to live through your terrible life and hold your head up high the next day. So don't live life in fear. Because you are stronger now, after all the crap has happened, than you ever were back before it started. I am in awe of flowers. Not because of their colors, but because even though they have dirt in their roots, they still grow. They still bloom.'

♥♥♥♥ LUCIFER AND GAR ♥♥♥♥

"Wow, I never thought I'd see the day Tharollin speaks like this." Lillian spoke first breaking the awkward silence that has befallen them. "He normally doesn't say such kinds of words before."

"I am glad he said those words to me." Rae said.

"His Rae of light."

"Well grandmother will you please excuse us, I want to discuss something with my friends." Rae said and Lillian excused herself going to the kitchen. "So since we are no longer interested in going to the festival, how about we visit the Mer-Clan kingdom and call upon my grandmother, how do you see it?" She asked looking at Jorkallun and Sarah faces.

"I agree with you, instead of going after the festival like we'd planned before, let's go now since we are less busy." Jorkallun supported.

"This is unfair." Jason said with a pout. "Sarah is your cousin and Jorkallun knows about it and I just got to know it now? This is not cool at all. As your soulmate I ought to know things first before others." He added.

"Well no one asked you to stay at home the day we all get to know everything." Jorkallun throws back.

"It doesn't matter if you get to know later what matters is that you now know. So should visit the place or tomorrow like we planned?" Rae demanded.

"Let's go we are not doing anything at home." Sarah answered for them.

"Good, it is settled, let me go and get permission from my grandmother." Rae said and left them to meet her grandmother in the kitchen where she was busy cooking, Lillian loves cooking.

"Granny, I and my friends want to step out a bit, we will be back soon." She told Lillian.

"Okay, don't stay out late, you know I am cooking and you must eat." Lillian respond.

"Thank you granny, see you soon." Rae said and made to leave when Lillian voice stopped her.

"Rae I am sorry for what I did in the festival today, announcing to the whole people present there without seeking your permission first, I am so sorry."

"It's okay granny, you did what you think was right, and it is right. Sorry my father slapped you."

Lillian smiled.

"That doesn't mean you should come back late young lady."

"I won't." Rae promised and left the kitchen to join her friends. "She accepted. Come on guys let's start going, the Caves of the Mer-Clan kingdom is a bit far." She added.

"Don't worry, you forgot that you now have a boyfriend who can fly." Jason said. "I will carry my girlfriend and Jorkallun fly with yours. I am sure you know the way to the Mer-Clan kingdom." He added with a smile.

"Sure." Jorkallun reply.

"Rae aren't you bothered about what happened today? I mean you will be going to school and everyone will be staring at you giving you that evil look because you are Tharollin daughter. And they might want to catch you since the news will travel faster once the festival ends, are you not scared a bit?" Sarah asked.

"They will stare at me but can't touch me, they wouldn't even come near me when I have a Tribird as my soulmate, a Dragon who is my elder brother and my cousin sister sent to always watch over me. My grandmother used to tell me this; If ever there is tomorrow when we're not together... there is something you must always remember. You are braver than you believe, stronger than you seem, and smarter than you think. But the most important thing is, even if we're apart...I'll always be with you. As long as we have each others backs, I don't give a damn about what they think as long as I have you three with me. Come on, let's go." Rae said dismissively and left the sitting room with others following her. "Granny we are going, come lock the door plet!" She shouted opening the front door.

Lillian came and smiled at the four of them. "See you all later." She said shutting the door and locking it.



"Well, to my boyfriend who fly I think it's time I need a lift." Rae announced hitting Jason on his head.

"You can pass your message without hitting me on my head." Jason said.

"What did you say handsome boy?" Rae said hitting Jason's head harder than before as she used her old nickname on him.

Jorkallun and Sarah burst out laughing.

"What's so funny pretty boy?" Rae demanded hitting Jorkallun on his head too.

"So funny Rae, can we start going now?" Jorkallun said and didn't wait for a reply and he transformed into his Red Dragon making sure one of his dragon wings touched Rae nicely hair, scattering her hair all around her face. Bending his huge dragon head to the floor, Sarah climbed and sat down on his smooth dragon scales. "Race you there Rae!" Sarah shouted and Jorkallun flew up higher.

"Come on carry me, I don't want to lose to Sarah." Rae said to Jason setting her disarray hair right.

"I won't until you tell me sorry."

"Sorry for what?"

"For hitting me in my head."

"They are going to first us Jason, when we come back I will tell you sorry."

"Nope I need to hear the sorry right now or else we are not moving an inch from here." Jason said moving closer to her with a mischievous smile.

"Okay fine, I am sorry. Happy now?"

Pretending to think about it. "I don't know if that comes from your mind but-" Jason was interrupted.

"I swear by my father if Sarah first me I will kill you in your sleep and I am deadly serio-"

Grabbing her shoulders he leaned his head and capture her lips with his, silencing her and kissing her passionately. Rae kissed him back immediately, moaning loudly.

His hands slipped down the smooth curve of her sides to rest on her hips as he drew her in.

His Phoenix fire wings came out from his back and encircled them while they are still kissing, covering them and when it disperse, Jason and Rae were no longer standing at the corridor of the house.

\*\*\*\*

King Roen Palace:

"Likarica name sounds familiar to me, I have heard of that name before but can't place where I heard it from exactly." King Roen told his wife.

"That is because I normally don't come out often. I am Princess Likarica of the Druids." Queen Rosa said. "I was the druid w-who had broken the mate bond between the first Tribird and his mate. I was the cause for making Taloc going insane and killing everyone. I didn't know breaking the Mate connection would kill his mate."

King Roen laughed out loud. He was a young prince when the incident took place then, he could vividly remember when it was mentioned a powerful druid was the cause of the ravaging beast. "Please if it is a joke you better stop it. I have a lot to think about." Roen said.

"Do you think I will just wake up one morning and and form all these to tell you?"

"Yes, I have lived with you Rosa and I would have known if you have magic. But for the years we lived together I haven't seen any sign of magic you are hiding in you which proves you are a druid. So stop all these lies. I am not offended by our son behavior if that is what makes you to come here. I am already used to his behavior." King Roen told Rosa not believing a word she said.

Roen didn't believe her?

Rosa thought surprised herself.

Performing magic now to prove to Roen that she is saying the truth would put her and her whole family in danger.

The first Tribird is still out there waiting for a sign from her, just a sign of magic from her.

"You don't believe me Roen?"

"No I don't." King Roen answered without missing a beat. He stood up to his feet and Rosa stood up too. "Let's go to the festival together my dear and stop all these nonsense of you being a Druid. Even if you are a druid, it is in your past which I don't care." He added with a smile and they left his room going towards the festival.

The festival ended sooner and King Roen bid all the Kings and Queens their goodbyes as they left for their Kingdoms.

None of the wolves were leaving since tonight is the full moon and tonight is the night some will get to meet their soulmate.

Queen Rosa mind wasn't at ease as she and Roen brother wife walked along her flowers garden which Jason adored.

There has to be something she can do without using magic to make Roen believe her.

A plan, she needs a plan.

\*\*\*\*

Dean was surprised when he saw Tamara seated on the bed.

Lolly doesn't look surprise at all.

"You do know he is around mother." Lolly said referring to the Amazon King.

"Yes I know. Did you succeed in getting their blood?" Tamara asked whispering low.

"We did not succeed mother. And there is more, Rae has a cousin, her name is Sarah, and she took the blood from Dean after he successfully collected Rae's blood."

"A cousin? This is surprising. First she is the daughter of Avonmora and Tharollin and now she has a cousin?" Tamara voice was filled in shock.

"Don't you know she is related to Tharollin?" Lolly asked.

"No and I am very sure the water man who is Lucifer doesn't even know about the existence of Rae." Tamara replied.

"So what should we do now since the first plan failed?" Dean asked.

"We report to Taloc and tell him our plan didn't work. He will surely come up with another idea." Tamara said.

"Then let's go and tell him now. I can't wait for all these to be over and have Jason as mine for life." Lolly said with all seriousness.

"Of course my dear." Tamara said and touched her daughter's shoulder and Lolly in turn touched Dean's shoulders.

The three disappeared instantly.

\*\*\*\*

Appearing in front of the Big Cave that leads to the entrance into the Mer-Clan kingdom, still kissing as one of his hand cup one of the breasts of Rae as they deepen their kiss. His fire wings went inside his back.

The loud roar of a dragon stopped their heavy make out session and Jorkallun landed in front of them.

Sarah jumped down and smile at the two. "I saw what you were doing." She said in a singing tone and watches as Jorkallun changed into his human form.

"And there is something called mind your business Sarah." Jason said.

"Whatever, let's go in. I can't wait to see my aunt I heard so much about from my mother." Sarah said smiling and winking at Rae.

The four entered the cave.

\*\*\*\*

SOMEWHERE FAR AWAY.....

Lucifer and Gar appeared in front of a huge tree. Lucifer immediately made gesture with his hand and the tree divided into two. Inside the magical tree was a room, a dark room.

"Enter the tree my friend, your skin is inside the dark room. The tree has one rule which goes; Don't enter me twice. And since I was the one who kept it in there, I can't enter the tree unless the person who came for his skin do."

Gar immediately entered the tree, entering the room. He glanced everywhere and saw his skin, his eyesight was sharp. Picking it up, the skin magically covered his whole form. He was no longer in his water form, he is now in his body.

He heard a sound and turn to look and to his horror, he saw the tree closing on him.

"I kept my promise Gar, I returned your skin but unfortunately for you, you won't live for long." Lucifer said.

"How could you do this to me? You promised to give me more powers after you return my skin." Gar said and ran, trying to jump out of the tiny hole remaining but he couldn't, he wasn't in his water form anymore.

"I lied." Lucifer replied with a smirk.

Gar turned to look back at the dark room when he heard a noise, he saw the walls has started to sprout of sharp swords and were closing on him fast. He turned to look at Lucifer.

"Please, don't do this to me. I have been your faithful servant who had served you for years. I don't want to die now please Lucifer, you promised me forever in your kingdom." Gar pleaded.

Lucifer laughed out. "Have you forgotten that I am called as the father of all liars by the Creator himself? What made you think yours would be different? You are just a sacrifice that will be used to bring back my fallen dead angels to life. Goodbye Gar."

The loud scream from Gar as the walls finally closes on him made Lucifer laughed out the more. The tree finally closed. Gar blood could be seen surrounding the tree.

Soon his Fallen Angels will rise again. For now, he has a new friend to visit.

## Chapter 65

'At the end of the day, you should try to remember that it's not about the number of followers you have or the numbers of likes, comments, and shares your posts are getting. It's the number of people who will be present in the hospital room when you fall terribly sick. It's the number of people who will remember your birthday like they remember their first name. It's the number of people who will invite you to celebrate Christmas or new year's eve. It's the number of people who will actually show up to look at your newborn child or to bless your newly bought house. It's the number of people who will actually cross an ocean to see your face. It's the number of people who will wipe your tears when one of your parents passes away. It's the number of people who will make a slightly larger than a thumb effort to be there for you.'

♥♥♥♥ SELENA AND A PLAN (Part One) ♥♥♥♥♥

A ball made of light lightened the dark cave until they came out of the opening at the far end of the cave.

They came out in an open place where the afternoon sun rays were seen shining upon the different sizes of caves in different directions.

Putting off her magic light out. Like normal, everywhere looked so old, dirty and more bushy than the last time she visited, but that didn't stop Rae as she walked further and the rest followed her.

She knows the cave she normally sees Selena whenever she visited. She was thinking of how to cut her arm and summon her grandmother since they were coming unexpectedly with her friends. She just hopes that her grandmother will appear immediately she summons her.

She heard a splash of water which brought her out of her thoughts. She walked faster towards one of the caves where she knew where the sound was coming from.

She hopes.....

Rae stopped once she got to the cave, sitting inside the filled dark water was SELENA.

Jason, Jorkallun and Sarah stared with their mouths wide open when they saw her.

She is real...

Right in front of them was a beautiful mermaid, who was still splashing the water from the big cave with her white tail to her body. She turned and smiled at them.

"You are real? You are really Selena?" Jason asked still in shock. This is the goddess he had heard so much about, he was told she was a myth.

"Yes and as you can see I am Rae's grandmother." Selena answered Jason and faces Rae. "I have been expecting you four since." She added smiling.

"I wasn't expecting to see you here, I thought I would have to cut my arms and allow my blood to flow before you will appear since you only appear when I am alone and not in the company of others." Rae told her.

"Yes that's because your blood is precious plus you took absolutely breathtaking in your mermaid form, I know this would happen one day when you will walk among your peers without using a spell to cover up who your really are. Rae could you tell your friends to shut their mouths before I send a fly inside their open mouths." Selena said jokingly and breathed in deeply Jason, Jorkallun and Sarah closing their mouths. "Hmm I smell a mermaid with you, tell me, who is she?"

"She is Sarah and is my cousin. She told me her mother and you are related." Rae answered.

Selena turned to look at Sarah. "But she doesn't even look like any of my sisters. If not for scent I wouldn't have known she is a mermaid." She said after studying Sarah. "Unless she is using a hidden spell to hide her real self like you Rae."

"You are right ma'am, my girlfriend is hiding under a spell." Jorkallun told the mermaid.

"Remove your hidden spell so I can see the real you." Selena said softly.

Sarah opened her mouth and a tiny blue ball floated out from her mouth and landed on her open palm. Sarah transformed into her mermaid form with legs instead of tail. Her blue long hair was flowing freely behind her back.

Rae stared at her in shock so was Jason.

"Wow beauty runs in your family Rae." Jason said going to hug Rae from behind and at the same process hits Jorkallun playfully on his shoulders. "You caught a good treasure Jorkallun. We are lucky a guys." He added smiling.

"Yup, so lucky." Jorkallun said smiling and holding Sarah's hand and caressing it tenderly.

"Don't tell me you are Lydia's daughter?" Selena asked with surprise interrupting their beautiful moments.

"You guess right aunt, my mother is Lydia and i am your niece." Sarah confirmed.

"Wow, how is she doing? It's being long I heard or saw her last. Do you know how the rest of my sisters are doing?"

"My mother is fine aunt and same goes for the rest of my aunties, they are all fine." Sarah replied.

"So what brought you far away from the Sea of Nile down to the Supernaturals, across the reef Sarah?" Selena asked.

"My mother sent me here to look after Rae, somehow she got to know about her and asked to watch over her. Have been here ever since then watching over my cousin." Sarah explained.

"That's nice of your mother, I once told her about my daughter Avonmora and maybe she has been watching her from there for her to know about the existence of Rae. It has been a long time since we spoke after my banishment the Sea of Nile." Selena said smiling at the mention of her sister and daughter.

"She wants to see you aunt and talk to you, and grandfather misses you." Sarah told her.

"I misses them too. I will come home, she will see me when it's time. Just tell her I said my regards and thanks for watching out for my granddaughter." Selena said.

"So grandmother the day my father came here you knew he was my father right?" Rae asked.

"Yes, I knew he was coming and you came here at the right moment. It has been decided by the universe that your meeting will take place." Selena answered.

"So what are you also not telling me right now?" Rae asked.

"You should be careful Rae, not everything is real out there. That is all I have to say to you for now." Selena answered.

"What about Jason's mom you told me to heal, did the universe know I and Jason will fall in love with each other after that night?" Rae asked again.

"Yes, you and him are destined to meet and be together, though great trials may come but your love you have for each other will see you through till the end." Selena responded.

"Sorry for asking ma'am but can you fight?" Jorkallun asked.

"No I cannot fight. Mermaids are known as healers not fighters, except those who are half breed." Selena replied.

"Like myself since my father is a Centaur (half human and half horse) and Rae father is a demon King." Sarah said and a thought suddenly came to her. "Aunt please can you tell if I and Jorkallun are soulmate before the full moon comes out tonight?" She asked.



Selena stared at the duo briefly before raising her head to look at the sky. "The universe says you are true Mate." She said looking back at them.

"I knew it!" Jorkallun said smiling. "My dragon choose you as his mate and I am so happy we are mates." He added pulling Sarah for a tight hug.

"Thank you universe." Sarah said in the air as she returns the hug. Her heart was now at peace. She and Jorkallun will be together, her fears has lessened.

"I need to tell my father you are finally my Mate." Jorkallun added in excitement and kissed Sarah deeply.

"I will be coming with you, this will give me the opportunity to know your father." Sarah said breaking the kissing and turned around to face Selena. "Thank you Aunt, I was scared of losing my Jorkallun but now my heart is now strong again. I hope you are not angry I am leaving?" She added.

"Not at all, do not forget to say hi to Lydia for me when you comminute with her." Selena said.

"I won't." Sarah replied and faces Rae."..."

"You don't have to say anything Sarah, follow Jorkallun and tell me how his kingdom look like when we see." Rae told Sarah smiling which Sarah returns.

"Thank you." Sarah said and finally faces her beloved. "I am ready to go."

Jorkallun transformed into his Dragon and waited until Sarah was seated comfy on his dragon scales back before taking off.

"So grandmother, I met an Angel who happens to be my mother father which automatically makes him my grandfather and you know what that means, right? He and you were lovers right?" Rae asked going to sit at a dry place in the cave where water wasn't touching and created space for her boyfriend to sit.

"Yes my dear, but it is all in the past." Selena answered.

"Is he the one who you said will free my mother since you are not in that position to free her?" Rae asked.

"Again you are right." Selena answered.

"Why don't you want to see him? He unfreeze my mother at the Gate of Darkness and I know he will be happy to see you." Rae said waiting for her grandmother's answer.

"We will see when it's time."

"Did he hurt you?" Rae asked.

"Yes he did but it's all in the past now. He realized his mistakes." Selena responded.

"Will you forgive him when he ask for your forgiveness?" Jason asked this time.

"Maybe or maybe not." Selena replied.

Rae continued to asked Selena various questions which she answered.

Jason looks at the sky and saw how night was fast approaching. "Sorry to cut in but we have to go back home, the full moon will be out soon plus her guardian would be furious with me if Rae comes home late." He said to Selena apologetic.

"No problem Jason." Selena said. "It was nice meeting you."

Getting up to his feet he offered Rae his hand which she took and stood up.

"Thank you Grandma, I will come some other time to see you alone." Rae promised.

"I will be expecting you."

Jason phoenix fire wings sprouts out from his back. He held Rae's hips and was about covering them when Selena's voice stopped them.

"Jason know this, the Wolf of the warrior of good will revive the Lady of the North. The contessa of War will join forces with the Lord of Lies. The Kingdoms of the plain will be restored by the man of the North. A time of serenity will follow, good bye Jason."

## Chapter 66

'Today, many will awaken with a fresh sense of inspiration. Why not you?

Today, many will open their eyes to the beauty that surrounds them. Why not you?

Today, many will choose to leave the ghost of yesterday behind and seize the immeasurable power of today. Why not you?

Today, many will break through the barriers of the past by looking at the blessings of the present. Why not you?

Today, for many the burden of self doubt and insecurity will be lifted by the security and confidence of empowerment. Why not you?

Today, many will rise above their believed limitations and make contact with their powerful innate strength. Why not you?

Today, many will choose to live in such a manner that they will be a positive role model for their children. Why not you?

Today, many will choose to free themselves from the personal imprisonment of their bad habits. Why not you?

Today, many will choose to live free of conditions and rules governing their own happiness. Why not you?

Today, many will find abundance in simplicity. Why not you?

Today, many will be confronted by difficult moral choices and they will choose to do what is right instead of what is beneficial. Why not you?

Today, many will decide to no longer sit back with a victim mentality, but to take charge of their lives and make positive changes. Why not you?

Today, many will take the action necessary to make a difference. Why not you?

Today, many will make the commitment to be a better mother, father, son, daughter, student, teacher, worker, boss, brother, sister, & so much more. Why not you?

Today is a new day!

Many will seize this day.

Many will live it to the fullest.

Why not you?'

♥♥♥♥ SELENA AND A PLAN (Part Two) ♥♥♥♥

"I don't understand what you just said ma'am." Jason said very confused by what Selena had told him.

Selena only smile, "You will get to know when it's time Jason. Take care of my granddaughter for me." Selena said and entered the dark water splashing water on Rae and Jason as she disappeared beneath it. Right in front of them, the cave which was filled up with water dried up and was filled with thorns and dirt. The statue of a mermaid goddess, Selena, was seen at the middle of the cave filled with dust.

Jason has to blinked his eyes a multiple times to be sure he wasn't dreaming.

"She could have answered my question before jumping back into the water." Jason muttered.

"That is how she speaks whenever she wants to leave. You will get used to it." Rae told Jason with shrugs shoulders. "Come on, let's go I don't want my grandmother to shout."

Jason carried Rae in a bride way and ran faster in his Vampire speed to Lillian's house.

\*\*\*\*

Kingdom Of Dragons:

Landing gracefully near his palace, Jorkallun waited until Sarah had jumped off his back before he transformed into his human form, fully clothed.

Sarah looked at everywhere in awe as she saw various colors and sizes of Dragons flying above them.

Taking Sarah's hand in his large ones, he lead her straight into the palace towards the throne where he knew his father would be.

They were greeted by the guards as they made their way to the throne room.

His father, Vermitrax, was there sitting down and discussing with their Dragon general when they entered the throne room. Vermitrax dismissed the general when he saw the look his son gave to him.

Once they were alone Vermitrax stared at Sarah.

"Is this Rae?" Vermitrax asked with a raised brow.

Sarah heart skip a beat when he made mention of Rae. Does his father prefer Rae and not her?

She thought hoping Vermitrax won't be a second Roen that would kick against their love.

"No father, it is Sarah. The one I told you about, the one my dragon chooses as his Mate." Jorkallun said and Vermitrax nodded his head with a sigh of 'oh' Jorkallun smiled afterwards. "It has been confirmed that her mermaid bond matches with me. We are true Mate father." He added gazing at Sarah with love in his eyes.

"I am glad son, finally you will soon be a man. I can't wait to play with my grandchildren" Vermitrax said with pride making Sarah blush as Jorkallun groaned. "Welcome to my family Sarah, my son has told me a lot about you and his sister Rae, mostly you. He can't keep his mouth shut when your name is mentioned." He added and smiled at Sarah kindly.

"Thank you Sire." Sarah shyly said.

"Nah, call me father instead." Vermitrax told her still smiling and turned his gaze to Jorkallun. "Well let me not beat around the bush, when are you going to mate with her jorkallun? Does she know about the mating ceremony that Dragons do before they officially becomes bonded for life?" He asked his son.

"Father we shouldn't be discussing this in her presence." Jorkallun said glaring at his father playfully.

"She needs to know son. You are not bonded to her in the dragon spirit. You better hurry up and mate with her before someone else steals her from you and mate her. You've forgotten we have some unmated dragons around who will find your mate attractive." Vermitrax said ignoring his son look and looking at Sarah. "She is very pretty son so you'd better hurry up."

"What ceremony?" Sarah asked suddenly interested.

"I will explain to you when we are alone." Jorkallun answered her quickly giving his father a pleading look to drop the matter.

Vermitrax sign sadly.

"What is it father?" Jorkallun asked worriedly.

"I wish they are still alive to see how you've grown into a young handsome man who will soon be mated to his chosen one." Vermitrax replied, trying to hide his sadness.

"Father, where mother and my sister maybe, they will be happy too and wouldn't want to see you sad. I have you and that is all that matters." Jorkallun told him.

"Okay, so when am I seeing my grandchildren?" His sad face was replaced with a happy one.

"Father!" Jorkallun yelled in embarrassment and grab Sarah by her hand. "Let's leave here my love." He said and walked out with Sarah leaving a smiling Vermitrax behind.

"You know I am saying the truth, sooner or later you will give me one!" Vermitrax shouted after them.

"Ignore him Sarah." Jorkallun said as he walked her to his rooms.

"To be frank I was kinda enjoying it." Sarah said with a happy sigh. "I never knew dragons have different colors, you are the only dragon in school." Sarah said as a blue dragon flew past them.

"You are right, but each dragon has their own role." Jorkallun respond.

"Okay, so can you tell me their specific roles they have?" Sarah asked.

Glad the topic has been changed Jorkallun smiled and started explaining to his beloved.

**Black Dragons:** Palace guards. They move more quietly than other dragons, and they blend with the night. Fifth largest.

**White Dragons:** Cloud makers/Secondary guards. They blend with the clouds. Fastest flyers, smallest, but have the largest wingspan.

**Green Dragons:** Food suppliers. They hunt for the Royal family and all who live in the palace. They are less likely to be spotted on the ground due to their color.

**Purple Dragons:** Royal guards. They protect the immediate Royal family. Third largest of all dragon breeds.

**Blue Dragons:** Royal patrol. They make sure the dragons that do not live in the palace or kingdom don't cause trouble outside the Kingdom.

**Gold Dragons:** Scent hunters. They track out the hiding place of a dragon.

**Red Dragons:** Royal Family and Rarest. Largest of all dragons, when extremely angry their red hair changes into fire. Skills unknown (so far Vermitrax and Jorkallun are the only Red dragons alive at this moment).

"Wow that is a lot hell of an explanation." Sarah said as he stops in front of a door.

"This is where I lay my head or rather my room." Jorkallun announced opening the door and stepping in.

Sarah entered the room and looked around. The painting of the room was blue just like hers and nothing fancy about it. She remembered when he told her how much he loves the blue color.

Going to sit on the bed they stare at themselves.

"So tell me more about the Dragon mate ceremony?" Sarah suddenly asked.

"It's a ceremony to seal our bond forever. Dragons have sexual intercourse with their chosen mate on the ceremony. It's a very painful procedure because I have to mate with you in my human form and dragon form, it's hurtful." He explained playing with his fingers showing how nervous he is.

Sarah went silent for a few minutes before telling Jorkallun "Let's mate Jorkallun. I want to feel connected with you in every way."

"Do you know what you are saying Sarah?" Jorkallun asked with surprise.

"I know what I am saying, let's mate Jorkallun, mark me as yours." Sarah answered with seriousness.

"Sarah..." Jorkallun began to say.

Standing up to her feet. "Unless you don't love me as you claimed Jorkallun. You are just using me like the way you did with Lolly, right?"

"No Sarah don't ever think of that, I love you and only you. I can never dream of hurting you. I am only concerned about the pains you will experience." Jorkallun said standing up and pulling Sarah into his embrace hugging her tightly.

"As long as it's you the pains are worth it. I am fully ready to become your mate for life Jorkallun." Sarah said losing herself in his embrace. "I just want to become yours in body and soul." She added.

"Is it really what you want?" Jorkallun softly asked.

"Yes Jorkallun, it is all I want." Sarah answered.

"Okay then my love, wait here for me and do not come out. I have to inform my father and start the preparation." Jorkallun said kissing Sarah's forehead tenderly. "Luckily for us, tonight is the full moon."

He left without another word heading straight to the throne room.

—

Vermitrax was surprised to see his son again who left his presence a few minutes ago.

"Jorkallun you are back so soon."

"Yes father." Jorkallun said happy that his father was still alone. "I came here to tell you that Sarah has decided to mate with me." He said with a smile.

"That's good news, the ceremony should start right away. I will inform the Dragons about the ceremony and also the Lady Morgan who will prepare your bride for the ceremony." Vermitrax told his son. "You know you won't see Sarah for now as they prepare you and her respectively until it's time for you to mate with her." He added.

"Thank you father." Jorkallun said hugging his father.

\*\*\*"

Lillian's House:

Jason slowed down his speed as Lillian's house came into view. By the time he was at the front door of Lillian, he was running normally. He drop Rae gently to the ground. Before he could knock on the door it was opened by Lillian.

"Glad you kept your promise Rae." Lillian said opening the door wider for them to pass before locking it.

"Shouldn't I get a thank you from you Mrs Lillian? At least I was the one who carried your overweight granddaughter to your house." Jason grumbled.

"Are you saying I have weight?" Rae gasped out loudly and ran up the stairs to her room without waiting for his response.

Entering her room, she bolted the door and entered the bathroom, pulling off her dress, she stares at herself.

"I look okay." She said to herself and stepped into the bathtub. Taking her time to take her bath, she stepped out of the bathroom her white towel was tied securely on her chest. In her haste, she forgot to take one of the clothes Jason bought her to the bathroom.



She was surprised when she saw Jason standing in the middle of her room in different clothes. "How did you get in here the door was locked and window too?"

"Your grandmother teleport me here before she went to the witch's library to check on a book." He answered as if it was a normal thing.

Of truth, Lillian knew tonight was the night of full moon and she left her house to give Jason and Rae some privacy since the moon will take over their senses soon.

"She went out without telling me?"

"She asked me to tell you which I just did right now." Jason answered.

"And your clothes?"

"I went back to the Palace to change and take a bath and when I returned you were still taking your bath." Jason said walking towards her. "You know I was joking about what I said earlier, right?"

"I know, I use that to get angry to dodge the questions my grandmother would fire me."

"Sorry for saying that."

"Sorry accepted."

"You look sexy Rae what I would do to get that towel from your body." Jason said reaching her trying to control himself. "You are driving me crazy Rae. I am restraining myself Rae."

"Can you just shut up and kiss me already or should I take it by force Jason?" Rae said placing her hands around his neck.

"As my Queen commands." Jason said and bit her earlobe, making Rae gasp in surprise. Her heart boomed in her chest and she realized her earlobe was sensitive. Really sensitive.



He carried her and lay her on the bed covering her with his body.

All Rae's thoughts were incoherent as she wriggled underneath him, wanting him closer. Jason smirked and kissed her making Rae shudder in delight.

His lips moved to her jaw, her neck, where he licked and sucked a bit. Then in a swift motion, he snuck his free hand to her abdomen shifting the towel a little and slid his hand to her breasts fondling with them.

Rae moaned as he pinched her hard nipples making Rae close her eyes in ecstasy.

## Chapter 67

'Life is similar to a bus ride.

The journey begins when we board the bus. We meet people along our way of which some are strangers, some friends and some strangers yet to be friends. There are stops at intervals and people board in. At times some of these people make their presence felt, leave an impact through their grace and beauty on us fellow passengers while on other occasions they remain indifferent. But then it is important for some people to make an exit, to get down and walk the paths they were destined to because if people always made an entrance and never left either for the better or worse, then we would feel suffocated and confused like those people in the bus, the purpose of the journey would lose its essence and the journey altogether would neither be worthwhile nor smooth.'

♥♥♥♥♥ A PLAN ♥♥♥♥♥



He carried her and lay her on the bed covering her with his body.

All Rae's thoughts were incoherent as she wriggled underneath him, wanting him closer. Jason smirked and kissed her making Rae shudder in delight.

His lips moved to her jaw, her neck, where he licked and sucked a bit. Then in a swift motion, he snuck his free hand to her abdomen shifting the towel a little and slid his hand to her breasts fondling with them.

Rae moaned as he pinched her hard nipples making Rae close her eyes in ecstasy.

He untied the towel and with one swift motion fling the towel across the room. Rae blushes furiously, seeing as it was the first time someone saw her naked and she fought the urge to cover her chest with her hands. But Jason was now feasting on her breasts as though they were the most wonderful fruits in the world, squeezing them and making Rae go mad. He then put his mouth on one of her nipples, making her almost explode. Rae moaned, calling out his name, and he just kept going not caring that he was driving her to madness.

Spreading her legs wide open, he stayed in between them.

He licked the valley between her breasts, licking then his mouth on hers and he kissed her hotly, passionately, sexily and made Rae whimper as he pinched her nipples again. He rocked his denim-covered hard-on against her and deepened the kiss as one hand caress one of her breasts.

Rae felt Jason's hand sliding down her abdomen. She gasped into the kiss and a sudden wave of uncertainty went through her.

Jason felt Rae retreating and ended the kiss so he could look at her. "Trust me." He said in that sexy voice of his.

Rae bit her lip wanting to do just that but feeling the restraint. She was a virgin. "I am.." she said, gasping, she took a deep breath. "I am still a v-virgin, you know..."

"I know." Jason said, sliding his hand to her waist. "That is why you should trust me. I am not going to hurt you."

Rae believed him and nodded. He grinned at her and kept kissing her while his hand slipped under and touched her down there.

Rae moaned aloud as Jason's fingers explored the outside of her sex, feeling how wet she was. She blushed in embarrassment making Jason chuckled and suddenly his fingers were on her clitoris, making her scream with pleasure.

He pinched her clitoris making her groan and moan and gasp in ecstasy, she needed to come, she wanted to orgasm so hard. His lips moved from her lips to her breast, sucking and licking her hard nipple. While his other hand taking care of the neglected one. His hand on her clitoris moved faster than before and when Rae thought she couldn't take it anymore, he slipped one of his finger right inside her cunt. That was when Rae couldn't take it anymore, she orgasmed so hard, black dots appeared in her vision. She screamed his name as a wave of wetness from her sex slid into his finger.

Her body was limp mush of incoherence as he took his hand out from her sex area. His fingers were wet from her juice and Rae saw through heavy lidded eyes that he sucked his fingers in a sexy move. She blushes in embarrassment.

Rae eyes slid down to his lower body and could see his bulge and she wanted to ease him just like the way he eased her.

Strength returned and Rae stood up from the bed, standing beside him, she put her hand on his shoulders. Jason raised an eyebrow in question but didn't say- and didn't object as she pushed him down her bed.

Straddling him she cup his face in her hands and kissed him with all the passion in her. His slid his hands to her butt and squeezed, making Rae moaned.

"It's my turn." Rae murmured taking his hand off her butt.

Jason looked at her with lust in his eyes. "You turn?" His voice was husky and rough and sexy with arousal.

Rae gave him her best sexy grin. "My turn to give you pleasure." She said with a low voice as she started to remove his shirt and took it off him. Seeing his sexy hot and muscular chest arouse Rae that her mouth watered.

Acting by a primitive instincts, she took one of his sexy nipple in her mouth and sucked. His reactions was epic.

But Rae wasn't finished, she licked and sucked his nipple like he had done hers and licked his body down, right to his short.

Grinning and pulling the zipper down his hard-on sprang to life. Jason hissed with relief and strain at the same time as his cock was freed and display in front of Rae and not closed in his clothes.

Rae has seen a lot of dicks accidentally when she was still in her Witch school including seeing the Vampire Prince when he caught Kate and him.

She forced herself to be bold and cupped the base of his cock with her hand. It jerked in my hand, pulsed and she thought it was wonder how hot his sex was.

Rae rubbed her hand up and down his long and thick cock and he groaned, cursed and growled at her to move faster. Rae did, rubbing in a hurried pace over and over again until she was dying to taste him to see what a dick tastes like.

Kissing the head of his shaft, and Jason shuddered, making Rae stronger, braver and bolder.

She kept on rubbing his shaft just as she pulled all of his head into her mouth making him groan out in pleasure as she tried to take as much as she could into her mouth. Jason cursed, hands fisting in her hair. Rae started making a rhythm, sucking and rubbing and even grabbing his balls and massaging them.

They lost track of time as Rae continue to suck, lick and hummed round his cock.

"I am going to cum." Jason growled, pushing the dick into her mouth deeper than before fucking her mouth, but Rae didn't care. "If you don't want it inside, take your mouth off me, Rae."

She wanted to try it, sucking him dry and swallow his cum. Her curiosity didn't let her do otherwise, so she just sucked, rubbed until his body tensed and she felt a sticky juice in her mouth. She swallowed every drop of it until he didn't have anymore to give to her. And then his cock, his beautiful, tried cock, lost his hardness and pleasure filled Jason's face.

Rae crawled up back to Jason and he grabbed her face and kissed her with fierceness and intensity that made Rae moan aloud. She kissed him back.

"You're amazing." Jason said breaking off the kiss and leaning his forehead on Rae. "You gave me one of the best orgasms I've ever had."

Rae smiled.

They stayed there, Rae sitting on him as their foreheads pressed to each other, gazing into the eyes of the other, living in their private bubble.

"You know." Jason said after the most comfortable silence. "Your eyes are beautiful."

Rae eyes widened. "Lair."

"They are more beautiful now that you are in your mermaid side. Sexy and beautiful. I love them."

"Your eyes are way prettier than mine." Rae told him. "The way they changed into different colors are sexy. They are really beautiful."

He grinned "Yours are more sexier." He winked. "And you are hot and all mine."

Rae smiled and yawned tiredly.

"Tired?" Jason asked at Rae's nod

"Let me bath you so that we can sleep." He added and didn't wait for a response, he carried Rae in bride style back to the bathroom.

30 minutes later...

Jason came out for the bathroom and carried Rae to her bed. Dropping her gently, he covered her with bedsheet.

"My grandmother, isn't she back from the library?" Rae asked sleepily.

"No my love." Jason answered. He wondered why Lillian isn't back yet from the library. Unless.....the full moon.

She doesn't want to be in the house when they get down to it. Jason smiled briefly, he will try and control his Wolf.

"Please don't go anywhere, stay with me." Rae said barely in a whisper as she allowed the sleep to take over her.

Kissing her forehead. "I won't leave you."

Once he was sure Rae was sound asleep, he entered the bathroom to take his own bath and join Rae in bed.

\*\*\*\*\*

Taloc Hidden Place:

Tamara, Lolly and Dean appeared once again in the same room which was filled with books.

Taloc saw them and stood up from his seat. "Did you bring their blood?" He asked eagerly.

"No father, things take a turn around and we couldn't bring their blood as planned." Lolly answered.

"Then we need another strategy to collect their blood without their knowledge." Taloc said.

"Dean nearly succeeded in bringing Rae's blood but was stopped by her stupid cousin." Lolly huff out in annoyance.

"Like I said before, we need a plan." Taloc said thinking hard.

"I can help if you want Taloc." Lucifer voice was heard as he appeared in the presence of the four.

Tamara, Lolly and Dean all moved back when they saw the intruder.

"How did you find out where I live?" Taloc hissed the words at him.

"I followed your dark aura my friend. I told you I can't ignore that strong scent." Lucifer replied with a grin. "But I am here to really help you."

"Who is he father?" Lolly asked taking in the strange man.

"He is known as Luc-" Taloc began but got interrupted by Lucifer.

"I am Lucas and I am your father's newest friend." Lucifer said lying about his name and turned his gaze on Taloc. "I don't like being refer with that Taloc."

"He is Lucas." Taloc said eventually. "My friend."

"So does he know about our plan?" Tamara asked.

"Not really, I only told him how I want to break a Mate bond and merge the male one with my daughter." Taloc answered.

"Your daughter is beautiful Taloc." Lucifer said in admiration. "Very beautiful."

"Keep your eyes off my daughter, she has someone she is in love with." Taloc gritted out the words in anger.

"So who is this Rae of a girl?" Lucifer asked changing the topic.

Glad they weren't talking about her beautiful pretty self again. "She is Tharollin daughter." Lolly answered making Lucifer eyebrows raised in surprise.

"Tharollin? Are you by any chance referring to the Demon King?" He asked with curiosity.

"Yes, that stupid girl is the daughter of Tharollin." Tamara answered this time.

"And she is the one I love which Taloc will merge with me after the bond has been broken." Dean chip in making Lucifer glance at him briefly.

"Can I see her? It will make me know what to use in bringing out her blood." Lucifer said.

"Sure." Tamara said and whispered some magic words. A veil was seen in their middle and it open to reveal a sleeping Rae.

Lucifer was shocked when he saw the sleeping beauty. The lady before him was beautiful, more beautiful than Taloc daughter. Her different colours of hair really brought the shape of her beautiful face out.

"My beautiful Rae, she is all I want and would ever need. I really love her." Dean said looking at Rae in lustful stares.

Lolly suddenly feels jealous at what Dean said but brush it off.

Lucifer slowly turned to look at Dean who was still staring at Rae sleeping form.

"I see." He mused softly turning back to stare at the gorgeous lady once more.

"What are your plans Lucas?" Taloc asked glaring at Rae.

"I have a plan, a very good one Taloc." Lucifer said not taking his eyes off Rae. He made Tharollin work for him, he would do the same to his beautiful daughter.



"What plan?"

"Her father works for me after I enchanted him. I would do the same to his daughter. Then she in turn can bring the other guy your daughter is in love with." Lucifer answered.

"Wow, a good plan I must say Lucas." Taloc said.

Lucifer couldn't tell them his main plan yet. Staring at Rae, he knows he is falling in love with her.

Lucifer realised he is in love with Tharollin daughter.

Beautiful Rae, his beautiful Rae. He will make her his bride and kill whoever dares stand in his way.

## Chapter 68

'What a surprise it is to discover that you have never needed to strive to survive and be happy after all. Like Dorothy in The Wizard of Oz, who discovered that she always had the means for going home, you already have what you need to be happy and safe. You have never really left Home. However, if you don't believe you already have what you need to be happy and safe, it is as if it isn't true: If we don't know the ruby slippers will take us home, it's like not having them. The ego keeps us from seeing the truth about those ruby slippers- it keeps us from seeing the truth about life. Home is right here, right now, but we may not realize it and therefore not experience Home, or Essence as much as we might.'

♥♥♥♥ EFFECT OF THE FULL MOON (Mating Part 1) ♥♥♥♥

"She is very beautiful." Lucifer said not knowing when he spit out the words.

"Yes I know Lucas, beautiful and all MINE." Dean said possessive making sure the 'Mine' word passes a warning message to Lucas who just smiled at him.

"I know she is yours but I am not blind to see how beautiful she looks like." Lucifer told Dean and faces the sleeping beauty. "But I wonder where the boy you are talking about is? Isn't he supposed to be there with her?" He asked. He wanted to see how the boy looks like so that he can plan on how to kill him and the idiot vampire.

"We don't know and don't care, I don't like seeing him with her, he is all mine and not hers." Lolly answered Lucifer glaring heatedly at Rae's sleeping form.

For once since he was here, Lucifer agrees with Lolly.

Tamara said some magic words and the veil disperse quickly along with Rae's sleepy form.

"So how are we sure what you said about luring Rae like you did to her father will work? This is Rae we are talking about." Tamara demanded. She didn't trust her Mate new foudy friend one bit.

Lucifer smirk. "Oh don't worry about that, be rest assured that Rae will be yours." He said pointing at Dean who gave him a satisfied smile pleased with what he heard.

Smile all you want but you won't touch Rae, the day you do is the day you will say goodbye to this world.

Lucifer thought to himself and faces Lolly, he continued. "And you, by the time I am done, the boy shall be yours." He said as he watches Lolly's eyes lighten up in happiness.

He will tread in caution when it comes to Lolly because her father is a strong man unlike Gar. He will have to start thinking of a plan on how to kill the stupid guy his Rae is in love with.

"What about Rae's father, Tharollin, won't he stop you?" Dean asked.

"As long as we have his daughter, he will do to our bidding, so do not worry yourself in that aspect." Lucifer answered smiling.

"Thank you Lucas for contributing to help in this." Taloc said with a smile which Lucas returned.

"My pleasure my friend." He said. "I have to be on my way now, I will be back to bring you good news." He added and disappeared.

"I don't know but I don't trust him one bit." Tamara voiced out her feelings. "Something seems strange about him." She added still wondering.

"Thank goodness I thought I was the only one who had noticed it." Dean supported Tamara. He just doesn't trust the man not after the way he had looked at Rae. "He keeps staring at my Rae." He added.

"Don't worry, he might be the very ally we needed to complete us." Taloc said. "He wants half of it if he helps which I agreed to it." He said codily to his Mate who immediately understood what he was trying to say. Since Dean Kingdom would be among the rest of the Kingdoms taken, he doesn't want the Vampire Prince to know his main intention.

"Are you sure Lucas is a trustworthy person who will agree to take half of it when the time comes?" Tamara asked.

"I don't have a rightful answer to that question Tamara, but I will be extremely careful when it comes to him. Very, very careful." Taloc said.

"So we should all wait for him to carry out his said plans?" Lolly demanded.

"Yes my dear, right now, we are out of ideas so his idea is the only one we have. He will do as he said to buy my trust." Taloc replied his daughter.

"But why Rae first why not Jason before the girl?" Lolly asked.

"I don't know why he chooses Rae but we should be glad he is helping. Lucas isn't just an ordinary person just know that." Taloc responded.

"Fine, I will be patient enough to see how he gets Rae and have her get Jason." Lolly said.

"Don't worry yourself too much, my dear, whoever this Jason is, is already yours." Taloc said making his daughter nod her head.

"We have to start going before the Amazon King realises that we are gone and not in the house again." Dean said.

"You are right Dean." Lolly said and went to meet her father, hugging him which he returns affectionately. "See you later soon father." She added and dispatched herself from him. She walked and stopped beside her mother. Taloc closed the little meters between him and his mate and kissed Tamara on her lips briefly.

Tamara took hold of her daughter's hand and Lolly in turn stretches out her hand towards Dean who held it gently. Saying his thanks to Taloc, they disappeared.

Taloc went back to his sit to think.

\*\*\*\*

Somewhere Near the Sea of Nile:

The shimmering stars, clear dark night sky, the full moon glistening on the dark Sea of Nile, quietness, all forms of life sleeping, animals chirping wistfully as Tharollin landed in the cave he knew they would be, he had followed his Mate's scent down to the second cave Micheal and Lydia were hiding.

His black wings entered his back and as he was about entering the cave, Micheal dropped from up and landed near Tharollin, his wings wiping Tharollin's face and almost entered his mouth.

"Hey watch out for your feathers Michael, if you do not want to look for your wings then I suggest you learn how to land well without it touching me." Tharollin warned.

"Whatever Raphael." Micheal said with a non-caring voice. "Aaron was here like you said but luckily enough we heeded your warnings and took my daughter to this cave." He added.

Tharollin's anger immediately subsided when he heard about Aaron's visitation.

"Well you and Lydia should just thank your stars that your brother did not succeed." Tharollin huffed out crossing his arms.

"Don't forget Raphael that you are my daughter's Mate, so I know for a fact that you won't harm me." Micheal said in confidence.

"Let's give it a try then, Avonmora isn't awake yet so she doesn't even know how you look like and-"

"But she knows she has a father and what makes you think her mother isn't watching over her or us right now?" Michael grin as Tharollin shut his mouth. "Anyway, I thought you would still be with my granddaughter incase something happened." He added changing the topic knowing fully well that Raphael was ever ready to exchange words with him.

"She is protected as far as I know. I missed my Mate and probably my daughter saw it in my eyes and decided to free me to go be with Avonmora until she wakes up. I don't want to miss it." Tharollin said.

"But still that doesn't mean you should leave her by herself alone. What if someone who doesn't like you finds out she is your daughter, do you know the danger she will be?"

"Micheal, my daughter has people protecting her plus she is strong herself. Her guardian is a Witch, the other one a dragon and her cousin sister a mermaid not to mention Jason who would do anything for Rae." Tharollin told the angel.

"And who is Jason to her?" Micheal demanded.

Tharollin rolled his eyes. "You didn't even ask who the dragon is or any of the other two because I didn't mention 'anything for Rae."

"You wouldn't blame me for being protective of my granddaughter. So tell me who this Jason is to her that he can do anything for her sake?" Micheal asked.

"Well he is Rae's better half, her soulmate and he is the King of the supernaturals only son. Least I forget, he is a Tribid." Tharollin responded.

"Wow I never see that coming. Well if you are sure that she has all the protection she needs who am I to fight against it." Micheal said and looked up to the sky. "Hmmm, I wonder what my brother is up to." He mused to himself.

"Whatever he is up to, we can face him together." Tharollin said. "Now if you will excuse me I have to check on my Mate because right now, It feels like ages since I last saw her." He added and entered the cave without waiting for a response from the other man.

Micheal flew up keeping vigilant over the cave like he was doing before Raphael came.

\*\*\*\*\*

Kingdom of Dragons:

A knock sounded on the door 1 hour Jorkallun left.

"Who is it?" Sarah asked.

"It's the Lady Morgan, I was sent here by the King to prepare you for the dragon ceremony." The lady who introduced herself as Morgan answered.

Opening the door her gaze revealed a tall woman. Her eyes were dark almost black against the night. Long honey brown hair flew freely down her shoulders. Her mouth was set almost professionally. With her hands folded in front of her body.

"It is time to get ready for the ceremony, come follow me." She entered the room immediately.

Is this where she will get prepared for the ceremony?

Sarah ponder in thought as she watches the woman movement.

Lady Morgan moved towards a door Sarah hasn't even notice was there before, turning to look at Sarah she gesture with her head for Sarah to follow her.

Sarah followed silently behind the woman.

"We will bathe you first, then on with the other traditional procedures." Lady Morgan said opening the door and entered it. Sarah followed and walked into a large washroom with an open window. "Since you are bonding to royalty there are other traditional procedures we must prepare you for." She added.

She led Sarah to the hug bathtub. Various women were scattered about the room. Holding washcloths and soap.

How did they even get in here?

Sarah wondered and saw how a huge dragon change into a smaller size and entered the bathroom through the open window, changing into a lady before it landed.

Oh, that is how they entered without her knowing.

Sarah said in her mind and watched how the window was closed and two ladies used a veil to cover the window preventing any other outsiders apart from them from seeing what is inside the room.

"Strip." Lady Morgan said and flung her hand out. "We have much to do."

Sarah didn't mind nudity that much so long they were ladies like her. She quickly removed every layer of her clothes until she was standing there naked and finally dipped in the tub.

The people didn't waste no time. Grabbing her arms and legs and scrubbing every fibre of her body. The soap they used didn't smell like anything, it was different, but Sarah knew it was working by the bubbles it was forming.

She felt overwhelmed. Especially when they pulled her out of the tub and rubbed a white foam on her body.

"What is it?" Sarah asked Lady Morgan.

"A special kind of hair removal foam." Lady Morgan answered.

After they had rinsed Sarah off and washed her body again. She was finally led out of the bathtub.

They trimmed her blue hair a little, screwed around with her nails. They rubbed her whole body down in shiny oil. That made her body tingle in a pleasant way.

They rimmed her eyes in black, dark makeup. Making Sarah look even more beautiful.

"Here, step into these." Lady Morgan handed Sarah the clothes.

Sarah stepped into the only article of clothing in her hands, wearing it.

All her body was bare except for her breasts and womanhood which was covered. it was tight around her breasts area and her womanhood. Leaving her with no room. The transparent clothes she wore rubbed against her covered body nicely though.

"Now time for the important part."

The woman led Sarah to a table where she had Sarah lay out on her back.

"Spread your arms." She commanded and Sarah complied.

She leaned in close to her body then started to draw on Sarah's skin.

She covered Sarah neck, shoulders, and down to her arms to her fingers with bold black designs.

"What are they for?" Sarah asked.

Lady Morgan pursed her lips. "They will glow and signal the sign of a complete bond."

Sarah moved off the table when she finished. Her skin was also still shiny and oily.

"It is time." Lady Morgan said looking straight at Sarah and leading her out of Jorkallun room, they began walking in the hallway which was now empty. "You will walk in the room first, then Jorkallun will come in through another door. Be careful, the full moon is out and he is on the edge. When you have completed the bond giant celebration will begin. Goodluck." And finally she smiled at Sarah, but only a little.

At the end of the hall a lone door stood. Sarah was nervous but before she could voice out her thoughts, Lady Morgan changed into her white dragon and flew away leaving Sarah alone.

Sarah took gentle steps towards the door. When she got closer she felt a pull. A deep pull she has never felt before.

She grasped the knob and went inside.

The new room she entered looked the same with Jorkallun room besides the fact it was decorated in gold and silvers. She saw another door inside the room that was near the giant bed, but she ignored it as she looked around her in awe.

Sarah walked up the stairs to the giant bed. When she made it to the side. The other door opened and Jorkallun stepped out.



He was oiled down too. It made his muscles bilge and ripple. He was completely naked and his cock had already risen. His red eyes shiny more like lava fire, his long, red hair going into flame.

Sarah gulped, the wild look in his eyes scared her.

"Come here." His voice was deeper and his nails were long. Unrestrained.

Sarah didn't know when she stepped back a little. Weary. Jorkallun had tried to warn her but...

That didn't go too well. His eyes blazed at her defiance. Nostrils flaring. He took strong step towards her unmoving form.

Grasping her forearms, he threw her face down on the bed. When she tried to get up, she felt the familiar body of Jorkallun pressing her down.

Sarah took a deep breath calming her nerves down. Jorkallun was her crush, her lover and her Mate, he would never hurt her no matter how untamed he looks now.



What sorts of preparation did he even undergo that would result him into this?

She wondered.

She felt Jorkallun hands on her ass and with one flip move she was turned with her back to the bed, facing him. Looking at his sinful self made her feel so wet.

He tore the transparent layer of cloth that covers her breasts off. Then slowly tear off the remaining one covering her womanhood and touched her wet entrance. She moaned loudly by the touched.

Sarah felt him moved down. His clawed hands holding her hips. As he took a deep breath, inhaling her aroused scent.

She couldn't help but moan again as she felt wetter than before.

Sarah heard Jorkallun satisfied grumble when her body stopped tensing up. Sarah finally submit herself under him.

Jorkallun started licking her body and Sarah arched her back and cried out at the unexpected pleasure it brought.

Jorkallun mouth was suddenly on her as he kissed her erotically covering her whole body with hers.

He used his clawed hands and opened her legs wider placing himself between her legs.

Sarah scrunched her eyes when he started to rock her body. His cock touching her sex with his push erotically.

"Mine, mine, mine." Jorkallun chanted the words over and over again. Timing his rocking with his words.

Sarah muffled a moan when she felt Jorkallun tongue sucking one of her breasts and use one of his clawed hands to hold the other breast, pinching the hardened nipple and his other free hand prodding her entrance.

Sarah went limp on the bed. Her body twitching from the pleasure he was giving to her.

She felt Jorkallun's breath on her neck. Then he harshly bit the skin there. Holding her body extremely close to his. She felt his harden big cocks at her entrance. Ready to strike.

Sarah almost cried out in desperation.

Jorkallun bent down and licked her cheek. His mouth moving directly to Sarah's ears.

"You're mine now Sarah." Then he thrusts inside, breaking off the hymen and making their body one.

## Chapter 69

### 'SENSES, APPEARANCE, ESSENCE and EXISTENCE

The world we see with our senses is very different than the world we see through our essence. Our senses perceive the world of appearance. Our essence perceives the deeper layers of existence. The first step of perceiving the world of essence is to have no goal other than to understand. "Understanding" has to be the ultimate goal. Only then, can we solve the problems. Let's find ourselves in Love for it is who we are. We are Love. We are meant to Love ourselves. We are meant to Love one another. So Love, please Love, for it is all that matters in this universe.'

### ♥♥♥♥ EFFECT OF THE FULL MOON (Mating Part 2) ♥♥♥♥

Lillian House:

Jason soon came out from the bathroom and went to join Rae in her bed, bringing her body closer to his body, he covered the both of them with the extra bed sheets he had used to cover Rae before and closed his eyes.

Rae placed her head on his chest when his familiar scent reaches her nose.

They slept off in each other's arms.

\*\*\*\*

The Dragon Kingdom:



It hurt. Sarah howled in pain at the sheer force of his thrust. She felt him everywhere inside of me as she lay panting. Her face sideways on a pillow.

Jorkallun waited. Waiting for Sarah to catch her breath and wait for her pain to fade.

Very slowly the pain faded and Sarah felt Jorkallun trembling for control. His large palms above hers on the bed.

Sarah reached a finger up and stroked the curve of his thumb subtly showing she was okay. He captured her hands with his. Intertwining the digits together. Bending down to kiss her lips and neck.

Sarah moaned at the contact. Every touch made her feel alive again.

With much restraint and trembles Jorkallun placed his hands on her hips. Pulling out then pushing back in strongly into her body.

Sarah arched her back, a breathless moan gasped out. She felt uncomfortable with the cock in her but with time she adjusted to it.

With each thrust he got harder and more uncontrolled. But she wanted it like this.

Sarah cried out when she felt very orgasm coming. He sped up.

She felt it. Her whole body shuddered as she went limp on the bed.

Jorkallun kept going rocking his body against her.

Sarah felt him pull her tight. His breath at her neck. With a roar that caused her to close her eyes. Jorkallun bit deeply in the base of her neck. Sarah felt him flood her full with his essence. It wasn't painful.

He gently caress her body. His nails opening up her skin little to let her blood free.

She felt his tongue licking her body before sucking her breast.

Sarah eyes close on their own in pleasure. She yawned her eyes fluttering.

They slammed open when she felt a sharp nail stroke down her belly. She felt a firm tongue licked the wound in her neck. Sarah tensed when a deep rumbling purr shook the whole bed.

Red Claws came above her head, trapping her inside the Dragon embrace. Jorkallun's dragon form possessively started to lick and rub her body. His scales were smooth and sensual. Her arousal spiked and she feels herself getting wet once again.

He smelled it. Nuzzling his large red snout on her body.

Jorkallun shrunk his size so that he was just large enough to look big. Red eyes gazing at Sarah with lust. Sarah shuddered deliciously when her eyes strayed down.

His giant cock lay full and hungry between her body. Pulsating and spurting thick liquid. His balls hung and heavy.

Sarah turned her face to the side. Fear struck her at the sheer size of it.

The Dragon didn't like that, reaching his claws to her face, he turned her face to him, lifting her hips so that she wouldn't take her eyes off his. It was a purely dominant move. Making the submissive spread eagled and vulnerable.

His nostrils flared and his eyes dilated when the potent smell of her arousal reached him.

He bent down and start licking all over her body. Sarah moaned uncontrollably. It felt so good.

The sound of Sarah's moan caused him to snarl in pure arousal.

The need to breed his mate was becoming too powerful. He kissed where he had bitten and opened her legs wider for him.

With a mighty thrust he entered. Sarah cried out in pain. He was so big.

Tears streamed down her eyes when she felt she could puke him out.

He didn't stop though. He kept thrusting brutally inside her. His animal side completely taken over.

He roared, flames bursting forth as he shot his seed in her. Triggering Sarah's own orgasm to come.

He pulled out and carried his warm body around her. Deep purrs forming in his belly as he tended to his mate. His dragon scales disappeared to be replaced by his own skin, the fire in his hair died out.

Sarah lay limply in his embrace. Letting him lick and snuggle into her body.

She felt weak and bruised. But most of all she felt sated.

She felt connected to Jorkallun now. So connected she felt his joyous emotions come over her.

She settled down to sleep pressing her naked body more into Jorkallun embrace if possible. And for once she walked into the room, a smile stayed on her face.

\*\*\*\*\*

Lillian House:

Silent growls woke Rae from her deep sleep and wondered were the growl was coming from.

As the sleep removed completely from her eyes she realised the growl was actually coming from her room.

Sitting up right with her eyes wide opened, she saw Jason, only that he looked so different.

He was in his Wolf form, a very huge black Werewolf which was standing on its hind legs. The Werewolf was the largest Wolf she has ever seen. He was standing near the window, far from her, his furs back facing her as he looked out of the window.

The second thing she noticed was her naked body.

Getting out of bed she walked towards the beast slowly. The wolf was so tall it was like 6'5 feet tall.

"Jason." Rae whispered softly, somehow she knew the Werewolf standing in her window is her Mate.

The wolf slowly turned to look at her locking his eyes with hers.

The wolf was definitely Jason, Rae couldn't forget his two unmatched eyes that is staring her. His wolf is just like human but more hairy.

Could he talk in his Wolf form?

Rae wondered and decided to try.

"What is it Jason, why are you in your Wolf form?" She asked.

The Werewolf then pointed at the full Moon which bright rays is shining inside the room. "The full moon." His very deep baritone voice answered.

Rae eyes widened when she heard his response. She wasn't expecting that, normally a Wolf can't speak when they transformed and they can only communicate through their minds.

But this.....she wasn't expecting. Jason could talk in his Wolf form.

"The full Moon did this to you?"

"Yes, every full Moon I changed into my Millennium Wolf form and stay that way until a full week has passed before I transformed into my body." Jason replied. "And now, it is giving me the urge to have sex with you which I am trying to control, this has never happened to me before." He added.

The urge to go closer to her wolf seem overwhelming that she didn't know when she was walking towards him.

"No don't come closer Rae, if you do then I might do something which you are not ready for. I am trying to keep my distance away from you to avoid hurting you." Jason said trying to resist the urge by taking Rae right there but he couldn't do so without his mate permission.

"What if I want it Jason? I want you to Mate with me tonight." Rae didn't know when she said that. But she was ready, ready to give herself to the love of her life.

Ready to Mate with her soulmate.

The wolf was quiet as he stared at Rae.

"Jason I am ready to Mate with you." Rae said again in case he didn't hear her the first time.

"Do you realise what you are saying Rae?"

Rae nodded her head. "I know what I want Jason and I want you to mark me as yours." The rainbow coloured haired girl said. "As long as it's with you, I am ready." She added.

Those words stopped Jason from fighting the lust he had been trying to suppress. He walked towards her very slowly in case she changes her mind.

Rae was speechless once more. Not only does he speak through his Wolf form but he could stand and walk in his hinds like a human could do with their legs.

Reaching her side, he pulled her into his fur body leaning his head to kiss her forehead. He carried her and laid her gently on her bed and kissed her roughly, wandering his lips to her jaw, her neck, while Rae closed her eyes and moaned.

"You are so sexy Rae." He murmured, looking at her naked body and started kissing her breasts. "So sexy and lush and mine."

Rae managed to smile and moaned when she felt his mouth on one of her breasts.

His rough big warm hands held her waist as he sucked and bit her breasts like it was food. Rae moaned and wriggled restlessly feeling the need of release growing inside of her.

Apparently Jason wasn't in the mood of going slow and teasing. Rae wasn't complaining.

He opened her legs wide for him. He took his mouth off mounting her breasts and with hazy, lustful unmatched eyes looked down at her open sex.

"J-Jason..." she mumbled, his gaze not wavering from her womanhood. It drove Rae to another edge. "P-Please-" a scream of pleasure was ripped out of her throat as Jason lowered his head and put his mouth on her womanhood. His tongue and his sharp canines teeth and those lips were doing things to Rae that she didn't think were possible.

She screamed and moaned and wriggled while his other hand claw moved up to her breasts, she couldn't take it anymore. The orgasm came so hard that she was left breathless.

His tongue licked her juice, licked the orgasm and grinned a sexy grin to Rae. "You are loud." Jason said making Rae blushes with humiliation at how hard she'd screamed. "I like it." He added and then moved up to kiss her. Rae tasted her own juicy in his mouth and it was so erotic, her eyes rolled in their sockets.

"I want you so wet for me you wouldn't feel too hurt." He muttered and before Rae would hiss at him that she could handle him just fine, his fingers trailed down her body straight to her clitoris, where he started rubbing, making Rae aroused.

Rae felt knots forming in her stomach and she quivered at the strong reaction. Rae noticed his long talons fingers had disappeared leaving his normal fingers.

But Jason was rough. He rubbed and rubbed and then slipped one finger inside. Rae sucked in a breath as Jason started pumping in and out his finger, adding in another one after a while.

Rae was so wet, so hot right then that she wanted him to put his cock in her and fuck her hard.

Then...he added a third finger, while his thumb rubbed her clitoris. She felt another orgasm tearing her to pieces, leaving a hazy-minded and pleasurable girl.

"Jason.." Rae moaned out his name and that triggers Jason and she felt her legs being spread out wider than before and the head of his cock nudging the entrance into her body, into her soul.

"Rae.." he said grabbing her thighs and in one powerful move he shoved his cock right inside of his soulmate.

Pain blinded Rae for a second and she screamed his name, feeling so full. It was overwhelming and magnificent at the same time. She held onto his fur shoulders tightly. She breathed painfully and felt something warm and wet down there, blood perhaps.

"Ssh." Jason said and kissed her cheek, her nose and forehead and her lips. "I am here, the pain would disappear in a few minutes."

He kept his cock inside of her, balls-deep and didn't move. After a few breaths she looked up at him.

"You ready my love?" He asked softly.

"I love you Jason." Rae said aloud. "I love you so much."

Jason didn't hesitate when he said. "I love you too Rae."



Hearing that, Rae smiled. "I am ready." She said holding onto him breathing in his scent.

He held her strong and fiercely as he started drawing back his cock. Rae groaned a little at the sudden loss of such a heavy, long, thick thing inside of her. But when he pushed back, it was uncomfortable to have such an unfamiliar thing in her. But then he drew back and shoved home once more. This time it wasn't painful. Her body started accepting his, getting used to his thrusts as he started moving faster and harder.

The pain dissipated shove after shove and pleasure took in. Rae moaned with every hard push and shove.

Jason speeded up the pace, pumped faster and faster in Vampire speed, fucking Rae like there was no tomorrow.

Rae who couldn't take it anymore orgasm so hard. Jason kept pumping faster than before and bent his head to kiss Rae's one side of the neck, his canines expanding and he bit her hard at the base of neck marking her as his mate forever. Rae closed her eyes as the pain from the bite spread through her body.

With a harsh, final shove, he groaned in pleasure as he finally cum.

Then he drew back and removed his canines and started licking that spot until the blood stopped pouring out and it healed. The tattoo of a black wolf head with two unmatched color eyes were seen magically appearing where he mark her.

She was his and bonded to him forever.

\*\*\*\*

Lucifer watched everything in great fury. How dare him touched what belongs to him? How dare he?

The mistake Tamara did was by showing him the place his Rae was sleeping and it didn't take him hard to find out where she lives and with a little spell he was able to see what was happening in the room through the cave Gar once lived.

He was watching everything in a magic portal he made and made the portal disperse quickly In anger, he couldn't stand to see a man who is not him touched his Rae.

Jason will pay dearly for touching his Rae.

Lucifer suddenly grin. Now that he knows Jason is a millennium Wolf, killing him will be easy.

Seeing him, he knew Jason is not just an ordinary Millennium wolf but a Tribid. His eyes and the speed he had used on his Rae gave him away.

He knows exactly what to use to kill the stupid Tribid but first he must get Rae.

\*\*\*\*

His furs entered his body quickly and he was in his human form.

Rae threw herself into his arms.

Jason smiled, but it faded when he felt Rae's chest heaved slightly, and then shudder.

"Rae?" Jason whispered. "Rae...love...are you crying?"

Rae didn't want to admit that she was crying, that she was so overwhelmed by his feelings she was suddenly feeling - and embarrassingly enough, an amazing orgasm - that she had burst into tears.

"Jason?" Rae's voice quivered as she spoke. "Could you do me a favor?"

"Anything," Jason said, dancing his fingers in her hair.

"Make love to me tonight again, please?"

Jason's breath caught in his throat at Rae's request - so honest and sincere.

"Of course." Jason kissed Rae's forehead. "Whatever you want. Can you tell me why you're upset?"

Rae sighed as she hugs Jason.

"I don't think I am upset," Rae admitted. "When I...came" - Rae's face flushed as she spoke - "I was chasing a dream. A wonderful dream. It was sad to see it end."

Jason hummed in understanding. "You mean the one where we live happily ever after with the support of every Supernaturals especially my father?" he asked, tracing patterns down Rae's arms with the pads of his fingers.

"H-how did you know?" Rae asked in awe, looking into Jason shining white eyes.

"Because, love" - Jason placed a kiss in Rae's hair - "I have the same dream."

## Chapter 70

'Remember it all, every insult, every tear. Tattoo it on the inside of your mind. In life, knowledge of poisons is essential. I've told you, nobody becomes an artist unless they have to. In this sleepless night, as the darkness advances, look up at the sky and somehow remember that somewhere in this wide world, there are always people who love you, and people who need you. Because every person can't go on living alone.'

♥♥♥♥ LUCIFER AND TALOC ♥♥♥♥

Dragon Kingdom:

Sarah was woken up by the light tapping of someone on her shoulder.

Opening her eyes to see who it was, she saw Jorkallun smiling at her. Sarah groaned, flipping to her stomach and settling down for more needed rest.

Jorkallun was having none of that. He started to massage her tired hips. Sarah moaned in bliss when she felt her muscles start to loosen up.

Jorkallun kissed the back of her neck. "How are you feeling?" He purred in her ear with a raspy voice.

"Like hell, I don't think I can even walk let alone wiggle my toes." Sarah whined into a pillow.

He chuckled, then started massaging her bottom and thighs. "Then I've done my job well."

They were fully mated now. Sarah felt Jorkallun's joyous emotions and couldn't help but feel happy too. Everything felt so different to her now that she has to share her emotions with someone else, but she was starting to enjoy it pretty fast.

"Come, let's go take a bath." Jorkallun said and kissed her ear and hauled her prone body up in his arms.

They exited the room and once again Sarah noticed the Hallway was still empty.

Maybe the guards have been warned not to come here.

Jorkallun took her back to his room and into the bathing room. He placed her on a bench that was built in the tub. Turning the water on hot, he poured in some scent free soap and crawled in next to Sarah.

Sarah moaned when the first stroke of hot water hit her toes. It felt amazing on her deliciously numb lower half. She didn't care though. For the first in her long existence she felt good.

"You're glowing." Jorkallun commented pointing at the black glowing drawings that was in Sarah's body, the drawing Lady Morgan had drawn on her before her mating. He started rubbing the soap in her body. "I feel your happy energy all throughout my body." He added and snuggled into her shoulder.

Sarah stroked the back of his head a little and leaned back and closed her eyes. Letting Jorkallun cleanse her body. She felt the joy of his dragon. Knowing that he was taking care of his mate. Sarah basked in his joy.

Jorkallun pulled her out of the water and sat her on the table in the bathroom while drying her body off.

He walked out and came back to the bathroom with a flowing flower dress for her to wear. It felt like heaven against her skin. He quickly put on his clothes of shorts and a shirt.

"We must make an appearance." The palm of his hand was against her back. Guiding her out of his room and towards the Grand room where every Dragons awaited.

Sarah nodded her head.

Jorkallun smiled. "Dragons are pretty possessive of their mates, survival instincts spur them on to keep them safe." He chuckled a little. "My dragon will probably want more sex from now onwards." He added with a smile as Sarah blushes.

They entered the door to the Grand room. And hundreds of dragons littered the area. Every corner was filled with different kinds of food. Excitement meandered in the air and all around them.

When they saw them, they all cheered loudly. More like roared. Jorkallun gave one of his rare smiles and held a fist up for his kingdom.

Kissing the side of Sarah's head. He led her to where his father was seated with two empty chairs beside him. One of the chairs was large and gold covered it in various stones and complex designs. The other one was drastically smaller, silver in color and decorated with emeralds stones.

Vermitrax held a happy smile on his face as he stood up and hugged Sarah once she was close enough. "Welcome to my family once again Sarah." He whispered into her ears.

"Thank you Sire oh I mean father." Sarah said smiling.

Jorkallun sat on the chair made of gold and Sarah sat on the smaller one.

Vermitrax held up his hand. The crowd went silent. "Now that my son and his mate are fully mated and they are now bonded. You may eat!" His voice boomed across the vast space. Everyone started chattering again.

Sarah smiled at that as she turned to look at Jorkallun who was seen smiling sincerely. His, no, her kingdom now, since she will rule with her mate when it's time, was smiling and enjoying themselves. Laughing and chasing themselves around.

Looking around her, this shows they adored her mate.

"Eat up my dear." Vermitrax said to Sarah softly.

Sarah nodded her head and starts eating up.

Sarah and Jorkallun sat with their people for hours. Nothing got old. Everyone was so kind and friendly. The elders telling stories. While the smallest dragons screeching and trying to fly.

"We are going to retire father, by morning I want to take Sarah home." Jorkallun whispered into his father's ear. Vermitrax nods in understanding. Jorkallun held Sarah hand in his large ones and they stood up. "Thank you all for your hard work!" Jorkallun addressed his people. Strong and confident.

They entered the hall leading to Jorkallun room. The sound died out and it was yet again Sarah and Jorkallun.

"It was fun, your people love you." Sarah said.

"I know that my dear." He answered.

Sarah stopped once they got to his room door and looked at Jorkallun. He gave her a confused eyes. Sarah opened her mouth. "I love you Jorkallun."

"I love you too Sarah." Jorkallun said without hesitating and kissed her forehead with love.

Opening the door, they both entered the room.

\*\*\*\*

Roens Palace:

Queen Rosa couldn't come up with a plan as she kept tossing in bed and that woke up Roens wolf.

Facing his wife he found his fur shrinking and soon he was in his body, naked. "Why are you not asleep by now?" King Roen asked and turned his head to look at the full moon. "It will be morning soon love." No wonder he turned into his mortal form.

"I am thinking, can't sleep." Was Rosa answer.

"Can't sleep? Why?"

"You don't want to listen to what I have to say, as my husband you ought to give me a listening ear."

"Rosa, if it is about Tamara please forget it. She has been kind to us, to me and to the entire Kingdoms. Just because her sister or you couldn't see the good in her doesn't make her evil."

"Okay, fine Tamara is a good priestess of the gods. What if tomorrow you find out you have been living a lie, what will you do?"

"Well until that day comes, I don't have an answer to that question."

"Just remember that I told you who I was, my true identity which you refuse to believe and asking me to forget about it. I just know that something bad will happen soon and I can't use my magic otherwise I am endangering my whole family and Kingdom."

Touching her face tenderly. "Rosa, is not that I don't believe you, but it sounds impossible that is why it's hard for me to believe. The only way I can agree to your claim is when the gods speak to me directly." King Roen spoke softly.

"You are a hard man Roen, and I hope it won't be too late for you when you find out the truth."

"What about Jason, has he return?" King Roen asked changing the topic.

"Not yet. He hasn't returned and beside tonight is the full moon, he will be with Rae." Queen Rosa said with a sad sigh. "Good night Roen." She added turning her back to Roen and closing her eyes for the sleep which was suddenly coming.

\*\*\*\*

The Realm of the Gods:

Zeus and the rest of his gods were seated when Artemis, goddess of the hunt, appeared in their midst.

Greeting the gods that surrounded her she finally faces Zeus.

"I traced Hermes and followed his scent which led me to the realm of the Supernaturals as you ordered. I followed his scent once I was in the Supernaturals realm and it led me into a Cave. I entered the cave and that's where his scent became stronger. I walked a little distance inside the cave and came into a covered pit. When I called out his name, he answered me." Artemis told Zeus who was listening with rapt attention together with the other gods. "He was trapped in there." She concluded her story.

"You did a good job Artemis, that is why I will always count on you." Zeus said. "Did ask him why he was inside the covered pit?" He added.

"I did. Apparently he was working with Lucifer who is still alive. They made a deal and he didn't know he was the bait to free a beast living in the pit. He was pushed inside the pit and the beast came out. He said he couldn't move his body." Artemis answered. "He also told me how Tamara and the man who is Lucifer plan together, he also said all the messages you normally send him to deliver to Tamara wasn't carried out and Tamara lied to the people into making them believe the gods are the one who had ordered the killings of the Mer-clan. In fact, he said a lot of things which I can't even say but he regrets his actions and want help." Artemis finished.

"This is unbelievable. How could Hermes betray us?" Ares bellowed in anger.

"That means what Tharollin told us was true." Apollo said after a while.

"Then we have to pay the Supernaturals a visit." Zeus said.

"That is what you keep on saying father but never acted on it. When are we actually going to visit them?" Ares asked.

"Two days from now." Zeus answered without missing a beat. "We have to find a way in getting Hermes out of the pit." He added.

"But on the other hand Hermes deserves what he got, we should leave him there for a while for him to learn his lesson." Eros chip in.

"You are right Eros but don't forget he still remains one of us." Zeus said to him.

"I suggest we leave him until we find the beast that was cage in the pit. Someone will have to enter the pit for Hermes to come out, so I go with what Eros said." Artemis said.

"Okay, I accept, we will leave Hermes in the pit until this is over." Zeus said in finatity.

"I beg to take my leave now Zeus."

"Of course Artemis, thank you for everything.

Artemis nods her head and disappeared.

"Let's get preparing ourselves for in two days time we are visiting the Supernaturals Realm."  
Zeus told the quiet room.

\*\*\*\*\*

Somewhere Near the Great Sea Nile.....

Tharollin entered the cave and Immediately his eyes feasted on the body of Avonmora. He walked towards her, reaching her he smiled to himself and touched her face tenderly.

"Tharollin did Rae managed to piss you off?" Lydia asked.

"No, she asked me to stay with my mate until she wakes up. So here I am."

"Okay, since you are here let me go and check on my daughter she might be trying to contact me since the past few days. You do know I have a daughter, right?"

"Of course Lydia, she and Rae are friends, two best friends." Tharollin responded.

"That is good, excuse me, I might be coming back late." Lydia said and went out of the cave.

She told Micheal where she was heading to when the angel came down to meet her.

Lydia entered the Sea of Nile disappearing under the waves.

\*\*\*\*

It was morning and Sarah opened her eyes a little bit and widened it when she noticed the color of the familiar room she was.

Sitting up right, she saw she was in her room.

When did she left the Dragon Kingdom down to her house?

She wondered.

Where is Jorkallun?

"I am by the window and I carried you here."



Sarah turns and faces the window where she saw Jorkallun resting his back against it and was staring at her.

"How did you hear my thoughts?"

"Since we are connected, I can hear whatever you think and same goes to me." Jorkallun answered and walked towards her.

"You could have wake me up to say my goodbyes to your father. Won't he be angry that I didn't come to wish him well before his son took me away?"

"No he won't get angry at you and besides, you will be seeing him soon."

Sarah smiled and opened her mouth to say something when the vibration of her blue magic mirror calls for her attention.

Getting out of the bed with speed, she collected the mirror on the table opened the cover and saw her mother.

"Mother! What happened? I have been trying to reach you but to no avail."

"Sorry my sweet daughter, I have things I was doing."

"What kind of things?"

"Work."

"Okay, I met Tharollin who is my uncle and-" Sarah got interrupted by her mother.

"Yeah I know you met him, in fact he is with my sister in the cave where I kept her." Lydia said.  
"He told me everything, I guess I have forgiven him for leaving my niece."

"Thank goodness I don't have to explain." Sarah said and smiled widely. "Guess what again mother."

"You know I am not a good guesser so out with the secret."

Sarah motion with her hands for Jorkallun to come which the dragon boy did with speed.

"Did you remember him?"

Lydia rolled her eyes. "Why won't I remember him, I don't have a fish brain like you."

Sarah smiled. "Yesterday night which was the full moon we bonded and we are soulmates now." She said in happiness.

"Wow, it's big news. Try bringing the boy to meet your grandfather." Lydia said smiling as she looked at Jorkallun. She could see the love he has for her daughter in his eyes.

"That is not all mother." Sarah said grabbing the full attention of her mother. "We also met Selena."

Lydia's eyes grew wide in shock.

"You don't mean that, do you?" Lydia found herself whispering.

"It ita true mother, she sent her regards to you and even confirmed I and Jorkallun are truly Mates." Sarah whispered back.

"Oh, I can't wait to tell him."

"Tell who?" Sarah asked confusedly.

"Oh don't worry Sarah, talk to you soon and Jorkallun you'd better take care of her." Lydia warned the dragon dangerously before the mirror showed nothing but Sarah's reflection.

"Who is she going to tell about Selena?"

"I don't know Jorkallun." Sarah answered. "Let's head out to Lillian's house but first let me go and shower."

\*\*\*\*\*

Lillian House:

Rae and Jason came down from the stairs after taking their baths, they were both heading to the kitchen when they stopped. They saw Lillian in there drinking water slowly from her cup as she eyes them.

They greeted her which she responded with a nod.

"So what happened when I was gone all through the night Jason?"

"A lot ma'am which I won't discuss with anyone." Jason said.

"Rae go to Mrs Ash house and ask her to give you what I told her to keep for me." Lillian said. "And I also want to have a private discussion with Jason." She added.

Rae nodded her head and left the house going towards the road that leads to Mrs Ash house.

"So Jason I hope you didn't hurt her last night when doing that thing?"

Snorting loudly "Why do you think I would hurt my Mate? And what makes you think we did something last night?"

"Because you are not in your Wolf form which rings a bell in my head."

"Fine, we did something last night, Happy?"

"Very happy. Jason if you try to hurt my granddaughter even if it is her hair, you will have me to contend with."

"I don't dream of hurting Rae ever grandmother hurt."

Lillian just smiled and turned to start cooking.

Someone knocked on the door and Jason went to open it. He smiled widely when he saw Jorkallun and Sarah, from their scents he knew they mated last night. He usher them in.

Sarah asked for Rae and she was told she was sent on an errand.

The three sat down in the sitting room discussing.

10 minutes later...

Rae returned with a book which she gave to Lillian and went to sit with Jason.

Smiling at her Jorkallun and Sarah as they discussed about their life and future.

\*\*\*\*

Taloc Hidden Place:

Taloc was going through some books when Lucifer appeared.

"What is it again Lucas?" Taloc asked, his back facing Lucifer but he knows who it was.

"I came here because I have done what I promised. I have Rae now." Lucifer replied.

Taloc stopped what he was doing and turned to face Lucifer. He looked around the devil. "Then where is she? I don't see her with you."

"Don't ask me such a question. The girl is with me." Lucifer answered in seriousness that Taloc find it hard not to believe.

"Okay, where is she then?"

"Safe. But that is not the most interesting part Taloc. There is another Tribid who happens to be the one your daughter desire." Lucifer said and waited for the outburst which he knew was coming.

"What!?" Taloc thundered in anger as the ground shook beneath them by his voice.

Lucifer smiled. Indeed Taloc was stronger than Gar, he has to follow him with caution. "Apparently your wife and daughter are not telling you the whole truth. That is why I have come here for we to rediscuss again." Lucifer said. "It will be between us, no one will know about it and also we will discuss about the other Tribid."

Taloc finds himself calming down. "What do you want us to discuss Lucifer?" He asked saying out his name.

"Simple. If you follow my plan we can kill the Tribid your daughter wants and you shall remain the only one left. Your wife or your daughter will not know about it, but we will pretend to do as we had discussed earlier on." Lucifer answered.

"What do you want in return Lucifer?" Taloc asked. He knew nothing goes for nothing and that is why he has to be very cautious of Lucifer.

Lucifer smiled. "That is why I like you, you are always on point." He said and laughed out a bit. "What I want in return is to have Rae."

Taloc and Lucifer stared into each other's eyes for almost two minutes before Taloc looked away.

"I am in, tell me your plan?"

"We take the Supernaturals by surprise and have them fall down to our feet and you can finally kill Jason with a sword I have forged out with my blood and other things." Lucifer answered and then smirk. "I also know where the person who broke your mate bond with your first Mate lives. Is this not fate that Jason mother is the one who had broken your Soul Mate connection in the past?" Lucifer added and move closer to where Taloc stood with his eyes wide opened at the news.

"I called it fate Taloc." Lucifer whispers in Taloc's ear.

## Chapter 71 (Semi Final 1)

'Just for today, smile a little more. Just for today, ask someone how he or she is really doing. Just for today, remember, while some may have it better than you do, there are others whom definitely have it worse than you! Just for today, just let go, just for today. Good times are a reminder and a reward for dealing with the difficult and challenging times we all go through. The trick is to celebrate the good times in advance of the difficult times. Always remember, good times await you after the difficult times pass.'

### ♥♥♥♥ THE ATTACK (Part One) ♥♥♥♥

Taloc who was shocked and speechless nodded his head. "It is indeed fate but you know I cannot kill the boy myself. I can't live to see my daughter in pain." He said to Lucifer.

Lucifer smiled and nodded his head as if he knew Taloc would say that. "Then you don't have to worry about it, I have someone who will do that for you." Lucifer said.

Taloc heaved out a loud sigh of relief when he heard those words. "That will be great Lucifer, you know my daughter loves the boy so I wouldn't want to hurt her feelings if I kill the boy." Taloc said. "And come to think of it, Tamara didn't tell me Jason is a Tribid." He added after a while.

"I wouldn't blame her maybe she was afraid of telling you or she wants to see her daughter happy since she is in love with Jason." Lucifer chip in. "But like I said, there is someone who will do us the job so you don't have to worry." He added.

"Okay, so who can it?"

"Someone you will get to know when it's time." Lucifer said with a mischievous smile.

"On the day of his death, I will act as if I am surprised when you kill Jason in front of us." Taloc said. "But how did you get to find out he is a Tribid and his mother is the druid that break my Mate bond?"

"I have my ways my friend, whatever Lucifer want Lucifer get." The devil said with a smirk.

Taloc nodded his head.

"So when are we visiting the supernatural kingdoms?" Taloc demanded. "I can't wait to see that stupid Likarica and kill her myself." He added in an angry tone.

"What if I say we attack them tomorrow, they will be so surprised and unprepared when we attack." Lucifer answered.

"I will tell Tamara the little I can about we attacking the supernaturals tomorrow." Taloc told Lucifer.

"No problem my friend, I will see you in the supernaturals tomorrow. Between you and me, we can take down the whole kingdoms." Lucifer said. "See you soon friend." With that he disappeared into thin air leaving Taloc alone.

\*\*\*\*

Lillian House:

Jason thanked Lillian for the food he ate and stood up to go.

"I need to go and check on my parents and tell them where I slept in case they have been searching for me." Jason told Lillian.

"You have to no problem Jason, greet your mother for me and tell her I will pay her a visit tomorrow." Lillian said.

"I will do that." Jason said smiling.

Jorkallun and Sarah stood up to their feet also. "Thank you auntie for giving us your delicious food." Sarah said and Lillian smiled widely.

"We will come with you just to keep you company when you face your father." Jorkallun told Jason.

"Thank you Jorkallun." Jason said and faces Rae. "Are you also coming Rae?"

"Nah, I don't want your father to see me and all his whole hatred will be directed to me, I will follow you next time when you and your father has settled." Rae answered still seated and picking dirt in her fingers.

"Okay then." Jason said his face crestfallen a little.

"Don't worry Jason I will bring her with me to the palace tomorrow when coming." Lillian said assuring Jason.

"Thank you Mrs Lillian." Jason said and bend to Rae's head level and placed a kiss on her forehead. "See you tomorrow Rae and of course you Mrs Lillian." He added.

Lillian made a little smile appear in her lips.

"I have to start going now." Jason said and his Phoenix fire wings came out of his back.

"I will meet you there Jason." Jorkallun said taking Sarah hand and leading her out of the house so that he would change into his dragon and fly Sarah to the Palace.

Jason kissed Rae once again on her lips and made his Phoenix wings encircled him when the fire has disperse, Jason wasn't there.

Rae stood up from her chair and excused herself to her room.

Lillian quickly wash the plates, after she was done cleaning the kitchen, she took the book Rae has gotten from Mrs Ashley and teleport to her room. Once she has settled herself on her bed, she opened the large book to find a spell.

\*\*\*\*

Sea of Nile:

Lydia was about leaving the sea when she was stopped by her father guards who told Lydia her presence were needed immediately.

Lydia followed them and entered the throne room. She swam towards her father and stopped when she was only a few metres away from him.

"Father, you sent for me." Lydia said bowing her head in respect.

"Yes I did Lydia." King Nile said. "When last have you heard from your husband?"

"A little while ago, we spoke." Lydia answered. After she has spoken with her daughter, she immediately contacted the King of Centaur, her soulmate. He knows of her mission and has given her and his daughter his full support.

"Okay, I have been hearing rumours of you seeing another man outside the sea that is why I sent for you to know if what I heard is true." King Nile told Lydia.

"Whoever told you that is definitely lying. I am not cheating on my husband with any man father. Probably they saw me with my friend who needed help in begging his lover he betrayed some years ago and just concluded I am seeing him." Lydia said surprised that someone has been monitoring her movements and reporting whatever she does to be father. "How can I be cheating on my husband? It doesn't make any sense father." She added.

"I believe what you said, I hope I won't find out you are lying." King Nile said taking his Trident staff and pointed it at Lydia who didn't shiver in fear. "You know what I will do if I find any of my daughters who are married cheating on their soulmate?"

"Of course I know father." Lydia said.

"Any news on Selena yet?" King Nile asked changing the topic.

"Not yet father but I can assure you once I see her I will let you know of her whereabouts." Lydia told the sea King.

"I am counting on your words Lydia. Just in case you see her, let her know how much I have missed her and how I was harsh on her." King Nile said sadly.

Lydia smiled. "Will do that father."

"You may go Lydia and sent my regards to this new friend of yours." King Nile said. "And do not forget to call on me when you need help. It has been ages since I have seen the surface ever since I banished Selena so call on me whenever you need my help."

"Thank you father and I will call on you when your help is needed. So for now just relax yourself and look after your people. I beg to take my leave now father." Lydia said and with Nile nod of head, she left the sea kingdom and came out of the shore of the Sea Nile.

Quickly changing her mermaid tail to her human feet she couldn't wait to tell Micheal what Sarah has told her.

Entering the cave Lydia saw Micheal and Tharollin discussing amongst themselves but stopped when they noticed her.

"Hello little fish, I heard you went home and here you are without any roasted fish accompany you. You do know we have a stomach that needs food, sea food to be precise." Tharollin said to the mermaid.

Lydia ignored Tharollin and turn her gaze to Michael and smile when she said. "Guess what Micheal."

Micheal was surprised when she directed her question to him. "I am not a good guesser." Micheal said wondering what Lydia wants to tell him.

"It's about Selena." Lydia revealed finally.

Micheal eyes went wide in shock and Tharollin wasn't left out.

"What happened to Selena? Did you see her? Where is she? Please don't tell me she is already seeing someone else." Micheal poured out his questions after he overcame his shock.

Lydia grin at him. "I can only answer your questions if you will do me one thing." She said.



"What can I do for you Lydia? Tell me my ears are itching for answers." Micheal said ready to do what the mermaid tells him to do as long as his questions are answered.

"Well like Tharollin said, we are hungry, could you please prepare us anything that will stay in our empty stomachs for long, please." Lydia told him.

"Is that all?" Michael demanded.

"Yes Michael that's all, once you are back with food I will tell you everything that relates to my sister."

"I will be right back with food." Micheal said and ran out of the cave jumping into the air as his wings came out of his back and he flew higher.

"You are wicked Lydia but I like it." Tharollin said with a smile.

"Well I am learning from you Tharollin."

"But is it true what you told him about Selena?"

"Yup, I am serious. My daughter was the one who gave me the information since she and your daughter saw Selena." Lydia answered.

"Okay, I can't wait to eat the food Micheal prepares cus I am hungry, haven't eaten anything except for a guard soul I took. I need to eat to have strength." Tharollin said showing off his muscles.

"You don't have to show me your muscles, I am not Avonmora and just so you know, you have a thin muscles Tharollin." Lydia told him.

"Yeah I know, but Avonmora likes it that way." Tharollin said touching his Mate arms softly.

"Don't worry Tharollin, it may take her time to forgive you but she will."

"I hope so Lydia, I want her to just wake up right now."

"She will wake up when she wants to Tharollin."

---

One hour later....

Micheal came back with roasted meats which he gave to Tharollin and Lydia.

They sat down in circle munching the roasted meats.

"Hmm, where did you learn how to cook?" Lydia asked after taking one bite. "You tried but you are not as good as I am in terms of cooking."

"I learnt my cooking skills where I came from."

"How did you manage to catch an antelope?" Tharollin asked.

"I searched for them and caught one before killing it in the forest and decided to cut and clean up the body when I saw a river, and also decided to roast it there." Micheal said and faces Lydia. "I have done as you told me so please answer my questions."

"Well Selena is alright. My daughter told me how they saw her in the Mer-Clan kingdom, I think they summoned Selena because of the blood ties she has with your granddaughter. And she is not seeing another man." Lydia answered not too sure if truly Selena is seeing someone else.

"Thank you Lydia. So only a person who is related to Selena can summon her, right?" Michael asked and Lydia nodded her head. "Well in that case I have to go and see Rae so that she could summon Selena for me." Michael added.

"Why do you want to disturb my niece when she will be having fun with her Mate and friends. Avonmora is here and she is Selena's daughter, so pray for her to wake up and summon her mother herself." Lydia told Micheal.

"Okay, I can't wait to see Selena and seek for her forgiveness." Micheal said sadly.

"We are both on the same boat Micheal and I hope they forgive us both." Tharollin said.

\*\*\*\*\*

Reon Palace:

Jason appeared in the courtyard and ignored the greetings of some of the wolves around him, they were already leaving, some alone, others with their mate the moon goddess has blessed them with the previous night.

Jorkallun landed next to him and some wolves quickly moved out of the Dragon way. He waited until Sarah was on the ground before he transformed into his immortal form.

"Come on, let's go." Jason said and led the way, going towards the throne room to check if he will meet his father there, if he is not there, then he will check the garden.

"Did you notice anything strange about Rae?" Sarah send her thoughts to Jorkallun.

"No I didn't, was she behaving strange?" Jorkallun asked her though his mind.

"Yes, like when Jason kissed her on her forehead, she grimaced a little bit and quickly covered it up, but she didn't know I was watching her." Sarah said. "I think something happened to her when she went to get the book from Mrs Ashley house."

"Well don't jump into conclusion yet Sarah, if something had happened, Jason or I will know, including Lillian. Rae won't keep quiet if something had happened to her."

"You are right Jorkallun, lets just hope I am wrong." Sarah said and they realised they have gotten closer to the throne room.

Jason knocked and opened the door a little bit and saw his father with Vivian and her parents. His cousins was there too.

He entered with Jorkallun and Sarah following behind him.

They greeted the elders there.

"We were just talking about you Jason, I was praying I see you before leaving for my kingdom." Roen brother said with a smile and went to hug Jason. "Your father is a very hard man, tried talking to him about accepting who you choose as your mate but you know him." He whispered in Jason's ears.

"I heard that Robert." Roen told his brother who laughed at it.

"So you are going today?" Jason asked his uncle.

"Yes we are, will we see each other again in the next coming wolf festival." Robert said and left the throne room. Robert wife kissed Jason on his forehead and left with her husband. Their children following them out of the throne room.

Only Georgia stopped to hug Jason and bid him her goodbye, she also hug Sarah before running to meet her siblings.

"It was a nice festival King Roen and I enjoyed myself regardless of the little drama that took place." Vivian father spoke after a while.

"I am glad you enjoyed yourself." Roen said with a smile.

"We will come again probably when you need us." He said facing Jason as he said those words. "Until then, take good care of yourself and your family." He added and left with his wife.

Vivian stopped once she got to Jason side.

"You know where to find me if she eventually leaves you. I will be waiting for you Jason." With that she followed her parents out of the throne room leaving only Roen, Jason, Sarah and Jorkallun.

"Father I know you are angry at me and Rae, that is why she could not follow me here." Jason said.

"I am angry but that is not the issue right now, who is the girl beside you Jorkallun?"

"My soulmate and Rae's cousin Sarah. She is also a mermaid which proves that Tamara lied to your face." Jorkallun answered Roen. "If truly Rae is the last mermaid like we'd all thought, then how come Sarah is also one?"

"Just because she has some sort of blue hair doesn't make her one." Roen said still not believing.

"Show him Sarah, please." Jason said.

Sarah nodded her head and went to stand in front of Jorkallun incase she falls down. She whispers some ancient words and her feet transformed into a blue fish tail.

Jorkallun caught her in his arms and look at Roen to see his reactions and he wasn't disappointed by what he saw.

Roen eyes were as wide as sockets when he saw Sarah transformation.

Sarah quickly turn her tail to her human legs saying her thanks to Jorkallun.

"So you see father, Rae isn't the only mermaid that we have so there is no need tagging her as the last mermaid that will be used for sacrifice by me." Jason told Roen. "Tamara lied to us all, who knows how many lies she has told you."

"Lillian was right after all." Roen said mostly to himself in shock. "And I didn't even believe my wife. I have made a grave mistake."

"You can start rectifying your mistakes by arresting her father." Jason suggested to Roen.

"That's very hard my son, no one knows where she lives. She appears from the tallest mountain we have here and disappeared from that same spot, that is it. It will be very hard to trace Tamara."



## Chapter 72 (Semi Final 2)

'True happiness is to enjoy the present, without anxious dependence upon the future, not to amuse ourselves with either hopes or fears but to rest satisfied with what we have, which is sufficient, for he that is so wants nothing. The greatest blessings of mankind are within us and within our reach. A wise man is content with his lot, whatever it may be, without wishing for what he has not. Forget yesterday - it has already forgotten you. Don't sweat tomorrow - you haven't even met. Instead, open your eyes and your heart to a truly precious gift - today.'

### ♥♥♥♥ THE ATTACK (Part Two) ♥♥♥♥

"Okay, then you send her a message Sire." Jorkallun chip in quickly.

"Good idea Jorkallun. I have to inform my messengers to use their magic birds and send a message across to Tamara." King Roen said and hurried out of the throne room.

"Come on, let's go and look for my mother, I know where she might be." Jason said leaving the throne room as well with his two friends.

—

They met Rosa at her garden not tending the flowers at all. She has this faraway look like someone in a deep trance or thoughts as she stood doing nothing.

"Mother." Jason said tapping Rosa on her shoulders, bringing her out of her thoughts.

"Jason." Rosa hug her son when she saw that it was him who tapped her.

"I thought you wouldn't come back, thought you were still angry at your father, but thank goodness you are back now." Rosa said over his shoulders as she was still hugging him before she dispatched herself from him.

Jorkallun and Sarah greeted her alerting the Queen of their presence.

"Jorkallun, who is this pretty damsel beside you?" Rosa asked her friend's son, sitting down on the bare floor.

"She is my soulmate my Queen and she is also Rae cousin." Jorkallun answered.

"Wow, beauty surely runs in her family." Rosa said and asked them to sit beside her since she sat on the floor of the garden which was neat.

Once they were seated, they told her what had transpired between them and Roen.

"He believed you Jason because he saw some proof but I doubt if he will find that cunning Tamara. I hate her with passion." Rosa said with fury and wish the priestess was right there in front of her so that she could tear off her stupid priestess body limp by limp.

"That is not all mother. Tharollin told me something interesting before he left." Jason said bringing Rosa's attention to him.

"And what can it be?" She asked.

"Lolly is Tamara's daughter. That is why she was forcing me to get married to Lolly." Jason respond.

"What?" Rosa exclaimed in surprise. "Lolly is the priestess daughter?" She questioned.

"Yes my Queen, the real Lolly is dead, she was killed and Tamara's daughter is wearing her skin posing as Lolly, Amazon King daughter." Sarah told Rosa.

"This is unbelievable. Did you tell Roen this?" Rosa asked.

"We forgot to tell him my Queen." Jorkallun answered.

"You do know that it was Tamara who had made me ill and forged those writings imposing it on me that I was the one who had written it." Rosa revealed.

"She did that to you and you never made any attempt of telling me? I was forced to engage Lolly thinking it was your wish." Jason said surprised and shocked. "Why did she send you that illness that left you bedridden for some years?"

"Because I no longer want to be part of her evil team, I made up my mind to tell your father who she truly is before she struck me down with the illness which you said at the wolf festival that Rae healed me of." Rosa said. "Jason there is something else you need to know about me and I hope you will forgive me and still see me as your mother." She added.

Jason nods his head telling his mother he was listening.

Taking a deep breath, Rosa said the words she has been hiding away from her son. "I am a Druid, from a druid kingdom."

"Druid? What's a druid? Haven't heard of such a kingdom before." Jason said trying to rethink if he had once upon a time read a book that talks about Druids in the Palace library.

"It once existed before the inhabitants of the kingdom was killed and I was the only survivor. And druids are like witches but stronger." Rosa said and proceeded in telling them everything. "I am sorry if I kept you in the dark Jason. I got to know about my identity a few weeks ago."

"So there was a Tribrid who existent before me? And you broke off their Mate bonds because you are trying to prove a point?"

"Yes Jason, it was because of that the first Tribrid went insane and started killing everyone after destroying my kingdom. I am so sorry. I have told your father and he did not believe me."

"It's okay mother, it's all in the past now and I am glad you tried to rectify your mistakes. As long as you don't go back being evil then I bear no grudges on you." Jason told her.

"Thank you Jason." Rosa said hugging her son once again.

Jason return the hug and remember something. "Oh, before I forget, Mrs Lillian said she will be coming to see you tomorrow." He said. "I hope there is no problem mother?"

"No son, no problem at all. We planned how to reveal Tamara's secret yesterday at the wolf festival since she told me she has a plan, though I didn't know her plan was to talk about Rae. Who could have ever thought Rae is a mermaid for all the years we saw her as Lillian's granddaughter? Lillian used everyone heads when she told us the child she has was from her pregnant dead daughter who died with her husband on the day of their visit. We believed her story because truly her daughter was pregnant before her death. So imagine the shock look that came to us when we heard the news." Rosa told Jason.

"Well it's good that every secret is out and that King Roen has finally realise the truth." Jorkallun said. "I just hope he acts fast and arrest Tamara." He added.

"I concur with what my love said. I remembered when I once spied on Tamara, I with Jorkallun saw her with Tharollin and a man in a water form, you remember Jorkallun?" Sarah asked.

"Of course, then we started searching for Tharollin not knowing Rae will lead him right to us." Jorkallun answered.

"..." Sarah wanted to say something when she suddenly stops as she remembers "I think I might know Tamara's cave since I spied on her." She said.

"Then we have to tell my father, what cave does she lives?" Jason demanded.

"I can't really describe the place but it will take powerful magic to get to her cave. My ball of light can lead us to her cave." Sarah answered. "And as you said before my Queen that witches aren't as strong as druids, can't you do the magic then?"



"I wish I could perform my magic but I can't right now. I also know remember Tamara's Cave but that was before she turns me to her slave. I don't know if she has relocated to another Cave or still dwells in the old one." Rosa answered.

"And why can't you perform your magic mother? Or did Tamara also steals your magic because she can do that." Jason questioned his mother.

"No not like that, performing my magic will alert the first Tribrid to me, I don't want any harm to befall my people."

"But I thought you said Tamara subdue the Tribrid which means she killed the ravaging beast since he is no longer causing havoc again." Jorkallun said.

"Tamara subdued the beast but I don't think she has killed it yet. When I broke his bond with his Mate, I have to connect our souls together for the spell to work which it did, but I didn't know the vampire would die and by dying it unleash the monster in him. So I feel it's still out there wherever Tamara has kept him waiting for me to do magic. Once I do any magic, he will come out and attack me and everyone, what I tried to prevent will all be gone." Rosa told them, she took her time explaining to them.

"Mother you have forgotten one thing though." Jason said.

"And what is it?"

"You've forgotten that I am also a Tribrid like the old one. You don't have to worry anymore, so do your magic and let Tamara get arrested. If he eventually shows up, he will have me to contend with. Though you did wrong but you feel remorseful about it. So you don't have to feel guilty for what happened a very long time ago. So use your magic mother and let us get her arrested in her Cave in a very surprising way."

"But what if something goes wrong?"

"Have a little faith mother, nothing will go wrong, I give you my words." Jason responded assuring his mother.

"Fine, I will use my magic." Rosa said finally.

"Good, I need to see how a druid performs their own Magic." Jason said with a smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

Tamara Cave:

Tamara was in her cave alone reading a spell book when a dark portal made of darkness opened beside her and a veil opened to show Taloc face.

"Get prepared and inform my daughter that we are attacking the supernaturals tomorrow starting from Roen Kingdom."

"But what about Jason, how do we break his soul mate Connection he has with the other girl?" Tamara asked.

"That shouldn't be our problem, once we attack the kingdoms with the help of Lucas, then Jason will do as we told him because Rae will be used as a bait and he will have no other choice than to obey us." Taloc responded.

"Okay, I will inform Lolly, what about the vampire Prince?"

"He is none of my concern, but don't let him know about the attack yet. Just tell him we are only taken Roen's kingdom and forcing Jason to be with my daughter."

"What about Rae?"

"Lucas has her, she will be of no obstacle to us tomorrow."

"I will do that. Is that all?"

"Yes, that is all, see you tomorrow. And oh, do inform the one we have under our control to get ready." Taloc said and the dark portal disappeared.

Tamara didn't waste any time, she quickly drop the book she was reading and disappeared.

---

Appearing in the living room of the Amazon King where Lolly is with the king, they were seated and were discussing.

"Tamara to what do I own this august visit?" The king asked

Tamara looked deeply into his eyes compelling him with her eyes, his brown eyes changing to pure black. "You will get your Warriors ready by tomorrow, we are attacking King Roen's palace." Tamara commanded.

The King bowed his head in a submissive way. "Your wish is my command." He said and stood up to his feet leaving the house like one controlled.

"What was that all about mother?" Lolly demanded once the King was out.

"It's your father. He wants to wage a war on Roen."

"What? He can't do that to me. Jason is not mine yet and you and father want to destroy whatever future I have with him." Lolly said in fury.

"You get it wrong. He wants to attack Roen and then held him hostage. He will then use him against Jason by telling him to mate you." Tamara told her daughter.

Standing up to her feet. "What about Rae?"

"Lucas has her so she won't mend with our plans and probably be used as a bait. Everything will work out in your favour my daughter." Tamara said.

"Okay, I hope they do mother. Does Dean knows about this?"

"Nope, he doesn't, but do not tell him yet until we take over Roen's kingdom first. You do know your father wants to rule the supernaturals, don't you?"

"I know that mother." Lolly replied and then smile. "And having Jason there with me, ruling beside me will make me happy, oh I can't wait to see that day." She added happily with a dream look.

"I have to start going now, you know what to do to the Amazon King once he returns?"

"Yes mother. Send father my regards."

"I will when next we speak. Take good care of yourself." Tamara said and disappeared.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roen's Palace:

Queen Rosa stood up from the ground and went over to her flowers, picking a blue rose. She held it in the air and started whispering some strange words and the rose left her hands and started floating in the air, spinning around in the air. The rose petals started removing by itself and began forming circle. It started growing bigger and bigger until it was like the size of a portal.

Rosa screamed in joy and started dancing around. "My magic still works perfectly well, for a moment I thought it wouldn't work since it hasn't been used for a long time." Rosa said once she noticed the looks of her three audience sitting a few feet away from her staring at her as if she has two heads. "Don't worry you won't understand. But that is the rose Portal to get to Tamara's Cave, she may still lives there." She added.

"Let me go and call father and mother please don't dance again, you can't dance." Jason said and disappeared.

Rosa rolled her eyes and Jason reappeared with Roen.

A few seconds later, some guards were seen running towards their direction.

"So where is the shortest way to reach Tamara's Cave?" Roen asked and Jason pointed at the rose Portal. "Enter the portal and get me Tamara, tell her it is the king orders." Roen told the guards who quickly entered the portal. "So who made the portal, there are no Witch amongst you or are you one Sarah?"

Sarah shook her head and pointed to Rosa. "Queen Rosa did the magic my King not me."

Roen faces his wife in surprise. "So you were telling me the truth that you have magic?"

Rosa nodded her head to his question.

"That means Jason here has magic too and he carries druids blood, right?"

"Yeah."

"I wasn't expecting that but thanks for your help, for making me catch the kingdom traitor fastest."

Rosa heaved out a sigh she didn't even know she was holding, "Thank you Roen for not condemning me for my wrongful past."

"Everyone has a past Rosa and you have admitted your wrongs. Living for the future is more important than trying to avenge the past for the death you put so many people, as long as you are not going back to be the evil Likarica I once heard off, then I have nothing to fear." King Roen said going to meet her and hug her.

The guards returned with Tamara, her hands tied. The rose Portal vanished and the rose petals fall down to the ground.

"What is this Roen, why did you order your guards to arrest?"

"You should be glad I didn't tell them to gag your mouth." Roen answered. "You are a traitor who lied with the name of the gods to carry out your dirty acts. I believe your sister now and my wife and also a strong evidence that proves what you said about the last mermaid are all lies."

"I made you the King Roen, I gave you Rosa and I can also take back what I made you."

"My name isn't Rosa but Likarica." The shock look on Tamara made Rosa smiled. "Yes Tamara, I have regained my lost memories. You are a very wicked old soul, the game you played is over."

"You talk too much Likarica and I should also add that it was my magic who made you the mate of Roen, now I see you have no use of it." Tamara said and smirked. She whispers some spells and Rosa fell down to the ground, her mouth wide open and something like smoke left her mouth and entered Tamara smirking face. "It is also over for you."

King Roen ran to meet Rosa standing her up to her feet gently.

"Yes Roen run all you can but she is not your mate. I cast a spell on her which made you think she is yours." Tamara mocked.

Rosa opened her eyes and stare at Roen sadly who was staring back at her.

"You know what Tamara!" Roen called out without taking his eyes off Rosa. "She is my real soulmate. My wolf still recognise her as his mate."

Tamara mockery smile was wiped off by the news.

"Thank you Tamara for bringing me to my Mate." Rosa said and a smile adored her beautiful face. "I will imprison you where no one will look for you." She added.

Leaving the comfort of Roen's arms, she walked towards the priestess, her eyes going pure white as she approaches Tamara. Reaching her she touched Tamara's shoulder and the woman disappeared.

"Where did you take her too?" Roen asked.

"Somewhere no one will look for her or free her except me."

"Good, let's all go inside and eat, all is well now." King Roen said.

\*\*\*\*

Taloc Hidden Place:

He felt the magic of Likarica and immediately saw where she did the magic as the images kept coming until he was able to recognise where she is.

Well things are going to be very hot for her tomorrow.

Taloc thought and his mind wander off to Lucifer.

He may sound genuine and helpful, but he couldn't trust the Devil. Once this is over, he will find out what chains was used on him and recreate the same chains and use it to bind Lucifer.

Finally he will have all the Kingdoms to himself.

He couldn't wait for tomorrow to come.

\*\*\*\*

Lucifer Hiding Place:

Lucifer was seen pacing slowly as he was thinking.

Tomorrow is when he will reveal his true intentions.

Taloc is just a puppet he is using.

There are many ways to kill him.

He walked towards a huge stone and took out a shining sword on it. Tearing one of his fingers, he allowed the blood to flow at the middle of the sword as the sword dried off his blood.

This was his final step, this is the sword he would use to kill the two Tribids.

He smiled as he swings the sword around him. He is killing two birds with one stone.

\*\*\*\*

The Realm of the Gods:

Zeus was in his chambers when Ares knocked on the door and walked in

"What is it son?"

"I have this feeling that things might be against us tomorrow when we visit the supernaturals."

"You don't have to worry son, if things do not end up in our favour tomorrow, there is always someone who is darkness himself that will help us out. He has always helped us whenever we are defeated. So I am not afraid of tomorrow's outcome."

"Please don't tell me you are referring to that devil father."

"I am talking about him Ares. So you shouldn't be worried because when things go wrong, though it may take time, Tharollin is always there to set things right."

## Chapter 73 (Final)

'Don't resist when life needs to remove the "old" to make room for the "new." The pain you're feeling isn't caused by letting things or people go, what's actually hurting you is swimming exhaustively against the natural flow that was intended to carry you. What's truly meant for you shouldn't feel forced, and your blessings are definitely on the way. So stop clinging to whatever needs to be purged... focus instead on freeing yourself to receive. What God has for you, is meant just for you... you'll never have to fight or compete with anyone for what's been divinely designated as yours.'

♥♥♥♥ AN UNEXPECTED TWIST ♥♥♥♥

Roen's Palace:

They all ate to their satisfaction and soon Jason, Jorkallun and his mate left the king alone with his mate.

They went back to Rosa garden to discuss about their life and wedding that Jason and Jorkallun decided they will wed same day.

Jorkallun and Sarah stayed in the Palace throughout the night.

"After all my father always know I am in Jason house if I didn't return home." Jorkallun told Jason and Sarah as usual.

Jorkallun followed Sarah home to tell her grandmother of her staying in the palace which the old woman agreed. Sarah changed into her night clothes before leaving with Jorkallun to the palace.

So they spend the night in the Wolf King Palace.

---

Next Day:

Jason went to meet his father in the throne room.

"Father, Mrs Lillian will be coming to the palace today with Rae to visit mother. Please father whatever grudges or hatred you still have for Tharollin shouldn't be transferred to Rae. Please father."

"Well whatever hate I have for Rae is no longer there. I was even planning to pay Lillian a visit soon to apologize to them on how I act at the wolf festival. So you have my support in making her your mate and also marrying her." Roen said with a smile.



"Thank you so much father." Jason said in happiness and hug his father. "Thank you."

"You are welcome son. And since they are coming, I am going to hold a bouquet for them so that I can also apologize for my wrongful act I displayed on the wolf festival." King Roen said. "I will inform the palace cook to start preparing food immediately." He said and left the throne room.

---

Jason went to meet Jorkallun and Sarah and he told them what his father has said.

"Wow I am glad your father has started to see reason unlike before." Jorkallun said with a happy smile. "And also come and lend me your clothes that I will wear for the banquet." He added.

"Sure thing my Friend, luckily enough we are of the same height." Jason said. "And Sarah you can go and meet my mother, she will give you something nice to wear." He added and left with Jorkallun to his chamber telling a guard to take Sarah to his mother.

Rosa was happy to receive Sarah and uses her magic to make a nice short blue gown for Sarah since she noticed the girl Loves blue.

---

Lillian and Rae soon arrived and were lead by a guard to the banquet room where everyone was already waiting for them there. Rosa has told the guards to bring Lillian to the banquet room once she arrived.

Opening the door, Lillian was the first to enter before Rae. King Roen stood up from his seat when they came in.

"Lillian, good to see you again." Roen said with a genuine smile.

Surprise that he was smiling at her she turned to look at Rosa who smiled at her, doing a little cutesy to Roen. "Thank you my king."

"Please you and Rae should sit down." King Roen said pointing at the only two empty seats at the same table with them. One of the seat was beside Rosa and the other one was beside Jason.

Lillian and Rae sat down.

Jason placed a kiss on Rae's lips and she forced herself to peck his cheek after their kiss.

Sarah was staring at Rae but nothing seems to be wrong with Rae again, probably it was her eyes that deceived her.

"You may be wondering why I am doing this right Lillian?" King Roen asked and when Lillian nodded her head, he continues. "Well I find out the truth about your sister yesterday, Sarah here is a mermaid too. I realise you were telling me the truth but I paid deaf ears to it."

"I am glad you now see things the way I do. What about Tamara, does she know about you knowing the truth?" Lillian asked.

"Yes, in fact I arrested her immediately and brought her here and you wouldn't believe what I am about to tell you." King Roen said in all smiles.

"And what can that be my King?" Lillian asked.

"My wife here has magic, she is a druid, the last one, actually two since my son here is half a druid. It was her magic that led to the arrest of Tamara. My wife here was also the one who took Tamara away to cage her somewhere safe where no one but her will free her." King Roen said excitedly to Lillian.

"I told him everything, at first he didn't believe but when I did magic, he believed." Queen Rosa said with a smile when Lillian sent her a look. "Don't worry, my son will protect me when he comes." She added referring to Taloc.

"Well, I am very happy that my King now knows the true identity of my sister, though I feel sad that Tamara who is my sister could do such abominable things to everyone of us." Lillian said in sadness.

"I understand your feelings Lillian since she is your only family that you have, but you did the right thing by telling me even though I didn't believe at first. It shows you are not in support of your sister's act." King Roen said feeling sorry for Lillian.

The door opened to reveal three female servants who carried three sets of trays that were filled with all sorts of food. They greeted everyone and set the trays on the table. Another female servant came with a jug of water together with silver cups, greeting them she set the silver cups and the silver jug of water on the table.

"Did you bring the wine that I kept in the kitchen?" One of the female servants asked the one who just came in.

"No ma'am, I forgot."

"Then go back and bring the wine here you stupid fool." She ordered.

"Yes ma'am." The girl answered and turned to leave when Rae's voice stopped her.

"You can pass your message to her without an insult." Rae told the servant who ordered the other girl.

"Sorry my lady."

"Apology not accepted." Rae said and turned to look at the girl going. "I will follow you to bring the wine here, her presence irritates me." She added and gesture to the servant that was ordered to bring the wine to lead the way.

Which she did.

Once they were outside the banquet room, the door opened and Sarah walked out.

"Please excuse us for a minute." Sarah told the servant who nodded her head and give them some space. "Rae are you alright?"

"What sort of question is that Sarah?"

"Nothing, is just that I feel something wrong with your voice when you reply that lady in there so I was worried. You know you can tell me what is bothering you, I am your sister."

"There is nothing wrong with me Miss observer, I am okay, I was just angry at the way she shouted at her and still insulted her." Rae said. "Now since I have told you nothing is wrong with me dear sister, I will take my leave now. I have to please Jason's father to see his daughter in law potential in me before he changes his mind. Thank you, excuse me." Rae added and left to join the servant who was waiting for her and they head for the kitchen.

"Rae doesn't behave like this before, she has never answered me in such manner before. Something is wrong with her or am I overreacting." Sarah told to herself and went back to the banquet room.

---

Rae and the servant girl return with the wine which was carried by Rae.

Dropping it on the table, the rest of Servants including the girl who Rae followed all walked out leaving the royal family alone.

Rosa used her magic to pour wine into the silver cups and still use her magic to place the cups in each of their front.

They started eating and drinking, gisting among themselves.

10 Minutes Later....

"You know, I love this reunion that I am seeing or what do you think Taloc?" Lucifer voice was heard and that stopped the chattering going around the table as they all stopped to look at the strange man who appeared in the middle of banquet room, not too far from their table.

"And who are you?" Roen asked staring at Lucifer and Taloc, he could have sworn the green haired man looked familiar to him, but where has he encountered him before?

Rosa eyes went wide in shock and fear as she saw the man she hasn't seen for years, the man that she was scared he would find her if she ever perform magic.

Lillian quickly recognise the man with green hair.

"My name is Lucas." Lucifer introduced himself.

"And I am Ta-" Taloc begin to say but was interrupted by Rosa.

"Taloc." Rosa completed his sentence. "I could recognise you even if I get to meet you in one million years to come, your green hair always gave you away." She added.

Taloc smiled. "Yeah I am the one and only Tribid we have." He said. "I am glad you still remember me after all these years Likarica." He added with a smirk. "Good to see you too."

"Guards!!" Roen shouted. "Guards!!!"

"Hush now, you don't need to shout, they are already subdued." Lucifer said.

And as if on cue, King Alf, the Amazon King, opened the door of the banquet room and entered, bowing before Taloc. "We have subdued every guards and wolf Knights in the palace, what next should I and my warriors do with them?"

"Take them to the dungeon and lock them up." Lolly's voice was heard as she walked into the banquet room, surprising everyone as she commands the Amazon King.

King Alf nodded his head and left their presence.

Lillian saw his enchanted eyes, King Alf is no longer there.

"Lolly what's the meaning of this? Why will you tell your father to attack my men and take them to the dungeon? Are you alright?" King Roen demanded.

"King Alf isn't my father." Lolly said and pointed to Taloc. "He is, I am only wearing Lolly's skin which I took after I killed her. I have King Alf under my control now." She added with a smirk.

"You will be wondering why you weren't hearing the sword fighting that took place in your Palace a few minutes ago, that is because I cast a spell here and your two foolish sorceresses couldn't detect it." Taloc said. "And speaking of them, I am taking Rosa with me." Taloc added and moved towards Rosa.

Jason tried to get up to stop the approaching Taloc but found out he couldn't, his legs suddenly felt weak.

Rosa tried to use her magic but surprisingly enough, her magic couldn't work. She tried once more and cough out blood instead.

Lillian tried using her spell which couldn't work. And just like Rosa, she started coughing out blood.

"Rosa!!" King Roen shouted trying to reach his wife but before he could, Taloc levitate her to him and held Rosa by her neck. "What have you done to my wife? Leave her alone." Roen said

"Too late Roen, she is now in my arms and in my arms she shall die." Taloc said smiling and turned to face Lucifer, "You can take over from here, I have her now. I will be back after I end this." He added and disperse into nothing with Rosa.

"Rosa!!" Roen shouted and charge over to meet Lucifer to attack him. He fell down to his feet and held his neck as blood started coming out from his mouth.

Jorkallun and Sarah couldn't feel their body again. They were weak and growing weaker as the minutes went by.

The only person who appears normal that wasn't affected was Rae.

Lucifer laughed evilly. "None of you still get it, do you?" He questioned but none could answer as they all felt weak. So he answered his question. "Let me break it down for all of you. You all have been poisoned. And that is why you are weak and spitting out blood. The poison is now in your system, eating your energy and powers slowly. And you." He pointed to Roen. "By the time the poison has fully spread in your whole body, you will no longer be a Wolf. Your wolf will depart from you soon."

"What have you done to us? Who are you?" Roen managed to speak out as the blood coming out from his mouth refuse to slow down.

"I am glad you asked that question Roen. I am the Almighty LUCIFER."

"Impossible, you can't be Lucifer, the one we know-"

"The one you know is the fake one, the one you all defeated centuries ago is not me. I was caged and he freed me. I am the real Lucifer and he was my cover up. He is dead anyway." Lucifer interrupted Lillian.

"How did you manage to get to our food and poison us all?" Sarah question, she felt her blood coming out of her mouth.

"That will be me."

Every head turn around in slow motion to look at Rae who spoke. They were shocked.

"I poisoned the wine which you all drank." Rae said getting up to her feet and going to stand next to Lucifer. "The servant girl wasn't looking when I put the poison in the wine which you all drank."

"Rae why did you do it?" Jason asked.

"The Rae you once knew is dead and gone. This is a new Rae who listened to my every command." Lucifer answered.

"How did you manage to get hold of Rae?" Lillian demanded.

"Thanks to you I was able to get hold of my beautiful Rae."

"She is not yours and can never be yours."

"Hush now little boy, Rae wasn't yours to begin with. She is mine and when you are gone, she will belong to me forever." Lucifer said and turned his gaze back to Lillian. "Like I said before I have you to thank."

Flashback:

Rae was returning from Mrs Ashley house when she encountered a strange injured vampire man laying on the lone road.

She rushed to him and touched his neck and discovered he was still breathing, though slowly.

The man opened his eyes and saw Rae.

Rae saw the movements of his eyes and slowly asked if he could talk which the man nodded.

"What happened?"

"I was attacked by some 10 Hellhounds, they made away with all my valuable and golds and they left me here to die."

"You are a vampire and your kingdom is still far from here. My magic isn't that strong yet to teleport you home and my portal was only made to appear in my school. What can I do to help you Mister?"

"I just need a little blood to heal me quicker and I will be strong like I was once again."

"Oh, you can have my blood then." Rae said kindly and cut a part of her arm and gave him her blood.

Lucifer smirked as he drained her blood, he was glad his body looks like a vampire so he cut himself to make it look more real.

His wounds heal and he was able to control Rae from that moment onwards.

He stood up to his feet and smiled. "You are now mine Rae, only mine."

"I am yours and only yours." Rae said as if she was in a trance.

"Good, from now henceforth no one who is not me will touch you and you will enjoy it." Lucifer commanded and Rae nodded her head in submission. "You can go now my beautiful one, I will see you soon."

End Of Flashback...

"You are so evil." Lillian said in shock after hearing what Lucifer did to Rae.

"Evil is my other name." Lucifer said. "Beside she has darkness in her which helped me achieve my aim quickly."

"What are you going to do to us?" Jorkallun demanded.

"First, Lolly, get some guards to carry the witch and the king out of here." Lucifer said and Lolly quickly went out and came back with some Amazon Warriors and ordered them to take Roen and Lillian to the dungeon. Some Amazon Warriors still stayed behind.

\*\*\*\*

Taloc appeared with Rosa who he still held in her neck. He throws her to the ground roughly.

"Do you know where we are? Do you still remember here?"

Rosa slowly looked around and saw they were inside an old building and her eyes widened when she recognised the place.

"This is exactly the place you lure me and my Mate to come and you broke my bond I have with her because of that stupid vampire who fell in love with her!" Taloc shouted. "And now you are weak and at my mercy, this is where I will end your life. Goodbye Likarica." He added and disappeared, reappearing outside the house. With a snap of his fingers, the whole building collapsed, falling on Rosa.

His job was done, time to go back to the Wolf Palace.

With that thought he disappeared.

---

He appeared when they were about taking Roen and Lillian to the dungeon.

"What have you done to my mother?"

"She is dead." Taloc answered Jason and he saw Lolly and Lucifer and couldn't see his second Mate, Tamara.

"Where is your mother Lolly?"

"I thought you sent her on an errand to come and join us later on."

"I did not." Taloc said. "Where else could she be?"

The sudden laughter of Sarah draw their attention.

"What is so funny?" Lolly demanded angrily.

"Your father killed the only person who knows the whereabouts of your stupid mother. She was arrested yesterday for her traitorous acts and Queen Rosa took her to a place where no one could find her. You won't get to see her again." Sarah said with confidence, she tried to fight her weak body to move but couldn't.

Lolly went to her and slapped her hard.

"Slap me when I am not poisoned fool."

Lolly growled angrily which only makes Sarah laughed out.



"Take her out of here and behead her." Lolly ordered two of the Amazon Warriors with them.  
"Make sure you drag her away from here."

Jorkallun tried all he could to get up and prevent them from taking Sarah all to no avail.

They grab hold of her hand each and drag her out of the banquet room, her laughter was the last thing they heard before the door was shut.

"I will be back." Taloc said and disappeared going back to where killed Rosa.

---

Getting there, he whispered some words and the fallen building levitated into the air. He search and search for Rosa body, but couldn't see it. He only saw some blood stains on the ground where he had kept her before the building collapsed.

She was weak from the poison they had taken so she couldn't perform any magic so where is her dead body?

---

"Now to get down to business, Jason it is now your turn." Lucifer added and waved his hand around them. Jorkallun blinked his eyes as he saw that they were no longer in the banquet room. They were on top of a huge cliff, which looks deep and dark below. Just him, Jason, Rae, Kill and Lucifer.

Levitating Jason to the edge of the cliff, he dropped him there. Jason manages to stand up to his feet that was shaking due to the poison.

"Pushing me off the cliff, is that the best you got?" Jason asked.

"Who said anything about pushing you off?" Lucifer said with a smile and then continue. "Rae is now mine. I win."

"She is not yours as long as I breathe. I will find a way of breaking whatever spell you have placed on her."

"Rae blood flows in my body, just as you mark her as yours, her blood in me marks her as mine, and I am not leaving you alive."

"Kill me, then I will come back to life."

"Oh you won't come back to life after I kill you. I have what kills a Tribrid, and even though you are a Phoenix, the poison in you has weakened it, your beast, everything is weak. You are nothing as it stands now. And I will enjoy killing you and having Rae finally to myself."

"Kill Jason, that wasn't among the plan Lucas." Lolly voice was heard. "You use Rae as a bait and force Jason to mark me as his, that was what my mother told me."

"I lied. Jason will die, he is still connected with my Rae. If he still lives, I can't touch her as I want. So you see Lolly, he has to die." Lucifer said facing Lolly.

"This wasn't what we planned, I don't want anyone to die, I just want Jason."

"Too late for that I must say, your father is not here to stop me and you cannot either."

"Lucas do not hurt Jason."

"Stop me if you can." Lucifer smirked and made the sword he created appeared in his hand. He walked over to meet Jason. "Too bad your story ends here." He added raising up the sword to strike Jason.

"Rae, come and kill him yourself." Lucifer said and waited until Rae reached his side before he gave her the sword. "End his life and thrust the sword in his heart Rae."

\*\*\*

"What's keeping Eros?" Zeus asked for the umpteenth time as the rest of the gods including him awaits the presence of Eros.

"Sorry I am late." Eros's voice was heard. "I was almost here when I remember something I forgot-"

"That's okay, come on, let's start going." Zeus said. "The air feels different today, as if something bad wants to happen."

"Then let's start going father." Ares said and left the gods abode followed by the others.

\*\*\*

Taking the sword from Lucifer, Rae covers the remaining between her and Jason

"Rae I know you can hear, do not allow him to control you. Fight this Rae, fight it. I know you can do it. For the sake of the love we have for each other, fight his control over you."

"Rae is dead and gone. I am no longer the Rae you use to know before. Good bye Jason."

"Listen I know you can fight it. I Love yo-" Jason didn't get to complete his sentence when he felt the sword thrust inside his body. Rae removed the sword that was half way inside his body, his heart as blood clotted it.

Jason was shocked as he stared at Rae, then he felt the pains. Jorkallun shouted Rae's name as he started clawing towards them in difficulty.

"Rae I know you didn't do that on purpose, you have to fight it, you-" he screamed out in pain as he felt a second thrust inside his body. Jason ignored the immense pain it brought in his body as he focused more on Rae. His eyes were filled with tears as they flowed down his cheeks.

"Rae, no matter what you did, know that I still love you and I forgive you."

Rae thrust the sword a third time into his heart, pulling out the sword from his body, she pushed Jason completely out of the cliff.

Jason fell down the huge deep dark cliff with his already tearful eyes staring at his Rae. His right hand going straight to his heart which was already pouring out blood from where Rae had thrust her sword in. He closes his eyes with the memory of his beloved Rae face forever stuck in his memory.

Back in the cave, Avonmora eyes flew wide open for the first time in a thousand years. As she opened her eyes, Jason breaths his last.